This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

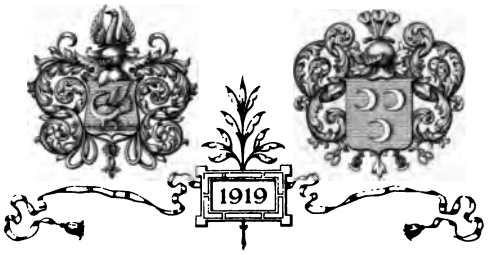
+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES
3 3433 07609231 5

I. J. FREDERICK BANDINEL.



GANSEVOORT-LANSING COLLECTION

given to the New York Public Library
Astor Lenox and Tilden Foundations
BY VICTOR HUGO PALTSITS
under the terms of the last will and testament of
CATHERINE GANSEVOORT LANSING
granddaughter of
General Peter Gansevoort, junior
and widow of the
Honorable Abraham Lansing
of Albany, New York

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

Published according to Act of Parliament. Nov.1st 1783. by T. Cadell in the Strand.

THE

WORKS

OF

HENRY FIELDING, Esq;

WITH

The LIFE of the AUTHOR.

In TWELVE VOLUMES.

VOL. V.

A NEW EDITION.

TO WHICH IS NOW FIRST ADDED,

THE FATHERS;

OR, THE

GOOD-NATURED MAN.

LONDON:

Printed for W. STRAHAN, J. RIVINGTON and SONS, S. CROWDER, T. LONGMAN, J. ROBSON, C. DILLY, G. KEARSLEY, G. ROBINSON, T. CADELL, T. LOWNDES, R. BALDWIN, J. NICHOLS, W. CATER, G. NICOLL, S. BLADON, J. MURRAY, W. FLEXNEY, T. EVANS, W. OTRIDGE, J. SEWELL, W. LANE, J. BOWEN, and W. FOX.

M DCC LXXXIII.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
48226A
ASTOR LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS
R 1922 L

THE HISTORY OF THE LIFE OF THE LATE Mr. JONATHAN WILD THE GREAT.

CONTENTS

OF THE

FIFTH VOLUME.

History of JONATHAN WILD, &c.

BOOK I.

CHAP. I.

SHEWING the wholesome uses drawn from recording the atchievements of those wonderful productions of nature called GREAT MEN. Page 1

CHAP. II.

Giving an account of as many of our hero's ancestors as can be gathered out of the rubbish of antiquity, which hath been carefully sifted for that purpose 4

CHAP. III.

The birth, parentage, and education, of Mr. Jonathan Wild *the Great* 7

CHAP. IV.

Mr. Wild's *first entrance into the world. His acquaintance with Count* La Ruse 11

CHAP. V.

A dialogue between young Mr. Wild *and Count* La Ruse, *which, having extended to the rejoinder, had a very quiet, easy, and natural conclusion.* 14

CHAP. VI.

Further conferences between the Count and maſter Wild, *with other matters of the* GREAT *kind* 19

CHAP. VII.

Mr. Wild *ſets out on his travels, and returns home again. A very ſhort chapter, containing infinitely more time and leſs matter than any other in the whole ſtory* 22

CHAP. VIII.

An adventure where Wild, *in the diviſion of the booty, exhibits an aſtoniſhing inſtance of* GREATNESS 23

CHAP. IX.

Wild *pays a viſit to Miſs* Lætitia Snap. *A deſcription of that lovely young creature, and the ſucceſsleſs iſſue of Mr.* Wild's *addreſſes* 27

CHAP. X.

A diſcovery of ſome matters concerning the chaſte Lætitia, *which muſt wonderfully ſurpriſe, and perhaps affect our reader* 30

CHAP. XI.

Containing as notable inſtances of human greatneſs as are to be met with in antient or modern hiſtory. Concluding with ſome wholeſome hints to the gay part of mankind 32

CHAP. XII.

Further particulars rēlating to Miſs Tiſhy, *which perhaps may not greatly ſurpriſe after the former. The deſcription of a very fine gentleman. And a dialogue between* Wild *and the Count, in which public virtue is juſt hinted at, with, &c.* 35

CHAP. XIII.

A chapter, of which we are extremely vain, and which indeed we look on as our Chef d'Oeuvre, *containing a wonderful ſtory concerning the devil, and as nice a ſcene of honour as ever happened* 38

CHAP. XIV.

In which the hiſtory of GREATNESS *is continued* 42

BOOK II.

CHAP. I.

CHARACTERS of ſilly people, with the proper uſes for which ſuch are deſigned 48

CHAP. II.

Great examples of GREATNESS *in* Wild, *ſhewn as well by his behaviour to* Bagſhot, *as in a ſcheme laid firſt to impoſe on* Heartfree *by means of the Count, and then to cheat the Count of the booty* 52

CHAP. III.

Containing ſcenes of ſoftneſs, love, and honour, all in the great ſtile 56

CHAP. IV.

In which Wild, *after many fruitleſs endeavours to diſcover his friend, moralizes on his misfortunes in a ſpeech, which may be of uſe (if rightly underſtood) to ſome other conſiderable ſpeech-makers* 62

CHAP. V.

Containing many ſurpriſing adventures, which our Hero *with* GREAT GREATNESS *atchieved* 65

CHAP. VI.

Of Hats 70

CHAP. VII.

Shewing the conſequence which attended Heartfree's *adventures with* Wild; *all natural, and common enough to little wretches who deal with* Great Men; *together with ſome precedents of letters, being the different methods of anſwering a dun* 72

CHAP. VIII.

In which our hero carries GREATNESS *to an immoderate height* 75

CHAP. IX.

More GREATNESS *in* Wild. *A low ſcene between Mrs.* Heartfree *and her children, and a ſcheme of our hero, worthy the higheſt admiration, and even aſtoniſhment* 79

CHAP. X.

Sea-adventures very new and surprising 82

CHAP. XI.

The great and wonderful behaviour of our hero in the boat 84

CHAP XII.

The strange and yet natural escape of our hero 86

CHAP. XIII.

The conclusion of the boat adventure, and the end of the second book 89

BOOK III.

CHAP. I.

THE low and pitiful behaviour of Heartfree; *and the foolish conduct of his apprentice* 91

CHAP. II.

A soliloquy of Heartfree's, *full of low and base ideas, without a syllable of* GREATNESS 95

CHAP. III.

Wherein our Hero proceeds in the road to GREATNESS 99

CHAP. IV.

In which a young hero, of wonderful good promise, makes his first appearance, with many other GREAT MATTERS 102

CHAP. V.

More and more GREATNESS, *unparalleled in history or romance* 104

CHAP. VI.

The event of Fireblood's *adventure, and a treaty of marriage, which might have been concluded either at* Smithfield *or* St. James's 108

CHAP. VII.

Matters preliminary to the marriage between Mr. Jonathan Wild, *and the chaste* Lætitia 112

CHAP. VIII.

A dialogue matrimonial, which passed between JONATHAN WILD *Esquire, and* LÆTITIA *his wife, on the morning of the day fortnight on which his nuptials were celebrated; which concluded more amicably than those debates generally do* 114

CHAP. IX.

Observations on the foregoing dialogue, together with a base design on our hero, which must be detested by every lover of GREATNESS 118

CHAP. X.

Mr. Wild *with unprecedented generosity visits his friend* Heartfree, *and the ungrateful reception he met with* 121

CHAP. XI.

A scheme so deeply laid, that it shames all the politics of this our age; with digression and sub-digression 125

CHAP. XII.

New instances of Friendly's *folly, &c.* 127

CHAP. XIII.

Something concerning Fireblood, *which will surprise; and somewhat touching one of the Miss* Snaps, *which will greatly concern the reader* 130

CHAP. XIV.

In which our hero makes a speech well worthy to be celebrated; and the behaviour of one of the gang, perhaps more unnatural than any other part of this history 132

BOOK IV.

CHAP. I.

A Sentiment of the ordinary's, worthy to be written in letters of gold; a very extraordinary instance of folly in Friendly; *and a dreadful accident which befel our hero* 138

CHAP. II.

A short hint concerning popular ingratitude. Mr. Wild's *arrival in the castle, with other occurrences to be found in no other history* 142

CHAP. III.

Curious anecdotes relating to the history of Newgate 146

CHAP. IV.

The dead-warrant arrives for Heartfree; *on which occasion* Wild *betrays some human weakness* 151

CHAP. V.

Containing various matters 153

CHAP. VI.

In which the foregoing happy incident is accounted for 156

CHAP. VII.

Mrs. Heartfree *relates her adventures* 159

CHAP. VIII.

In which Mrs. Heartfree *continues the relation of her adventures* 164

CHAP. IX.

Containing incidents very surprising 168

CHAP. X.

A horrible uproar in the gate 174

CHAP. XI.

The conclusion of Mrs. Heartfree's *adventures* 176

CHAP. XII.

The history returns to the contemplation of GREATNESS 181

CHAP. XIII.

A Dialogue between the Ordinary of Newgate, *and Mr.* Jonathan Wild the Great; *in which the subjects of death, immortality, and other great matters, are very learnedly handled by the former* 183

CHAP. XIV.

Wild *proceeds to the highest consummation of human* GREATNESS 190

CHAP. XV.

The character of our hero, and the conclusion of his history 194

JOURNEY from this WORLD to the Next, &c.

INTRODUCTION 203

BOOK I.

CHAP. I.

The author dies, meets with Mercury, *and is by him conducted to the ſtage which ſets out for the other world* 206

CHAP. II.

In which the author firſt refutes ſome idle opinions concerning ſpirits, and then the paſſengers relate their ſeveral deaths 209

CHAP. III.

The adventures we meet with in the city of Diſeaſes 213

CHAP. IV.

Diſcourſes on the road, and a deſcription of the palace of Death 220

CHAP. V.

The travellers proceed on their journey, and meet ſeveral ſpirits, who are coming into the fleſh 223

CHAP. VI.

An account of the wheel of Fortune, with a method of preparing a ſpirit for this world 227

CHAP. VII.

The proceedings of judge Minos, *at the gate of* Elyſium 230

CHAP. VIII.

The adventures which the author met on his firſt entrance into Elyſium 235

CHAP. IX.

More adventures in Elyſium 238

CHAP. X.

The author is ſurpriſed at meeting Julian *the apoſtate in* Elyſium: *but is ſatisfied by him, by what means he procured his entrance there.* Julian *relates his adventures in the character of a ſlave* 241

CHAP. XI.

In which Julian *relates his adventures in the character of an avaricious* Jew 248

CHAP. XII.

What happened to Julian *in the characters of a general, an heir, a carpenter, and a beau* 252

CHAP. XIII.

Julian *passes into a fop* 256

CHAP. XIV.

Adventures in the person of a monk 257

CHAP. XV.

Julian *passes into the character of a fiddler* 259

CHAP. XVI.

The history of the wise man 263

CHAP. XVII.

Julian *enters into the person of a king* 270

CHAP. XVIII.

Julian *passes into a fool* 277

CHAP. XIX.

Julian *appears in the character of a beggar* 281

CHAP. XX.

Julian *performs the part of a statesman* 286

CHAP. XXI.

Julian's *adventures in the post of a soldier* 292

CHAP. XXII.

What happened to Julian *in the person of a taylor* 298

CHAP. XXIII.

The life of alderman Julian 302

CHAP. XXIV.

Julian *recounts what happened to him while a poet* 307

CHAP. XXV.

Julian *performs the part of a knight and dancing-master* 311

BOOK XIX.

CHAP. VII.

Wherein Anna Boleyn *relates the history of her life* 313

THE

THE

HISTORY

OF THE

LIFE

OF THE LATE

Mr. JONATHAN WILD THE GREAT.

BOOK I.

CHAP. I.

Shewing the wholeſome uſes drawn from recording the atchievements of thoſe wonderful productions of nature called GREAT MEN.

AS it is neceſſary that all great and ſurpriſing events, the deſigns of which are laid, conducted, and brought to perfection by the utmoſt force of human invention and art, ſhould be produced by great and eminent men, ſo the lives of ſuch may be juſtly and properly ſtyled the quinteſſence of hiſtory. In theſe, when delivered to us by ſenſible writers, we are not only moſt agreeably entertained, but moſt uſefully inſtructed: for beſides the attaining hence a conſummate knowledge of human nature in general; of its ſecret ſprings, various windings, and perplexed mazes; we have here before our eyes lively examples of whatever is amiable or deteſtable, worthy of admiration or abhorrence, and are conſequently taught, in a manner infinitely more effectual than by precept, what we are eagerly to imitate or carefully to avoid.

BUT beſides the two obvious advantages of ſurveying, as it were in a picture, the true beauty of virtue, and deformity of vice, we may moreover learn from Plutarch, Nepos, Suetonius, and other biographers, this uſeful leſſon, not too haſtily, nor in the groſs to beſtow either our praiſe or cenſure; ſince we ſhall often find ſuch a mixture of good and evil in the ſame character, that it may require a very accurate judgment and a very elaborate inquiry to determine on which ſide the balance turns: for tho' we ſometimes meet with an Ariſtrides or a Brutus, a Lyſander or a Nero, yet far the greater number are of the mixt kind; neither totally good nor bad; their greateſt virtues being obſcured and allayed by their vices, and thoſe again ſoftened and coloured over by their virtues.

OF this kind was the illuſtrious perſon whoſe hiſtory we now undertake; to whom, tho' nature had given the greateſt and moſt ſhining endowments, ſhe had not given them abſolutely pure and without alloy. Tho' he had much of the admirable in his character, as much perhaps as is uſually to be found in a hero, I will not yet venture to affirm that he was entirely free from all defects; or that the ſharp eyes of Cenſure could not ſpy out ſome little blemiſhes lurking amongſt his many great perfections.

WE would not therefore be underſtood to affect giving the reader a perfect or conſummate pattern of human excellence; but rather, by faithfully recording ſome little imperfections, which ſhadowed over the luſtre of thoſe great qualities which we ſhall here record, to teach the leſſon we have above mentioned; to induce our reader with us to lament the frailty of human nature, and to convince him that no mortal, after a thorough ſcrutiny, can be a proper object of our adoration.

BUT before we enter on this great work, we muſt endeavour to remove ſome errors of opinion which mankind have, by the diſingenuity of writers, contracted: for theſe, from their fear of contradicting the obſolete and abſurd doctrines of a ſet of ſimple fellows, called, in deriſion, ſages or philoſophers, have *endeavoured*, as much as poſſible, to confound the ideas

ideas of greatneſs and goodneſs; whereas no two things can poſſibly be more diſtinct from each other; for Greatneſs conſiſts in bringing all manner of miſchief on mankind, and Goodneſs in removing it from them. It ſeems therefore very unlikely that the ſame perſon ſhould poſſeſs them both; and yet nothing is more uſual with writers, who find many inſtances of greatneſs in their favourite hero, than to make him a compliment of goodneſs into the bargain; and this, without conſidering that by ſuch means they deſtroy the great perfection called uniformity of character. In the hiſtories of Alexander and Cæſar, we are frequently, and indeed impertinently reminded of their benevolence and generoſity, of their clemency and kindneſs. When the former had with fire and ſword overrun a vaſt empire, had deſtroyed the lives of an immenſe number of innocent wretches, had ſcattered ruin and deſolation like a whirlwind, we are told, as an example of his clemency, that he did not cut the throat of an old woman, and raviſh her daughters, but was content with only undoing them. And when the mighty Cæſar, with wonderful greatneſs of mind, had deſtroyed the liberties of his country, and with all the means of fraud and force had placed himſelf at the head of his equals, had corrupted and enſlaved the greateſt people whom the ſun ever ſaw; we are reminded as an evidence of his generoſity, of his largeſſes to his followers and tools, by whoſe means he had accompliſhed his purpoſe, and by whoſe aſſiſtance he was to eſtabliſh it.

Now, who doth not ſee that ſuch ſneaking qualities as theſe are rather to be bewailed as imperfections, than admired as ornaments in theſe great men; rather obſcuring their glory, and holding them back in their race to greatneſs, indeed unworthy the end of which they ſeem to have come into the world, *viz.* of perpetrating vaſt and mighty miſchief?

We hope our reader will have reaſon juſtly to acquit us of any ſuch confounding ideas in the following pages; in which, as we are to record the actions of a great man, ſo we have no where mentioned any ſpark of *goodneſs*, which had diſcovered itſelf either

faintly in him, or more glaringly in any other perſon, but as a meanneſs and imperfection, diſqualifying them for undertakings which lead to honour and eſteem among men.

As our hero had as little as perhaps is to be found of that meanneſs; indeed only enough to make him partaker of the imperfection of humanity, inſtead of the perfection of Diaboliſm, we have ventured to call him THE GREAT; nor do we doubt but our reader, when he hath peruſed his ſtory, will concur with us in allowing him that title.

CHAP. II.

Giving an account of as many of our hero's anceſtors as can be gathered out of the rubbiſh of antiquity, which hath been carefully ſifted for that purpoſe.

IT is the cuſtom of all biographers, at their entrance into their work, to ſtep a little backwards (as far, indeed, generally as they are able) and to trace up their hero, as the ancients did the river Nile, till an incapacity of proceeding higher puts an end to their ſearch.

WHAT firſt gave riſe to this method, is ſomewhat difficult to determine. Sometimes I have thought that the hero's anceſtors have been introduced as foils to himſelf. Again I have imagined it might be to obviate a ſuſpicion that ſuch extraordinary perſonages were not produced in the ordinary courſe of nature, and may have proceeded from the author's fear that if we were not told who their fathers were, they might be in danger, like prince Prettyman, of being ſuppoſed to have had none. Laſtly, and perhaps more truly, I have conjectured that the deſign of the biographer hath been no more than to ſhew his great learning and knowledge of antiquity. A deſign to which the world hath probably owed many notable diſcoveries, and indeed moſt of the labours of our antiquarians.

BUT whatever original this cuſtom had, it is now too well eſtabliſhed to be diſputed. I ſhall therefore *conform to* it in the ſtricteſt manner.

Mr.

Mr. Jonathan Wild, or Wyld, then (for he himſelf did not always agree in one method of ſpelling his name) was deſcended from the great Wolfstan Wild, who came over with Hengiſt, and diſtinguiſhed himſelf very eminently at that famous feſtival, where the Britons were ſo treacherouſly murdered by the Saxons; for when the word was given, *i. e. Nemet eour Saxes, Take out your ſwords*, this gentleman, being a little hard of hearing, miſtook the ſound for *Nemet her Sacs, Take out their purſes*; inſtead therefore of applying to the throat, he immediately applied to the pocket of his gueſt, and contented himſelf with taking all that he had, without attempting his life.

The next anceſtor of our hero, who was remarkably eminent, was Wild, ſurnamed Langfanger, or Longfinger. He flouriſhed in the reign of Henry III. and was ſtrictly attached to Hubert de Burgh, whoſe friendſhip he was recommended to by his great excellence in an art, of which Hubert was himſelf the inventor: he could without the knowledge of the proprietor, with great eaſe and dexterity, draw forth a man's purſe from any part of his garment where it was depoſited, and hence he derived his ſurname. This gentleman was the firſt of his family who had the honour to ſuffer for the good of his country: on whom a wit of that time made the following epitaph.

O ſhame o' Juſtice, Wild *is hang'd,*
For thatten he a pocket fang'd,
While ſafe old Hubert, *and his gang,*
Doth pocket o' the nation fang.

Langfanger left a ſon named Edward, whom he had carefully inſtructed in the art for which he himſelf was ſo famous. This Edward had a grandſon who ſerved as a volunteer under the famous Sir John Falſtaff, and by his gallant demeanour, ſo recommended himſelf to his captain, that he would have certainly been promoted by him, had Harry the fifth kept his word with his old companion.

After the death of Edward, the family remained in ſome obſcurity down to the reign of Charles the firſt, when *James Wild* diſtinguiſhed himſelf on both

ſides the queſtion in the civil wars, paſſing from one to t'other, as heaven ſeemed to declare itſelf in favour of either party. At the end of the war, James not being rewarded according to his merits, as is uſually the caſe of ſuch impartial perſons, he aſſociated himſelf with a brave man of thoſe times, whoſe name was Hind, and declared open war with both parties. He was ſucceſsful in ſeveral actions, and ſpoiled many of the enemy; till at length, being overpowered and taken, he was, contrary to the law of arms, put baſely and cowardly to death, by a combination between twelve men of the enemy's party, who, after ſome conſultation, unanimouſly agreed on the ſaid murder.

THIS Edward took to wife Rebecca the daughter of the above-mentioned John Hind, Eſq; by whom he had iſſue John, Edward, Thomas, and Jonathan, and three daughters, namely Grace, Charity, and Honour. John followed the fortunes of his father, and ſuffering with him, left no iſſue. Edward was ſo remarkable for his compaſſionate temper, that he ſpent his life in ſoliciting the cauſes of the diſtreſſed captives in Newgate, and is reported to have held a ſtrict friendſhip with an eminent divine, who ſolicited the ſpiritual cauſes of the ſaid captives. He married Editha, daughter and coheireſs of Geoffry Snap, Gent. who long enjoyed an office under the high ſheriff of London and Middleſex, by which, with great reputation, he acquired a handſome fortune: by her he had no iſſue. Thomas went very young abroad to one of our American colonies, and hath not been ſince heard of. As for the daughters, Grace was married to a merchant of Yorkſhire, who dealt in horſes. Charity took to huſband an eminent gentleman, whoſe name I cannot learn; but who was famous for ſo friendly a diſpoſition, that he was bail for above a hundred perſons in one year. He had likewiſe the remarkable humour of walking in Weſtminſter-hall with a ſtraw in his ſhoe. Honour, the youngeſt, died unmarried. She lived many years in this town, was a great frequenter of plays, and uſed to be remarkable for diſtri*buting oranges* to all who would accept of them.

Jonathan

Jonathan married Elizabeth, daughter of Scragg Hollow, of Hockley-in-the-Hole, Eſq; and by her had Jonathan, who is the illuſtrious ſubject of theſe memoirs.

CHAP. III.

The birth, parentage, and education of Mr. Jonathan Wild *the Great.*

IT is obſervable, that nature ſeldom produces any one who is afterwards to act a notable part on the ſtage of life, but ſhe gives ſome warning of her intention; and as the dramatic poet generally prepares the entry of every conſiderable character, with a ſolemn narrative, or at leaſt a great flouriſh of drums and trumpets; ſo doth this our *Alma Mater* by ſome ſhrewd hints pre-admoniſh us of her intention, giving us warning as it were, and crying:

———*Venienti occurrite morbo.*

Thus Aſtyages, who was the grandfather of Cyrus, dreamt that his daughter was brought to bed of a vine whoſe branches overſpread all Aſia; and Hecuba, while big with Paris, dreamt that ſhe was delivered of a firebrand that ſet all Troy in flames; ſo did the mother of our Great Man, while ſhe was with child of him, dream that ſhe was enjoyed in the night by the gods Mercury and Priapus. This dream puzzled all the learned aſtrologers of her time, ſeeming to imply in it a contradiction; Mercury being the god of ingenuity, and Priapus the terror of thoſe who practiſed it. What made this dream the more wonderful, and perhaps the true cauſe of its being remembered, was a very extraordinary circumſtance, ſufficiently denoting ſomething preternatural in it; for tho' ſhe had never heard even the name of either of theſe gods, ſhe repeated theſe very words in the morning, with only a ſmall miſtake of the quantity of the latter, which ſhe choſe to call *Priăpus* inſtead of *Priāpus*; and her huſband ſwore that though he might poſſibly have named Mercury to her (for he had heard of ſuch a heathen god) he never in his life could

have anywiſe put her in mind of the other deity, with whom he had no acquaintance.

ANOTHER remarkable incident was, that during her whole pregnancy ſhe conſtantly longed for every thing ſhe ſaw; nor could be ſatisfied with her wiſh, unleſs ſhe enjoyed it clandeſtinely; and as nature, by true and accurate obſervers, is remarked to give us no appetites without furniſhing us with the means of gratifying them; ſo had ſhe at this time a moſt marvellous glutinous quality attending her fingers, to which, as to birdlime, every thing cloſely adhered that ſhe handled.

To omit other ſtories, ſome of which may be perhaps the growth of ſuperſtition, we proceed to the birth of our hero, who made his firſt appearance on this great theatre, the very day when the plague firſt broke out in 1665. Some ſay his mother was delivered of him in a houſe of an orbicular or round form in Covent-Garden; but of this we are not certain. He was ſome years afterwards baptized by the famous Mr. Titus Oates.

NOTHING very remarkable paſs'd in the years of infancy, ſave, that as the letters *Th* are the moſt difficult of pronunciation, and the laſt which a child attains to the utterance of, ſo they were the firſt that came with any readineſs from young maſter Wild. Nor muſt we omit the early indications which he gave of the ſweetneſs of his temper; for tho' he was by no means to be terrified into compliance, yet might he by a ſugar-plum be brought to your purpoſe: indeed, to ſay the truth, he was to be brib'd to any thing, which made many ſay, he was certainly born to be a Great Man.

HE was ſcarce ſettled at ſchool before he gave marks of his lofty and aſpiring temper; and was regarded by all his ſchool-fellows with that deference, which men generally pay to thoſe ſuperior genius's who will exact it of them. If an orchard was to be robb'd, Wild was conſulted, and tho' he was himſelf ſeldom concerned in the execution of the deſign, yet was he always concerter of it, and treaſurer of the booty; ſome little part of which he would now and then, with wonderful

wonderful generoſity, beſtow on thoſe who took it. He was generally very ſecret on theſe occaſions; but if any offered to plunder of his own head, without acquainting Maſter Wild, and making a depoſite of the booty, he was ſure to have an information againſt him lodged with the ſchool-maſter, and to be ſeverely puniſhed for his pains.

He diſcovered ſo little attention to ſchool-learning, that his maſter, who was a very wiſe and worthy man, ſoon gave over all care and trouble on that account, and acquainting his parents that their ſon proceeded extremely well in his ſtudies, he permitted his pupil to follow his own inclinations, perceiving they led him to nobler purſuits than the ſcience; which are generally acknowledged to be a very unprofitable ſtudy, and indeed greatly to hinder the advancement of men in the world; but tho' maſter Wild was not eſteemed the readieſt at making his exerciſe, he was univerſally allowed to be the moſt dexterous at ſtealing it of all his ſchool-fellows: being never detected in ſuch furtive compoſitions, nor indeed in any other exercitations of his great talents, which all inclined the ſame way, but once, when he had laid violent hands on a book called *Gradus ad Parnaſſum*, i. e. *A ſtep towards Parnaſſus*; on which account his maſter, who was a man of moſt wonderful wit and ſagacity, is ſaid to have told him, he wiſhed it might not prove in the event *Gradus ad Patibulum*, i. e. *A ſtep towards the gallows*.

But tho' he would not give himſelf the pains requiſite to acquire a competent ſufficiency in the learned languages, yet did he readily liſten with attention to others, eſpecially when they tranſlated the claſſical authors to him; nor was he in the leaſt backward, at all ſuch times, to expreſs his approbation. He was wonderfully pleaſed with that paſſage in the eleventh Iliad, where Achilles is ſaid to have bound two ſons of Priam upon a mountain, and afterwards to have releaſed them for a ſum of money. This was, he ſaid, alone ſufficient to refute thoſe who affected a contempt for the wiſdom of the ancients, and an undeniable

teſtimony of the great antiquity of * Priggiſm. He was raviſhed with the account which Neſtor gives in the ſame book, of the rich booty which he bore off (*i. e.* ſtole) from the Eleans. He was deſirous of having this often repeated to him, and, at the end of every repetition, he conſtantly fetched a deep ſigh, and ſaid, *It was a glorious booty.*

When the ſtory of Cacus was read to him out of the eighth Æneid, he generouſly pitied the unhappy fate of that great man, to whom he thought Hercules much too ſevere: one of his ſchool-fellows commending the dexterity of drawing the oxen backward by their tails into his den, he ſmiled, and with ſome diſdain, ſaid, *He could have taught him a better way.*

He was a paſſionate admirer of heroes, particularly of Alexander the Great, between whom and the late King of Sweden he would frequently draw parallels. He was much delighted with the accounts of the Czar's retreat from the latter, who carried off the inhabitants of great cities to people his own country. *This*, he ſaid, *was not once thought of by* Alexander; *but*, added, *perhaps he did not want them.*

Happy had it been for him, if he had confined himſelf to this ſphere; but his chief, if not only blemiſh was, that he would ſometimes, from an humility in his nature too pernicious to true greatneſs, condeſcend to an intimacy with inferior things and perſons. Thus the Spaniſh rogue was his favourite book, and the Cheats of Scapin his favourite play.

The young gentleman being now at the age of ſeventeen, his father, from a fooliſh prejudice to our univerſities, and out of a falſe, as well as exceſſive regard to his morals, brought his ſon to town, where he reſided with him till he was of an age to travel. Whilſt he was here, all imaginable care was taken of his inſtructions, his father endeavouring his utmoſt to inculcate principles of honour and gentility into his ſon.

CHAP.

* This word in the cant languages ſignifies thievery.

CHAP. IV.

Mr. Wild's *firſt entrance into the world. His acquaintance with Count* La Ruſe.

AN accident happened ſoon after his arrival in town, which almoſt ſaved the father his whole labour on this head, and provided maſter Wild a better tutor than any after care or expence could have furniſhed him with. The old gentleman, it ſeems, was a FOLLOWER of the fortunes of Mr. Snap, ſon of Mr. Geoffry Snap, whom we have before mentioned to have enjoyed a reputable office under the ſheriff of London and Middleſex, the daughter of which Geoffry had intermarried with the Wilds. Mr. Snap the younger, being thereto well warranted, had laid violent hands on, or, as the vulgar expreſs it, arreſted one count La Ruſe, a man of conſiderable figure in thoſe days, and had confined him to his own houſe, till he could find two ſeconds, who would in a formal manner give their words that the Count ſhould, at a certain day and place appointed, anſwer all that one Thomas Thimble a taylor had to ſay to him; which Thomas Thimble, it ſeems, alledged that the Count had, according to the law of the realm, made over his body to him as a ſecurity for ſome ſuits of cloaths to him delivered by the ſaid Thomas Thimble. Now, as the Count, tho' perfectly a man of honour, could not immediately find theſe ſeconds, he was obliged for ſome time to reſide at Mr. Snap's houſe: for it ſeems the law of the land is, that whoever owes another 10l. or indeed 2 l. may be, on the oath of that perſon, immediately taken up and carried away from his own houſe and family, and kept abroad till he is made to owe 50l. whether he will or no; for which he is, perhaps, afterwards obliged to lie in gaol; and all theſe without any trial had, or any other evidence of the debt than the aboveſaid oath, which if untrue, as it often happens, you have no remedy againſt the perjurer; he was, forſooth! miſtaken.

BUT though Mr. Snap would not, (as perhaps by the nice rules of honour he was obliged) diſcharge the

Count on his parole; yet did he not, as by the ſtrict rules of law he was enabled, confine him to his chamber. The Count had his liberty of the whole houſe, and Mr. Snap uſing only the precaution of keeping his doors well locked and barred, took his priſoner's word that he would not go forth.

Mr. Snap had by his ſecond lady two daughters, who were now in the bloom of their youth and beauty. Theſe young ladies, like damſels in romance, compaſſionated the captive Count, and endeavoured by all means to make his confinement leſs irkſome to him; which, though they were both very beautiful, they could not attain by any other way ſo effectually, as by engaging with him at cards, in which contentions, as will appear hereafter, the Count was greatly ſkilful.

As whiſk and ſwabbers was the game then in the chief vogue, they were obliged to look for a fourth perſon, in order to make up their parties. Mr. Snap himſelf would ſometimes relax his mind from the violent fatigues of his employment, by theſe recreations; and ſometimes a neighbouring young gentleman, or lady, came in to their aſſiſtance: but the moſt frequent gueſt was young maſter Wild, who had been educated from his infancy with the Miſs Snaps, and was, by all the neighbours, allotted for the huſband of Miſs Tiſhy, or Lætitia, the younger of the two; for though, being his couſin-german, ſhe was, perhaps, in the eye of a ſtrict conſcience, ſomewhat too nearly related to him; yet the old people on both ſides, though ſufficiently ſcrupulous in nice matters, agreed to overlook this objection.

Men of great genius as eaſily diſcover one another as free maſons can. It was therefore no wonder that the Count ſoon conceived an inclination to an intimacy with our young hero, whoſe vaſt abilities could not be concealed from one of the Count's diſcernment; for though this latter was ſo expert at his cards, that he was proverbially ſaid to *play the whole game*, he was no match for maſter Wild, who, inexperienced as he was, notwithſtanding all the art, the dexterity, and often the fortune of his adverſary, never failed to

ſend

ſend him away from the table with leſs in his pocket than he brought to it; for indeed Lanfanger himſelf could not have extracted a purſe with more ingenuity than our young hero.

His hands made frequent viſits to the Count's pocket, before the latter had entertained any ſuſpicion of him, imputing the ſeveral loſſes he ſuſtained rather to the innocent and ſprightly frolic of Miſs Doſhy, or Theodoſia, with which, as ſhe indulged him with little innocent freedoms about her perſon in return, he thought himſelf obliged to be contented; but one night, when Wild imagined the Count aſleep, he made ſo unguarded an attack upon him, that the other caught him in the fact: however, he did not think proper to acquaint him with the diſcovery he had made; but preventing him from any booty at that time, he only took care for the future to button his pockets, and to pack the cards with double induſtry.

So far was this detection from cauſing any quarrel between theſe two Prigs*, that in reality it recommended them to each other: for a wiſe man, that is to ſay a rogue, conſiders a trick in life, as a gameſter doth a trick at play. It ſets him on his guard; but he admires the dexterity of him who plays it. Theſe therefore, and many other ſuch inſtances of ingenuity, operated ſo violently on the Count, that notwithſtanding the diſparity which age, title, and above all, dreſs, had ſet between them, he reſolved to enter into an acquaintance with Wild. This ſoon produced a perfect intimacy, and that a friendſhip, which had a longer duration than is common to that paſſion between perſons who only propoſe to themſelves the common advantages of eating and drinking, whoring, or borrowing money; which ends as they ſoon fail, ſo doth the friendſhip founded upon them. Mutual intereſt, the greateſt of all purpoſes, was the cement of this alliance, which nothing, of conſequence, but ſuperior intereſt was capable of diſſolving.

* Thieves.

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

A dialogue between young Maſter Wild *and count* La Ruſe, *which, having extended to the rejoinder, had a very quiet, eaſy, and natural concluſion.*

ONE evening after the Miſs Snaps were retired to reſt, the Count thus addreſſed himſelf to young Wild: "You cannot, I apprehend, Mr. Wild, "be ſuch a ſtranger to your own great capacity, as "to be ſurpriſed when I tell you, I have often viewed, "with a mixture of aſtoniſhment and concern, your "ſhining qualities confined to a ſphere, where they "can never reach the eyes of thoſe who would intro- "duce them properly into the world, and raiſe you "to an eminence, where you may blaze out to the "admiration of all men. I aſſure you I am pleaſed "with my captivity, when I reflect, I am likely to "owe to it an acquaintance, and I hope friendſhip, "with the greateſt genius of my age; and, what is "ſtill more, when I indulge my vanity with a pro- "ſpect of drawing from obſcurity, pardon the expreſ- "ſion, ſuch talents, as were, I believe, never before "like to have been buried in it: for I make no queſ- "tion, but, at my diſcharge from confinement, "which will now ſoon happen, I ſhall be able to in- "troduce you into company, where you may reap "the advantage of your ſuperior parts.

"I will bring you acquainted, Sir, with thoſe, "who as they are capable of ſetting a true value on "ſuch qualifications, ſo they will have it both in their "power and inclination to prefer you for them. Such "an introduction is the only advantage you want, "without which your merit might be your misfor- "tune; for thoſe abilities which would entitle you "to honour and profit in a ſuperior ſtation, may ren- "der you only obnoxious to danger and diſgrace in a "lower."

MR. Wild anſwered: "Sir, I am not inſenſible "of my obligations to you, as well for the over-va- "lue you have ſet on my ſmall abilities, as for the "kindneſs you expreſs in offering to introduce me

"among

" among my ſuperiors. I muſt own, my father hath
" often perſuaded me to puſh myſelf into the compa-
" ny of my betters; but, to ſay the truth, I have an
" aukward pride in my nature, which is better pleaſed
" with being at the head of the loweſt claſs, than at
" the bottom of the higheſt. Permit me to ſay, tho'
" the idea may be ſomewhat coarſe, I had rather
" ſtand on the ſummit of a dunghill, than at the
" bottom of a hill in paradiſe: I have always thought
" it ſignifies little into what rank of life I am thrown,
" provided I make a great figure therein; and ſhould
" be as well ſatisfied with exerting my talents well at
" the head of a ſmall party or gang, as in the com-
" mand of a mighty army: for I am far from agree-
" ing with you, that great parts are often loſt in a
" low ſituation; on the contrary, I am convinced it
" is impoſſible they ſhould be loſt. I have often per-
" ſuaded myſelf, that there were not fewer than a
" thouſand in Alexander's troops capable of perform-
" ing what Alexander himſelf did.

" But becauſe ſuch ſpirits were not elected or deſ-
" tined to an imperial command, are we therefore to
" imagine they came off without a booty? or that
" they contented themſelves with the ſhare in com-
" mon with their comrades? Surely, no. In civil
" life, doubtleſs, the ſame genius, the ſame endow-
" ments have often compoſed the ſtateſman and the
" prig: for ſo we call what the vulgar name a Thief.
" The ſame parts, the ſame actions often promote
" men to the head of ſuperior ſocieties, which raiſe
" them to the head of a lower; and where is the eſſen-
" tial difference, if the one ends on Tower-hill, and
" the other at Tyburn? Hath the block any pre-
" ference to the gallows, or the ax to the halter, but
" what was given them by the ill-guided judgment of
" men? You will pardon me therefore, if I am not
" ſo haſtily inflamed with the common outſide of
" things, nor join the general opinion in preferring
" one ſtate to another. A guinea is as valuable in a
" leathern as in an embroidered purſe; and a cod's
" head is a cod's head ſtill, whether in a pewter or a
" ſilver diſh."

The

THE Count replied as follows: "What you have "now ſaid doth not leſſen my idea of your capacity; "but confirms my opinion of the ill effects of bad "and low company. Can any man doubt, whether "it is better to be a great ſtateſman, or a common "thief? I have often heard that the devil uſed to ſay, "where, or to whom, I know not, that it was better "to reign in Hell, than to be a valet de chambre in "Heaven, and perhaps he was in the right; but ſure "if he had had the choice of reigning in either, he "would have choſen better. The truth therefore is, "that by low converſation we contract a greater awe "for high things than they deſerve. We decline "great purſuits not from contempt, but deſpair. The "man who prefers the high road to a more reputable "way of making his fortune, doth it becauſe he "imagines the one eaſier than the other; but you "yourſelf have aſſerted, and with undoubted truth, "that the ſame abilities qualify you for undertaking, "and the ſame means will bring you to your end in "both journies; as in muſic, it is the ſame tune "whether you play it in a higher or a lower key. "To inſtance in ſome particulars: Is it not the ſame "qualification which enables this man to hire him-"ſelf as a ſervant, and to get into the confidence "and ſecrets of his maſter, in order to rob him, and "that to undertake truſts of the higheſt nature with "a deſign to break and betray them? Is it leſs diffi-"cult by falſe tokens to deceive a ſhop-keeper into "the delivery of his goods, which you afterwards "run away with, than to impoſe upon him by out-"ward ſplendor, and the appearance of fortune, in-"to a credit by which you gain, and he loſes twenty "times as much? Doth it not require more dexterity "in the fingers to draw out a man's purſe from his "pocket, or take a lady's watch from her ſide, "without being perceived of any, an excellence in "which, without flattery, I am perſuaded you have "no ſuperior, than to cog a die, or to ſhuffle a "pack of cards? Is it not as much art, as many ex-"cellent qualities, required to make a pimping por-"ter at a common bawdy-houſe, as would enable a

"man

"man to proſtitute his own or his friend's wife or "child? Doth it not aſk as good a memory, as "nimble an invention, as ſteady a countenance, to "forſwear yourſelf in Weſtminſter-hall, as would "furniſh out a complete tool of ſtate, or perhaps a "ſtateſman himſelf? It is needleſs to particularize "every inſtance; in all we ſhall find, that there is "a nearer connection between high and low life than "is generally imagined, and that a highwayman is "entitled to more favour with the great than he uſu-"ally meets with. If therefore, as I think I have "proved, the ſame parts which qualify a man for "eminence in a low ſphere, qualify him likewiſe for "eminence in a higher, ſure it can be no doubt in "which he would chuſe to exert them. Ambition, "without which no one can be a great man, will im-"mediately inſtruct him, in your own phraſe, to pre-"fer a hill in paradiſe to a dunghill; nay, even fear, "a paſſion the moſt repugnant to greatneſs, will ſhew "him how much more ſafely he may indulge himſelf "in the full and free exertion of his mighty abilities "in the higher, than in the lower rank: Since ex-"perience teaches him, that there is a crowd oftener "in one year at Tyburn, than on Tower-hill in a "century." Mr. Wild, with much ſolemnity, rejoin-ed, "That the ſame capacity which qualifies a Mill-"ken *, a Bridle-cull †, or a Buttock and File ‡, to "arrive at any degree of eminence in his profeſſion, "would likewiſe raiſe a man in what the world "eſteem a more honourable calling, I do not deny; "nay, in many of your inſtances it is evident, that "more ingenuity, more art are neceſſary to the lower, "than the higher proficients. If therefore you had "only contended, that every Prig might be a ſtateſ-"man if he pleaſed, I had readily agreed to it; but "when you conclude, that it is his intereſt to be ſo, "that ambition would bid him take that alterna-"tive, in a word, that a ſtateſman is greater or hap-"pier than a Prig, I muſt deny my aſſent. But, in "comparing theſe two together, we muſt carefully

* A Houſebreaker. † A Highwayman. ‡ A Shoplifter. Terms uſed in the Cant Dictionary.

"avoid

" avoid being miſled by the vulgar erroneous eſtima-
" tion of things: for mankind err in diſquiſitions of
" this nature, as phyſicians do, who, in conſidering
" the operations of a diſeaſe, have not a due regard
" to the age and complexion of the patient. The
" ſame degree of heat, which is common in this con-
" ſtitution, may be a fever in that; in the ſame man-
" ner that which may be riches or honour to me, may
" be poverty or diſgrace to another: for all theſe
" things are to be eſtimated by relation to the perſon
" who poſſeſſes them. A booty of 10l. looks as great
" in the eye of a Bridle-cull, and gives as much real
" happineſs to his fancy as that of as many thouſands
" to the ſtateſman; and doth not the former lay out
" his acquiſitions in whores and fiddles, with much
" greater joy and mirth, than the latter in palaces and
" pictures? What are the flattery, the falſe com-
" pliments of his gang, to the ſtateſman, when he
" himſelf muſt condemn his own blunders, and is
" obliged againſt his will to give fortune the whole
" honour of his ſucceſs? what is the pride, reſult-
" ing from ſuch ſham applauſe, compared to the ſe-
" cret ſatisfaction which a Prig enjoys in his mind in
" reflecting on a well-contrived and well-executed
" ſcheme? Perhaps indeed the greater danger is on
" the Prig's ſide; but then you muſt remember, that
" the greater honour is ſo too. When I mention ho-
" nour, I mean that which is paid them by their
" gang; for that weak part of the world, which is
" vulgarly called THE WISE, ſee both in a diſad-
" vantageous and diſgraceful light: And as the Prig
" enjoys, and merits too, the greater degree of ho-
" nour from his gang, ſo doth he ſuffer the leſs diſ-
" grace from the world, who think his miſdeeds, as
" they call them, ſufficiently at laſt puniſhed with a
" halter, which at once puts an end to his pain and
" infamy; whereas the other is not only hated in
" power, but deteſted and contemned at the ſcaf-
" fold; and future ages vent their malice on his fame,
" while the other ſleeps quiet and forgotten. Beſides,
" let us a little conſider the ſecret quiet of their con-
" ſciences; how eaſy is the reflection of having

" taken

" taken a few ſhillings or pounds from a ſtranger, " without any breach of confidence, or perhaps any " great harm to the perſon who loſes it, compared to " that of having betrayed a public truſt, and ruined " the fortunes of thouſands, perhaps of a great na- " tion? How much braver is an attack on the high- " way, than at a gaming-table; and how much " more innocent the character of a b——y-houſe " than a c——t pimp?" He was eagerly proceed- ing, when caſting his eyes on the count, he perceived him to be faſt aſleep: wherefore having firſt picked his pocket of three ſhillings, then gently jogged him, in order to take his leave, and promiſed to return to him the next morning to breakfaſt, they ſeparated: the Count retired to reſt, and maſter Wild to a night-cellar.

CHAP. VI.

Further conferences between the count and maſter Wild, *with other matters of the* GREAT *kind.*

THE Count miſſed his money the next morning, and very well knew who had it; but, as he knew likewiſe how fruitleſs would be any complaint, he choſe to paſs it by without mentioning it. Indeed it may appear ſtrange to ſome readers, that theſe gentlemen, who knew each other to be thieves, ſhould never once give the leaſt hint of this knowledge in all their diſcourſe together; but on the contrary, ſhould have the words honeſty, honour, and friendſhip, as often in their mouths as any other men. This, I ſay, may appear ſtrange to ſome; but thoſe who have lived long in cities, courts, gaols, or ſuch places, will, perhaps, be able to ſolve the ſeeming abſurdity.

When our two friends met the next morning, the Count (who though he did not agree with the whole of his friend's doctrine, was however, highly pleaſed with his argument) began to bewail the misfortune of his captivity, and the backwardneſs of friends to aſſiſt each other in their neceſſities; but what vexed him, he ſaid, moſt, was the cruelty of the fair: for he entruſted

truſted Wild with the ſecret of his having had an intrigue with miſs Theodoſia, the elder of the miſs Snaps, ever ſince his confinement, though he could not prevail with her to ſet him at liberty. Wild anſwered, with a ſmile: "It was no wonder a wo-"man ſhould wiſh to confine her lover, where ſhe "might be ſure of having him intirely to herſelf; "but added, he believed he could tell him a method "of certainly procuring his eſcape." The Count, eagerly beſought him to acquaint him with it. Wild told him bribery was the ſureſt means, and adviſed him to apply to the maid. The Count thanked him, but returned, "That he had not a farthing left be-"ſides one guinea, which he had then given her to "change." To which Wild ſaid, "He muſt make "it up with promiſes, which he ſuppoſed he was "courtier enough to know how to put off." The Count greatly applauded the advice, and ſaid, he hoped he ſhould be able in time to perſuade him to condeſcend to be a great man, for which he was ſo perfectly well qualified.

THIS method being concluded on, the two friends ſat down to cards, a circumſtance which I ſhould not have mentioned, but for the ſake of obſerving the prodigious force of habit; for, though the Count knew, if he won ever ſo much of Mr. Wild, he ſhould not receive a ſhilling, yet could he not refrain from packing the cards; nor could Wild keep his hands out of his friend's pockets, though he knew there was nothing in them.

WHEN the maid came home, the Count began to put it to her; offered her all he had, and promiſed mountains *in futuro*; but all in vain, the maid's honeſty was impregnable. She ſaid, "She would not "break her truſt for the whole world; no, not if ſhe "could gain a hundred pound by it." Upon which Wild ſtepping up, and telling her: "She need not "fear loſing her place, for it would never be found "out; that they could throw a pair of ſheets into "the ſtreet, by which it might appear he got out at "a window; that he himſelf would ſwear he ſaw him "deſcending; that the money would be ſo much

"gains

" gains in her pocket; that, beſides his promiſes, " which ſhe might depend on being performed, ſhe " would receive from him twenty ſhillings and nine- " pence in ready money (for ſhe had only laid out " three pence in plain Spaniſh;) and laſtly, that be- " ſides his honour, the Count ſhould leave a pair of " gold buttons (which afterwards turned out to be " braſs) of great value in her hands, as a further " pawn."

THE maid ſtill remained inflexible, till Wild offered to lend his friend a guinea more, and to depoſit it immediately in her hands. This reinforcement bore down the poor girl's reſolution, and ſhe faithfully promiſed to open the door to the count that evening.

THUS did our young hero not only lend his rhetoric, which few people care to do without a fee, but his money too, a ſum which many a good man would have made fifty excuſes before he would have parted with, to his friend, and procured him his liberty.

BUT it would be highly deragatory from the GREAT character of Wild, ſhould the reader imagine he lent ſuch a ſum to a friend without the leaſt view of ſerving himſelf. As, therefore, the reader may eaſily account for it in a manner more advantageous to our hero's reputation, by concluding that he had ſome intereſted view in the Count's enlargement, we hope he will judge with charity, eſpecially as the ſequel makes it not only reaſonable, but neceſſary, to ſuppoſe he had ſome ſuch view.

A LONG intimacy and friendſhip ſubſiſted between the Count and Mr. Wild, who being by the advice of the Count dreſſed in good cloaths, was by him introduced into the beſt company. They conſtantly frequented the aſſemblies, auctions, gaming-tables, and play-houſes; at which laſt they ſaw two acts every night, and then retired without paying, this being, it ſeems, an immemorial privilege which the beaus of the town preſcribe for to themſelves. This, however, did not ſuit Wild's temper, who called it a cheat, and objected againſt it, as requiring no dexterity but what every blockhead might put in execution. He ſaid it was a cuſtom very much ſavouring

of

of the Sneaking-budge *, but neither ſo honourable nor ſo ingenious.

WILD now made a conſiderable figure, and paſſed for a gentleman of great fortune in the funds. Women of quality treated him with great familiarity, young ladies began to ſpread their charms for him, when an accident happened that put a ſtop to his continuance in a way of life too inſipid and inactive to afford employment for thoſe great talents, which were deſigned to make a much more conſiderable figure in the world, than attends the character of a beau or a pretty gentleman.

CHAP. VII.

Maſter WILD *ſets out on his travels, and returns home again. A very ſhort chapter, containing infinitely more time and leſs matter than any other in the whole ſtory.*

WE are ſorry we cannot indulge our reader's curioſity with a full and perfect account of this accident; but as there are ſuch various accounts, one of which only can be true, and poſſibly, and indeed probably, none; inſtead of following the general method of hiſtorians, who in ſuch caſes ſet down the various reports, and leave to your own conjecture which you will chuſe, we ſhall paſs them all over.

CERTAIN it is, that whatever this accident was, it determined our hero's father to ſend his ſon immediately abroad, for ſeven years; and, which may ſeem ſomewhat remarkable, to his majeſty's plantations in America; that part of the world being, as he ſaid, freer from vices than the courts and cities of Europe, and conſequently leſs dangerous to corrupt a young man's morals. And as for the advantages, the old gentleman thought they were equal there with thoſe attained in the politer climates; for travelling, he ſaid, was travelling in one part of the world as well as another: it conſiſted in being ſuch a time from home, and in traverſing ſo many leagues; and appealed to experience, whether moſt of our travellers

* Shoplifting.

vellers in France and Italy did not prove at their return, that they might have been ſent as profitably to Norway and Greenland?

ACCORDING to theſe reſolutions of his father, the young gentleman went aboard a ſhip, and with a great deal of good company ſet out for the American hemiſphere. The exact time of his ſtay is ſomewhat uncertain; moſt probably longer than was intended: But howſoever long his abode there was, it muſt be a blank in this hiſtory, as the whole ſtory contains not one adventure worthy the reader's notice; being indeed, a continued ſcene of whoring, drinking, and removing from one place to another.

To confeſs a truth, we are ſo aſhamed of the ſhortneſs of this chapter, that we would have done a violence to our hiſtory, and have inſerted an adventure or two of ſome other traveller; to which purpoſe we borrowed the journals of ſeveral young gentlemen who have lately made the tour of Europe; but to our great ſorrow could not extract a ſingle incident, ſtrong enough to juſtify the theft to our conſcience.

WHEN we conſider the ridiculous figure this chapter muſt make, being the hiſtory of no leſs than eight years, our only comfort is, that the hiſtories of ſome men's lives, and perhaps of ſome men who have made a noiſe in the world, are in reality as abſolute blanks as the travels of our hero. As, therefore, we ſhall make ſufficient amends in the ſequel for this inanity, we ſhall haſten on to matters of true importance, and immenſe greatneſs. At preſent we content ourſelves with ſetting down our hero where we took him up, after acquainting or reader that he went abroad, ſtaid ſeven years, and then came home again.

CHAP. VIII.

An adventure where WILD, *in the diviſion of the booty, exhibits an aſtoniſhing inſtance of* GREATNESS.

THE Count was one night very ſucceſsful at the hazard-table, where Wild, who was juſt returned from his travels, was then preſent; as was likewiſe a young gentleman whoſe name was Bob

Bagſhot, an acquaintance of Mr. Wild's, and of whom he entertained a great opinion; taking therefore Mr. Bagſhot aſide, he adviſed him to provide himſelf (if he had them not about him) with a caſe of piſtols, and to attack the Count in his way home, promiſing to plant himſelf near with the ſame arms, as a *Corps de Reſerve*, and to come up on occaſion. This was accordingly executed, and the Count obliged to ſurrender to ſavage force what he had in ſo genteel and civil a manner taken at play.

And as it is a wiſe and philoſophical obſervation, that one misfortune never comes alone, the Count had hardly paſſed the examination of Mr. Bagſhot, when he fell into the hands of Mr. Snap, who, in company with Mr. Wild the elder, and one or two more gentlemen, being it ſeems thereto well warranted, laid hold of the unfortunate Count, and conveyed him back to the ſame houſe, from which by the aſſiſtance of his good friend he had formerly eſcaped.

Mr. Wild and Mr. Bagſhot went together to the tavern, where Mr. Bagſhot (generouſly as he thought) offered to ſhare the booty, and having divided the money into two unequal heaps, and added a golden ſnuff-box to the leſſer heap, he deſired Mr. Wild to take his choice,

Mr. Wild immediately conveyed the larger ſhare of the ready into his pocket, according to an excellent maxim of his: "Firſt ſecure what ſhare you can, "before you wrangle for the reſt:" and then, turning to his companion, he aſked him, with a ſtern countenance, whether he intended to keep all that ſum to himſelf? Mr. Bagſhot anſwered, with ſome ſurprize, that he thought Mr. Wild had no reaſon to complain; for it was ſurely fair, at leaſt on his part, to content himſelf with an equal ſhare of the booty, who had taken the whole. "I grant you took it," replied Wild, "but, pray who propoſed or counſelled "the taking it? Can you ſay, that you have done "more than executed my ſcheme? and might not "I, if I had pleaſed, have employed another, ſince "you well know there was not a gentleman in the "room but would have taken the money, if he had

" known how conveniently and ſafely to do it? That
" is very true (returned Bagſhot) but did not I exe-
" cute the ſcheme, did not I run the whole riſque?
" Should not I have ſuffered the whole puniſhment
" if I had been taken, and is not the labourer worthy
" of his hire? Doubtleſs (ſays Jonathan) he is ſo,
" and your hire I ſhall not refuſe you, which is all
" that the labourer is entitled to, or ever enjoys. I
" remember when I was at ſchool to have heard ſome
" verſes, which for the excellence of their doctrine
" made an impreſſion on me, purporting that the
" birds of the air, and the beaſts of the field, work not
" for themſelves. It is true, the farmer allows fodder
" to his oxen, and paſture to his ſheep; but it is for
" his own ſervice, not theirs. In the ſame manner the
" ploughman, the ſhepherd, the weaver, the builder,
" and the ſoldier, work not for themſelves but others;
" they are contented with a poor pittance (the labour-
" er's hire) and permit us the GREAT to enjoy the
" fruits of their labours. Ariſtotle, as my maſter
" told us, hath plainly proved, in the firſt book of
" his politics, that the low, mean, uſeful part of
" mankind, are born ſlaves to the wills of their ſu-
" periors, and are indeed as much their property as
" the cattle. It is well ſaid of us, the higher order
" of mortals, that we are born only to devour the
" fruits of the earth; and it may be as well ſaid of
" the lower claſs, that they are born only to produce
" them for us. Is not the battle gained by the ſweat
" and danger of the common ſoldier? are not the
" honour and fruits of the victory the general's who
" laid the ſcheme? Is not the houſe built by the la-
" bour of the carpenter and the bricklayer? Is it
" not built for the profit only of the architect, and
" for the uſe of the inhabitant, who could not eaſi-
" ly have placed one brick upon another? Is not
" the cloth, or the ſilk, wrought into its form, and
" variegated with all the beauty of colours, by thoſe
" who are forced to content themſelves with the
" coarſeſt and vileſt part of their work, while the profit
" and enjoyment of their labours fall to the ſhare of
" others? Caſt your eye abroad, and ſee who is it

" lives in the moſt magnificent buildings, feaſts his " palate with the moſt luxurious dainties, his eyes " with the moſt beautiful ſculptures and delicate " paintings, and clothes himſelf in the fineſt and " richeſt apparel; and tell me if all theſe do not fall " to his lot, who had not any the leaſt ſhare in pro- " ducing all theſe conveniencies, nor the leaſt abi- " lity ſo to do? Why then ſhould the ſtate of a Prig * " differ from all others? Or why ſhould you, who " are the labourer only, the executor of my ſcheme, " expect a ſhare in the profit? Be adviſed, therefore, " deliver the whole booty to me, and truſt to my " bounty for your reward." Mr. Bagſhot was ſome time ſilent, and looked like a man thunder-ſtruck: But at laſt recovering himſelf from his ſurprize, he thus began: " If you think, Mr. Wild, by the force " of your arguments to get the money out of my pock- " et, you are greatly mikaken. What is all this " ſtuff to me? D——n me, I am a man of honour, " and though I can't talk as well as you, by G—d " you ſhall not make a fool of me; and if you take " me for one, I muſt tell you, you are a raſcal." At which words he laid his hand to his piſtol. Wild perceiving the litte ſucceſs the great ſtrength of his arguments had met with, and the haſty temper of his friend, gave over his deſign for the preſent, and told Bagſhot, he was only in jeſt. But this coolneſs with which he treated the other's flame had rather the effect of oil than water. Bagſhot replied, in rage, " D—n " me, I don't like ſuch jeſts; I ſee you are a pitiful " raſcal, and a ſcoundrel." Wild, with a philoſo- phy worthy of great admiration, returned, " As for " your abuſe, I have no regard to it; but to con- " vince you, I am not afraid of you, let us lay the " whole booty on the table, and let the conqueror " take it all." And having ſo ſaid he drew out his ſhining hanger, whoſe glittering ſo dazzled the eyes of Bagſhot, that in a tone entirely altered, he ſaid, " No! he was contented with what he had already; " that it was mighty ridiculous in them to quarrel " among themſelves; that they had common enemies " enough

* A Thief.

"enough abroad, againſt whom they ſhould unite "their common force; that if he had miſtaken Wild, "he was ſorry for it; and as for a jeſt, he could take "a jeſt as well as another." Wild, who had a wonderful knack of diſcovering and applying to the paſſions of men, beginning now to have a little inſight into his friend, and to conceive what arguments would make the quickeſt impreſſion on him, cried out in a loud voice, "That he had bullied him into "drawing his hanger, and ſince it was out, he would "not put it up without ſatisfaction. What ſatis-"faction would you have? (anſwered the other.) "Your money or your blood, ſaid Wild. Why "lookye, Mr. Wild, (ſaid Bagſhot) if you want to "borrow a little of my part, ſince I know you to be "a man of honour, I don't care if I lend you:—— "For though I am not afraid of any man living, "yet rather than break with a friend, and as it may "be neceſſary for your occaſions"——Wild, who often declared that he looked upon borrowing to be as good a way of taking as any, and, as he called it, the genteeleſt kind of ſneaking-budge, putting up his hanger and ſhaking his friend by the hand, told him, he had hit the nail on the head; it was really his preſent neceſſity only that prevailed with him againſt his will; for that his honour was concerned to pay a conſiderable ſum the next morning. Upon which, contenting himſelf with one half of Bagſhot's ſhare, ſo that he had three parts in four of the whole, he took leave of his companion, and retired to reſt.

CHAP. IX.

Wild *pays a viſit to Miſs* Lætitia Snap. *A deſcription of that lovely young creature, and the ſucceſsleſs iſſue of Mr.* Wild's *addreſſes.*

THE next morning when our hero waked, he began to think of paying a viſit to Miſs Tiſhy Snap; a woman of great merit, and of as great generoſity, yet Mr. Wild found a preſent was ever moſt

welcome to her, as being a token of reſpect in her lover. He therefore went directly to a toy-ſhop, and there purchaſed a genteel ſnuff-box, with which he waited upon his miſtreſs; whom he found in the moſt beautiful undreſs. Her lovely hair hung wantonly over her forehead, being neither white with, nor yet free from, powder; a neat double clout, which ſeemed to have been worn a few weeks only, was pinned under her chin; ſome remains of that art with which ladies improve nature, ſhone on her cheeks: her body was looſely attired, without ſtays or jumps; ſo that her breaſts had uncontrolled liberty to diſplay their beauteous orbs, which they did as low as her girdle; a thin covering of a rumpled muſlin handkerchief almoſt hid them from the eyes, ſave in a few parts, where a good-natured hole gave opportunity to the naked breaſt to appear. Her gown was a ſattin of a whitiſh colour, with about a dozen little ſilver ſpots upon it, ſo artificially interwoven at great diſtance, that they looked as if they had fallen there by chance. This flying open, diſcovered a fine yellow petticoat beautifuly edged round the bottom with a narrow piece of half gold-lace, which was now almoſt become fringe; beneath this appeared another petticoat ſtiffened with whalebone, vulgarly called a hoop, which hung ſix inches at leaſt below the other; and under this again appeared an under garment of that colour which Ovid intends when he ſays,

———*Qui color albus erat nunc eſt contrarius albo.*

She likewiſe diſplayed two pretty feet covered with ſilk, and adorned with lace; and tied the right with a handſome piece of blue ribband; the left, as more unworthy, with a piece of yellow ſtuff, which ſeemed to have been a ſtrip of her upper-petticoat. Such was the lovely creature whom Mr. Wild attended. She received him at firſt with ſome of that coldneſs which women of ſtrict virtue by a commendable, though ſometimes painful reſtraint, enjoin themſelves to their lovers. The ſnuff-box being produced, was at firſt civilly, and indeed, gently refuſed: but on a ſecond application accepted. The tea-table was

ſoon called for, at which a diſcourſe paſſed between theſe young lovers, which, could we ſet it down with any accuracy, would be very edifying as well as entertaining to our reader; let it ſuffice then that the wit, together with the beauty of this young creature, ſo inflamed the paſſion of Wild, which, though an honourable ſort of a paſſion, was at the ſame time ſo extremely violent, that it tranſported him to freedoms too offenſive to the nice chaſtity of Lætitia; who was, to confeſs the truth, more indebted to her own ſtrength for the preſervation of her virtue, than to the awful reſpect or backwardneſs of her lover: he was indeed ſo very urgent in his addreſſes, that had he not with many oaths promiſed her marriage, we could ſcarce have been ſtrictly juſtified in calling his paſſion honourable; but he was ſo remarkably attached to decency, that he never offered any violence to a young lady without the moſt earneſt promiſes of that kind, theſe being, he ſaid, a ceremonial due to female modeſty, which coſt ſo little, and were ſo eaſily pronounced, that the omiſſion could ariſe from nothing but the mere wantonneſs of brutality. The lovely Lætitia, either out of prudence, or perhaps religion, of which ſhe was a liberal profeſſor, was deaf to all his promiſes; and luckily invincible by his force; for though ſhe had not yet learnt the art of well clenching her fiſt, nature had not however left her defenceleſs; for at the ends of her fingers ſhe wore arms, which ſhe uſed with ſuch admirable dexterity, that the hot blood of Mr. Wild ſoon began to appear in ſeveral little ſpots on his face, and his full-blown cheeks to reſemble that part which modeſty forbids a boy to turn up any where but in a public ſchool, after ſome pedagogue, ſtrong of arm, hath exerciſed his talents thereon. Wild now retreated from the conflict, and the victorious Lætitia, with becoming triumph and noble ſpirit, cried out, "D—n "your eyes, if this be your way of ſhewing your love, "I'll warrant I gives you enough on't." She then proceeded to talk of her virtue, which Wild bid her carry to the devil with her; and thus our lovers parted.

CHAP. X.

A diſcovery of ſome matters concerning the chaſte Lætitia, *which muſt wonderfully ſurprize, and perhaps affect our reader.*

MR. Wild was no ſooner departed, than the fair conquereſs opening the door of a cloſet, called forth a young gentleman, whom ſhe had there encloſed at the approach of the other. The name of this gallant was Tom Smirk. He was clerk to an attorney, and was indeed the greateſt beau, and the greateſt favourite of the ladies, at the end of the town where he lived. As we take dreſs to be the characteriſtic or efficient quality of a beau, we ſhall, inſtead of giving any character of this young gentleman, content ourſelves with deſcribing his dreſs only to our readers. He wore, then, a pair of white ſtockings on his legs, and pumps on his feet; his buckles were a large piece of Pinchbeck plate, which almoſt covered his whole foot. His breeches were of red pluſh, which hardly reached his knees; his waiſtcoat was a white dimity, richly embroidered with yellow ſilk, over which he wore a blue pluſh coat with metal buttons, a ſmart ſleeve, and a cape reaching half way down his back. His wig was of a brown colour, covering almoſt half his pate, on which was hung on one ſide a little laced hat, but cocked with great ſmartneſs. Such was the accompliſhed Smirk, who, at his iſſuing forth from the cloſet, was received with open arms by the amiable Lætitia. She addreſſed him by the tender name of dear Tommy; and told him ſhe had diſmiſſed the odious creature whom her father intended for her huſband, and had now nothing to interrupt her happineſs with him.

HERE, reader, thou muſt pardon us if we ſtop a while to lament the capriciouſneſs of nature in forming this charming part of the creation, deſigned to complete the happineſs of man; with their ſoft innocence to allay his ferocity, with their ſprightlineſs to ſoothe his cares, and with their conſtant friendſhip *to relieve all the* troubles and diſappointments which

can

can happen to him. Seeing then that theſe are the bleſſings chiefly ſought after, and generally found in every wife, how muſt we lament that diſpoſition in theſe lovely creatures, which leads them to prefer in their favour thoſe individuals of the other ſex, who do not ſeem intended by nature as ſo great a maſter-piece. For ſurely, however uſeful they may be in the creation, as we are taught that nothing, not even a louſe, is made in vain; yet theſe beaus, even that moſt ſplendid and honoured part, which, in this our iſland, nature loves to diſtinguiſh in red, are not, as ſome think, the nobleſt work of the Creator. For my own part, let any man chuſe to himſelf two beaus, let them be captains or colonels, as well dreſſed men as ever lived, I would venture to oppoſe a ſingle Sir Iſaac Newton, a Shakeſpear, a Milton, or perhaps ſome few others, to both theſe beaus; nay, and I very much doubt, whether it had not been better for the world in general, that neither of theſe beaus had ever been born, than that it ſhould have wanted the benefit ariſing to it from the labour of any one of thoſe perſons.

If this be true, how melancholy muſt be the conſideration, that any ſingle beau, eſpecially if he have but half a yard of ribbon in his hat, ſhall weigh heavier, in the ſcale of female affection, than twenty Sir Iſaac Newtons. How muſt our reader, who perhaps had wiſely accounted for the reſiſtance which the chaſte Lætitia had made to the violent addreſſes of the raviſhed (or rather raviſhing) Wild, from that lady's impregnable virtue; how muſt he bluſh, I ſay, to perceive her quit the ſtrictneſs of her carriage, and abandon herſelf to thoſe looſe freedoms which ſhe indulged to Smirk. But, alas! when we diſcover all, as, to preſerve the fidelity of our hiſtory, we muſt, when we relate that every familiarity had paſt between them, and that the FAIR Lætitia (for we muſt, in this ſingle inſtance, imitate Virgil, where he drops the *pius* and the *pater*, and drop our favourite epithet of *chaſte*) the FAIR Lætitia had, I ſay, made Smirk as happy as Wild deſired to be, what muſt then be *our reader's* confuſion? We will, therefore,

draw a curtain over this ſcene, from that philogyny which is in us, and proceed to matters, which, inſtead of diſhonouring the human ſpecies, will greatly raiſe and ennoble it.

CHAP. XI.

Containing as notable inſtances of human greatneſs as are to be met with in ancient or modern hiſtory. Concluding with ſome wholeſome hints to the gay part of mankind.

WILD no ſooner parted from the chaſte Lætitia, than recollecting that his friend the Count was returned to his lodgings in the ſame houſe, he reſolved to viſit him: for he was none of thoſe half-bred fellows, who are aſhamed to ſee their friends when they have plundered and betrayed them: from which baſe and pitiful temper many monſtrous cruelties have been tranſacted by men, who have ſometimes carried their modeſty ſo far as to the murder, or utter ruin of thoſe againſt whom their conſciences have ſuggeſted to them, that they have committed ſome ſmall treſpaſs, either by the debauching a friend's wife or daughter, belying or betraying the friend himſelf, or ſome other ſuch trifling inſtance. In our hero there was nothing not truly great: he could, without the leaſt abaſhment, drink a bottle with a man who knew he had the moment before picked his pocket; and, when he had ſtript him of every thing he had, never deſired to do him any father miſchief; for he carried good nature to that wonderful and uncommon height, that he never did a ſingle injury to man or woman, by which he himſelf did not expect to reap ſome advantage. He would often indeed ſay, that by the contrary party men often made a bad bargain with the devil, and did his work for nothing.

OUR hero found the captive Count, not baſely lamenting his fate, nor abandoning himſelf to deſpair, but, with due reſignation, employing himſelf in preparing ſeveral packs of cards for future exploits. The Count, little ſuſpecting that Wild had been the ſole contriver of the misfortune which had befallen him, roſe up, and eagerly embraced him; and Wild returned

turned his embrace with equal warmth. They were no ſooner ſeated than Wild took an occaſion, from ſeeing the cards lying on the table, to inveigh againſt gaming, and, with an uſual and highly commendable freedom, after firſt exaggerating the diſtreſt circumſtances in which the Count was then involved, imputed all his misfortunes to that curſed itch of play, which, he ſaid, he concluded had brought his preſent confinement upon him, and muſt unavoidably end in his deſtruction. The other, with great alacrity, defended his favourite amuſement (or rather employment), and having told his friend the great ſucceſs he had after his unluckily quitting the room, acquainted him with the accident which followed, and which the reader, as well as Mr. Wild, hath had ſome intimation of before; adding, however, one circumſtance not hitherto mentioned, *viz.* that he had defended his money with the utmoſt bravery, and had dangerouſly wounded at leaſt two of the three men that had attacked him. This behaviour Wild, who not only knew the extreme readineſs with which the booty had been delivered, but alſo the conſtant frigidity of the Count's courage, highly applauded, and wiſhed he had been preſent to aſſiſt him. The Count then proceeded to animadvert on the careleſſneſs of the watch, and the ſcandal it was to the laws, that honeſt people could not walk the ſtreets in ſafety; and after expatiating ſome time on that ſubject, he aſked Mr. Wild if he ever ſaw ſo prodigious a run of luck (for ſo he choſe to call his winning, though he knew Wild was well acquainted with his having loaded dice in his pocket.) The other anſwered, it was indeed prodigious, and almoſt ſufficient to juſtify any perſon, who did not know him better, in ſuſpecting his fair play. No man, I believe, dares call that in queſtion, replied he. No ſurely, ſays Wild, you are well known to be a man of more honour: but pray, Sir, continued he, did the raſcals rob you of all? Every ſhilling, cries the other, with an oath; they did not leave me a ſingle ſtake.

While they were thus diſcourſing, Mr. Snap, with a gentleman, who followed him, introduced Mr. Bagſhot into the company. It ſeems Mr. Bag-

ſhot, immediately after his ſeparation from Mr. Wild, returned to the gaming-table, where, having truſted to Fortune that treaſure which he had procured by his induſtry, the faithleſs goddeſs committed a breach of truſt, and ſent Mr. Bagſhot away with as empty pockets as are to be found in any laced coat in the kingdom. Now, as that gentleman was walking to a certain reputable houſe or ſhed in Covent-Garden market, he fortuned to meet with Mr. Snap, who had juſt returned from conveying the Count to his lodgings, and was then walking to and fro before the gaming-houſe door; for you are to know, my good reader, if you have never been a man of wit and pleaſure about town, that as the voracious pike lieth ſnug under ſome weed before the mouth of any of thoſe little ſtreams which diſcharge themſelves into a large river, waiting for the ſmall fry which iſſue thereout; ſo hourly before the door or mouth of theſe gaming-houſes doth Mr. Snap, or ſome other gentleman of his occupation, attend the iſſuing forth of the ſmall fry of young gentlemen, to whom they deliver little ſlips of parchment, containing invitations of the ſaid gentlemen to their houſes, together with one Mr. John Doe *, a perſon whoſe company is in great requeſt. Mr. Snap, among many others of theſe billets, happened to have one directed to Mr. Bagſhot, being at the ſuit or ſolicitation of one Mrs. Anne Sample, Spinſter, at whoſe houſe the ſaid Bagſhot had lodged ſeveral months, and whence he had inadvertently departed without taking a formal leave; on which account Mrs. Anne had taken this method of *ſpeaking with* him.

Mr. Snap's houſe being now very full of good company, he was obliged to introduce Mr. Bagſhot into the Count's apartment, it being, as he ſaid, the only chamber he had to *lock up* in. Mr. Wild no ſooner ſaw his friend than he ran eagerly to embrace him, and immediately preſented him to the Count, who received him with great civility.

CHAP.

* This is a fictitious name which is put into every writ; for what purpoſe the lawyers beſt know.

CHAP. XII.

Further particulars relating to Miſs Tithy, *which perhaps may not greatly ſurpriſe after the former. The deſcription of a very fine gentleman. And a dialogue between* Wild *and the Count, in which public virtue is juſt hinted at, with,* &c.

MR. Snap had turned the key a very few minutes before a ſervant of the family, called Mr. Bagſhot out of the room, telling him, there was a perſon below who deſired to ſpeak with him; and this was no other than Miſs Lætitia Snap, whoſe admirer Mr. Bagſhot had long been, and in whoſe tender breaſt his paſſion had raiſed a more ardent flame than that of any of his rivals had been able to raiſe. Indeed ſhe was ſo extremely fond of this youth, that ſhe often confeſſed to her female confidents, if ſhe could ever have liſtened to the thought of living with any one man, Mr. Bagſhot was he. Nor was ſhe ſingular in this inclination, many other young ladies being her rivals in this lover, who had all the great and noble qualifications neceſſary to form a true gallant, and which nature is ſeldom ſo extremely bountiful as to indulge to any one perſon. We will endeavour, however, to deſcribe them all with as much exactneſs as poſſible. He was then ſix feet high, had large calves, broad ſhoulders, a ruddy complexion, with brown curled hair, a modeſt aſſurance, and clean linen. He had indeed, it muſt be confeſſed, ſome ſmall deficiencies to counterbalance theſe heroic qualities: for he was the ſilleſt fellow in the world, could neither write nor read, nor had he a ſingle grain or ſpark of honour, honeſty, or good-nature in his whole compoſition.

As ſoon as Mr. Bagſhot had quitted the room, the Count, taking Wild by the hand, told him he had ſomething to communicate to him of very great importance: "I am very well convinced, ſaid he, that "Bagſhot is the perſon who robbed me." Wild ſtarted with great amazement at this diſcovery, and an-

ſwered with a moſt ſerious countenance, " I adviſe " you to take care how you caſt any ſuch reflections " on a man of Mr. Bagſhot's nice honour; for I am " certain he will not bear it." " D—n his honour," quoth the enraged Count, " nor can I bear being " robbed; I will apply to a juſtice of peace." Wild replied with great indignation, " Since you dare en- " tertain ſuch a ſuſpicion againſt my friend, I will " henceforth declaim all acquaintance with you. Mr, " Bagſhot is a man of honour, and my friend, and " conſequently it is impoſſible he ſhould be guilty " of a bad action." He added much more to the ſame purpoſe, which had not the expected weight with the Count; for the latter ſeemed ſtill certain as to the perſon, and reſolute in applying for juſtice, which, he ſaid, he thought he owed to the publick, as well as to himſelf. Wild then changed his countenance into a kind of deriſion, and ſpoke as follows: " Suppoſe it ſhould be poſſible that Mr. Bagſhot " had, in a frolic, (for I will call it no other) taken " this method of borrowing your money, what will " you get by proſecuting him? Not your money " again; for you hear he was ſtript at the gaming- " table;" (of which Bagſhot had, during their ſhort conſabulation, informed them) " you will get then " an opportunity of being ſtill more out of pocket " by the proſecution. Another advantage you may " promiſe yourſelf is the being blown up at every " gaming-houſe in town, for that I will aſſure you " of; and then much good may it do you to ſit down " with the ſatisfaction of having diſcharged what it " ſeems you owe the public. I am aſhamed of my " own diſcernment, when I miſtook you for a great " man. Would it not be better for you to receive " part (perhaps all) of your money again by a wife " concealment; for however * *feedy* Mr. Bagſhot may " be now, if he hath really played this frolic with " you, you may believe he will play it with others, " and when he is in caſh, you may depend on a re- " ſtoration; the law will be always in your power, " and

* Poor.

" and that is the laſt remedy which a brave or a wiſe " man would reſort to. Leave the affair therefore to " me; I will examine Bagſhot, and if I find he hath " played you this trick, I will engage my own ho- " nour you ſhall in the end be no loſer." The Count anſwered: " If I was ſure to be no loſer, Mr. Wild, " I apprehend you have a better opinion of my un- " derſtanding than to imagine I would proſecute a " gentleman for the ſake of the public. Theſe are " fooliſh words of courſe, which we learn a ridicu- " lous habit of ſpeaking, and will often break from " us without any deſign or meaning. I aſſure you " all I deſire is a reimburſement, and if I can by " your means obtain that, the public may—" con- cluding with a phraſe too coarſe to be inſerted in a hiſtory of this kind.

THEY were now informed that dinner was ready, and the company aſſembled below ſtairs, whither the reader may, if he pleaſe, attend theſe gentlemen.

THERE ſat down at the table Mr. Snap, and the two Miſs Snaps, his daughters, Mr. Wild the elder, Mr. Wild the younger, the Count, Mr. Bagſhot, and a grave gentleman, who had formerly had the honour of carrying arms in a regiment of foot, and who was now engaged in the office (perhaps a more profit- able one) of aſſiſting or following Mr. Snap in the execution of the laws of his country.

NOTHING very remarkable paſſed at dinner. The converſation (as is uſual in polite company) rolled chiefly on what they were then eating, and what they had lately eaten. In this the military gentle- man, who had ſerved in Ireland, gave them a very particular account of a new manner of roaſting po- tatoes, and others gave an account of other diſhes. In ſhort, an indifferent by-ſtander would have con- cluded from their diſcourſe, that they had all come into this world for no other purpoſe, than to fill their bellies; and indeed if this was not the chief, it is probable it was the moſt innocent deſign nature had in their formation.

As ſoon as *the diſh* was removed, and the ladies re- tired, the Count propoſed a game at hazard, which

was

was immediately aſſented to by the whole company, and the dice being immediately brought in, the Count took up the box, and demanded who would ſet him: to which no one made any anſwer, imagining perhaps the Count's pockets to be more empty than they were; for, in reality, that gentleman (notwithſtanding what he had heartily ſwore to Mr. Wild) had, ſince his arrival at Mr. Snap's, conveyed a piece of plate to pawn, by which means he had furniſhed himſelf with ten guineas. The Count, therefore, perceiving this backwardneſs in his friends, and probably ſomewhat gueſſing at the cauſe of it, took the ſaid guineas out of his pocket, and threw them on the table; when lo! (ſuch is the force of example) all the reſt began to produce their funds, and immediately a conſiderable ſum glittering in their eyes, the game began.

CHAP. XIII.

A chapter, of which we are extremely vain, and which indeed we look on as our Chef d'Oeuvre, *containing a wonderful ſtory concerning the devil, and as nice a ſcene of honour as ever happened.*

MY reader, I believe, even if he be a gameſter, would not thank me for an exact relation of every man's ſucceſs; let it ſuffice then that they played till the whole money vaniſhed from the table. Whether the devil himſelf carried it away, as ſome ſuſpected, I will not determine; but very ſurpriſing it was, that every perſon proteſted he had loſt, nor could any one gueſs who, unleſs *the devil*, had won.

BUT though very probable it is, that this arch-fiend had ſome ſhare in the booty, it is likely he had not all; Mr. Bagſhot being imagined to be a conſiderable winner, notwithſtanding his aſſertions to the contrary; for he was ſeen by ſeveral to convey money often into his pocket; and what is ſtill a little ſtronger preſumption is, that the grave gentleman, whom we have mentioned to have ſerved his country in two honourable capacities, not being willing to truſt alone to the evidence of his eyes, had frequently dived into the ſaid

Bagſhot's

Bagſhot's pocket, whence (as he tells us in the apology for his life afterwards publiſhed*) tho' he might extract a few pieces, he was very ſenſible he had left many behind.

THE gentleman had long indulged his curioſity in this way before Mr. Bagſhot, in the heat of gaming, had perceived him; but as Bagſhot was now leaving off play, he diſcovered this ingenious feat of dexterity; upon which, leaping up from his chair in a violent paſſion, he cried out, "I thought I had been among "gentlemen, and men of honour, but, d——n me, "I find we have a pickpocket in company." The ſcandalous ſound of this word extremely alarmed the whole board, nor did they all ſhew leſs ſurpriſe than the *Conv——r* (whoſe not ſitting of late is much lamented) would expreſs at hearing there was an Atheiſt in the room: but it more particularly affected the gentleman at whom it was levelled, tho' it was not addreſſed to him. He likewiſe ſtarted from his chair, and with a fierce countenance and accent, ſaid, "Do "you mean me? D—n your eyes, you are a raſcal "and a ſcoundrel." Thoſe words would have been immediately ſucceeded by blows, had not the company interpoſed, and with ſtrong arm withheld the two antagoniſts from each other. It was however a long time before they could not be prevailed on to ſit down; which being at laſt happily brought about, Mr. Wild the elder, who was a well diſpoſed old man, adviſed them to ſhake hands and be friends; but the gentleman who had received the firſt affront, abſolutely refuſed it, and ſwore, *He would have the villain's blood.* Mr. Snap highly applauded the reſolution, and affirmed that the affront was by no means to be put up by any who bore the name of a gentleman, and that unleſs his friend reſented it properly, he would never execute another warrant in his company; that he had always looked upon him as a man of honour, and doubted not but he would prove himſelf ſo; and

* NOT in a book by itſelf, in imitation of ſome other ſuch perſons, but in the ordinary's account, &c. where all the apologies for the lives of rogues and whores which have been publiſhed within theſe twenty years, ſhould have been inſerted.

and that, if it was his own caſe, nothing ſhould perſuade him to put up ſuch an affront without proper ſatisfaction. The Count likewiſe ſpoke on the ſame ſide, and the parties themſelves muttered ſeveral ſhort ſentences, purporting their intentions. At laſt Mr. Wild our hero, riſing ſlowly from his ſeat, and having fixed the attention of all preſent, began as follows. "I "have heard with infinite pleaſure every thing which "the two gentlemen who ſpoke laſt have ſaid with "relation to honour, nor can any man poſſibly en- "tertain a higher and nobler ſenſe of that word, nor "a greater eſteem of its ineſtimable value, than my- "ſelf. If we have no name to expreſs it by in our "Cant Dictionary, it were well to be wiſhed we had. "It is indeed the eſſential quality of a gentleman, "and which no man who ever was great in the field, "or on the road (as others expreſs it) can poſſibly be "without. But alas! Gentlemen, what pity is it, "that a word of ſuch ſovereign uſe and virtue ſhould "have ſo uncertain and various an application, that "ſcarce two people mean the ſame thing by it? Do "not ſome by honour mean good-nature and huma- "nity, which weak minds call virtues? How then! "Muſt we deny it to the great, the brave, the noble, "to the ſackers of towns, the plunderers of provinces, "and the conquerors of kingdoms? Were not theſe "men of honour? and yet they ſcorned thoſe pitiful "qualities I have mentioned. Again, ſome few (or "I am miſtaken) include the idea of honeſty in their "honour. And ſhall we then ſay, that no man who "withholds from another what law, or juſtice per- "haps, calls his own, or who greatly and boldly "deprives him of ſuch property, is a man of honour? "Heaven forbid I ſhould ſay ſo in this, or, indeed, "in any other good company. Is honour truth? "No, it is not in the lie's going from us, but in its "coming to us our honour is injured. Doth it then "conſiſt in what the vulgar call cardinal virtues? It "would be an affront to your underſtandings to ſup- "poſe it, ſince we ſee every day ſo many men of "honour without any. In what then doth the word "honour conſiſt? Why in itſelf alone. A man of

"honour

" honour is he that is called a man of honour; and " while he is ſo called, he ſo remains, and no longer. " Think not any thing a man commits can forfeit " his honour. Look abroad into the world: the " PRIG while he flouriſhes is a man of honour; when " in gaol, at the bar, or the tree, he is ſo no longer. " And why is this diſtinction? Not from his actions; " for thoſe are often as well known in his flouriſhing " eſtate, as they are afterwards; but becauſe men, I " mean thoſe of his own party, or gang, call him " a man of honour in the former, and ceaſe to call " him ſo in the latter condition. Let us ſee then; how " hath Mr. Bagſhot injured the gentleman's honour? " Why, he hath called him a pick-pocket; and that, " probably, by a ſevere conſtruction, and a long round- " about way of reaſoning, may ſeem a little to dero- " gate from his honour, if conſidered in a very nice " ſenſe. Admitting it, therefore, for argument's ſake, " to be ſome ſmall imputation on his honour, let Mr. " Bagſhot give him ſatisfaction; let him doubly and " triply repair this oblique injury by directly aſſerting, " that he believes he is a man of honour." The gentleman anſwered, he was content to refer it to Mr. Wild, and whatever ſatisfaction he thought ſufficient, he would accept. Let him give me my money again firſt, ſaid Bagſhot, and then I will call him a man of honour with all my heart. The gentleman then proteſted he had not any, which Snap ſeconded, declaring he had his eyes on him all the while; but Bagſhot remained ſtill unſatisfied, till Wild, rapping out a hearty oath, ſwore he had not taken a ſingle farthing, adding, that whoever aſſerted the contrary gave him the lie, and he would reſent it. And now, ſuch was the aſcendency of this Great Man, that Bagſhot immediately acquieſced, and performed the ceremonies required: and thus, by the exquiſite addreſs of our hero, this quarrel, which had ſo fatal an aſpect, and which between two perſons ſo extremely jealous of their honour, would moſt certainly have produced very dreadful conſequences, was happily concluded.

MR. Wild was indeed a little intereſted in this affair, as he himſelf had ſet the gentleman to work, and had

had received the greateſt part of the booty: and as to Mr. Snap's depoſition in his favour, it was the uſual height to which the ardour of that worthy perſon's friendſhip too frequently hurried him. It was his conſtant maxim, that he was a pitiful fellow who would ſtick at a little * *Rapping* for his friend.

CHAP. XIV.

In which the hiſtory of GREATNESS *is continued.*

MATTERS being thus reconciled, and the gaming over, from reaſons before hinted, the company proceeded to drink about with the utmoſt chearfulneſs and friendſhip; drinking healths, ſhaking hands, and profeſſing the moſt perfect affection for each other. All which were not in the leaſt interrupted by ſome deſigns which they then agitated in their minds, and which they intended to execute as ſoon as the liquor had prevailed over ſome of their underſtandings; Bagſhot and the gentleman intending to rob each other; Mr. Snap and Mr. Wild the elder, meditating what other creditors they could find out, to charge the gentlemen then in cuſtody with: the Count hoping to renew the play; and Wild our hero laying a deſign to put Bagſhot out of the way, or, as the vulgar expreſs it, to hang him with the firſt opportunity. But none of theſe great deſigns could at preſent be put in execution, for Mr. Snap being ſoon after ſummoned abroad on buſineſs of great moment, which required likewiſe the aſſiſtance of Mr. Wild the elder and his other friend, and as he did not care to truſt to the nimbleneſs of the Count's heels, of which he had already had ſome experience, he declared he muſt *lock up* for that evening. Here, reader, if thou pleaſeſt, as we are in no great haſte, we will ſtop and make a ſimile. As when their lap is finiſhed, the cautious huntſman to their kennel gathers the nimble-footed hounds; they with lank ears and tails ſtouch ſullenly on, whilſt he with his whippers-in follows cloſe to their heels, regardleſs of their dogged humour, till having ſeen them ſafe within the door, he turns the key, and

* *Rapping* is a cant term for perjury.

and then retires to whatever buſineſs or pleaſure calls him thence: ſo, with lowering countenance, and reluctant ſteps, mounted the Count and Bagſhot to their chamber, or rather kennel, whither they were attended by Snap, and thoſe who followed him, and where Snap having ſeen them depoſited, very contentedly locked the door and departed. And now, reader, we will, in imitation of the truly laudable cuſtom of the world, leave theſe our good friends to deliver themſelves as they can, and purſue the thriving fortunes of Wild our hero, who with that great averſion to ſatisfaction and content, which is inſeparably incident to great minds, began to enlarge his views with his proſperity: for this reſtleſs amiable diſpoſition, this noble avidity which increaſes with feeding, is the firſt principal or conſtituent quality of theſe our great men; to whom, in their paſſage on to greatneſs, it happens as to a traveller over the Alps, or, if this be a too far-fetched ſimile, to one who travels weſtward over the hills near Bath, where the ſimile was indeed made. He ſees not the end of his journey at once; but paſſing on from ſcheme to ſcheme, and from hill to hill, with noble conſtancy, reſolving ſtill to attain the ſummit on which he hath fixed his eye, however dirty the roads may be through which he ſtruggles, he at length arrives at——ſome vile inn, where he finds no kind of entertainment nor conveniency for repoſe. I fancy, reader, if thou haſt ever travelled in theſe roads, one part of my ſimile is ſufficiently apparent, (and indeed, in all theſe illuſtrations, one ſide is generally much more apparent than the other) but, believe me, if the other doth not ſo evidently appear to thy ſatisfaction, it is from no other reaſon, than becauſe thou art unacquainted with theſe Great Men, and haſt not had ſufficient inſtruction, leiſure, or opportunity to conſider what happens to thoſe who purſue what is generally underſtood by GREATNESS: for ſurely, if thou hadſt animadverted not only on the many perils to which Great Men are daily liable while they are in their progreſs, but hadſt diſcerned, as it were through a microſcope (for it is inviſible to the naked eye) that diminutive *ſpeck of happineſs* which they attain even

to

in the conſummation of their wiſhes, thou wouldſt lament with me the unhappy fate of theſe Great Men, on whom nature hath ſet ſo ſuperior a mark, that the reſt of mankind are born for their uſe and emolument only, and be apt to cry out, "It is pity that THOSE, "for whoſe pleaſure and profit mankind are to la-"bour and ſweat, to be hacked and hewed, to be pil-"laged, plundered, and every way deſtroyed, ſhould "reap ſo LITTLE advantage from all the miſeries "they occaſion to others." For my part, I own myſelf of that humble kind of mortals, who conſider themſelves born for the behoof of ſome great man or other, and could I behold his happineſs carved out of the labour and ruin of a thouſand ſuch reptiles as myſelf, I might with ſatisfaction exclaim, *Sic, ſic juvat:* but when I behold one Great Man ſtarving with hunger, and freezing with cold, in the midſt of fifty thouſand, who are ſuffering the ſame evils for his diverſion; when I ſee another, whoſe own mind is a more abject ſlave to his own greatneſs, and is more tortured and racked by it than thoſe of all his vaſſals: laſtly, when I conſider whole nations rooted out only to bring tears into the eyes of a Great Man, not indeed becauſe he hath extirpated ſo many, but becauſe he had no more nations to extirpate, then truly I am almoſt inclined to wiſh that nature had ſpared us this her MASTER-PIECE, and that no GREAT MAN had ever been born into the world.

BUT to proceed with our hiſtory, which will, we hope, produce much better leſſons, and more inſtructive than any we can preach: Wild was no ſooner retired to a night-cellar, than he began to reflect on the ſweets he had that day enjoyed from the labours of others, *viz.* Firſt, from Mr. Bagſhot, who had for his uſe robbed the Count; and, Secondly, from the gentleman, who for the ſame good purpoſe had picked the pocket of Bagſhot. He then proceeded to reaſon thus with himſelf. "The art of policy is the art "of multiplication; the degrees of greatneſs being "conſtituted by thoſe two little words *More* and *Leſs*. "Mankind are firſt properly to be conſidered under "*two* grand diviſions, thoſe that uſe their own hands,

"and

" and thoſe who employ the hands of others. The " former are the baſe and rabble; the latter, the gen- " teel part of the creation. The mercantile part of " the world, therefore, wiſely uſe the term *employing* " *hands*, and juſtly prefer each other, as they employ " more or fewer; for thus one merchant ſays he is " greater than another, becauſe he employs more " hands. And now indeed the merchant ſhould ſeem " to challenge ſome character of greatneſs, did we " not neceſſarily come to a ſecond diviſion, *viz.* Of " thoſe who employ hands for the uſe of the commu- " nity in which they live, and of thoſe who employ " hands merely for their own uſe, without any regard " to the benefit of ſociety. Of the former ſorts are " the yeoman, the manufacturer, the merchant, and, " perhaps, the gentleman. The firſt of theſe being " to manure and cultivate his native ſoil, and to em- " ploy hands to produce the fruits of the earth. The " ſecond being to improve them by employing hands " likewiſe, and to produce from them thoſe uſeful " commodities, which ſerve as well for the conveni- " encies as neceſſaries of life. The third is to em- " ploy hands for the exportation of the redundance " of our own commodities, and to exchange them " with the redundances of foreign nations, that thus " every ſoil and every climate may enjoy the fruits of " the whole earth. The gentleman is, by employing " hands likewiſe, to embelliſh his country with the " improvement of arts and ſciences, with the mak- " ing and executing good and wholeſome laws for the " preſervation of property, and the diſtribution of " juſtice, and in ſeveral other manners to be uſeful " to ſociety. Now we come to the ſecond part of this " diviſion, *viz.* Of thoſe who employ hands for their " own uſe only; and this is that noble and great part, " who are generally diſtinguiſhed into *Conquerors*, " *abſolute Princes*, *Stateſmen*, and *Prigs* *. Now all " theſe differ from each other in greatneſs only, as " they employ *more* or *fewer* hands. And Alexander " the Great was only *greater* than a captain of one of " the Tartarian or Arabian hords, as he was at the " head of a larger number. In what then is a ſingle

* Thieves. " Prig

" *Prig* inferior to any other great Man, but becauſe " he employs his own hands only; for he is not on " that account to be levelled with the baſe and vul- " gar, becauſe he employs his hands for his own uſe " only. Now, ſuppoſe a *Prig* had as many tools as " any prime miniſter ever had, would he not be as " great as any prime miniſter whatſoever? Undoubt- " edly he would. What then have I to do in the pur- " ſuit of greatneſs, but to procure a gang, and to " make the uſe of this gang center in myſelf. This " gang ſhall rob for me only, receiving very mode- " rate rewards for their actions; out of this gang I " will prefer to my favour the boldeſt and moſt ini- " quitous, as the vulgar expreſs it; the reſt I will, " from time to time, as I ſee occaſion, tranſport and " hang at my pleaſure; and thus, which I take to " be the higheſt excellence of a *Prig*, convert thoſe " laws which are made for the benefit and protection " of ſociety, to my ſingle uſe."

HAVING thus pre-conceived his ſcheme, he ſaw nothing wanting to put it in immediate execution, but that which is indeed the beginning as well as the end of all human devices: I mean money. Of which commodity he was poſſeſſed of no more than ſixty-five guineas, being all that remained from the double benefits he had made at Bagſhot, and which did not ſeem ſufficient to furniſh his houſe, and every other convenience neceſſary for ſo grand an undertaking. He reſolved therefore to go immediately to the gaming-houſe, which was then ſitting, not ſo much with an intention of truſting to fortune, as to play the ſurer card of attacking the winner in his way home. On his arrival, however, he thought he might as well try his ſucceſs at the dice, and reſerve the other recourſe as his laſt expedient. He accordingly ſat down to play, and as Fortune, no more than others of her ſex, is obſerved to diſtribute her favours with ſtrict regard to great mental endowments, ſo our hero loſt every farthing in his pocket. This loſs, however, he bore with great conſtancy of mind, and with as great compoſure of aſpect. To ſay truth, he conſidered the money as only lent for a ſhort time, or rather in-

deed as depoſited with a banker. He then reſolved to have immediate recourſe to his ſurer ſtratagem; and caſting his eyes round the room, he ſoon perceived a gentleman ſiting in a diſconſolate poſture, who ſeemed a proper inſtrument or tool for his purpoſe. In ſhort, to be as conciſe as poſſible in theſe leaſt ſhining parts of our hiſtory, Wild accoſted this man, ſounded him, found him fit to execute, propoſed the matter, received a ready aſſent, and having fixed on the perſon who ſeemed that evening the greateſt favourite of fortune, they poſted themſelves in the moſt proper place to ſurpriſe the enemy as he was retiring to his quarters, where he was ſoon attacked, ſubdued and plundered; but indeed of no conſiderable booty; for it ſeems this gentleman played on a common ſtock, and had depoſited his winnings at the ſcene of action; nor had he any more than two ſhillings in his pocket when he was attacked.

THIS was ſo cruel a diſappointment to Wild, and ſo ſenſibly affects us, as no doubt it will the reader; that as it muſt diſqualify us both from proceeding any farther at preſent, we will now take a little breath; and therefore we ſhall here cloſe this book.

THE

THE HISTORY OF THE LIFE OF THE LATE Mr. JONATHAN WILD THE GREAT.

BOOK II.

CHAP. I.

Characters of filly people, with the proper uſes for which ſuch are deſigned.

ONE reaſon why we choſe to end our firſt book, as we did, with the laſt chapter was, that we are now obliged to produce two characters of a ſtamp entirely different from what we have hitherto dealt in. Theſe perſons are of that pitiful order of mortals, who are in contempt called good-natured; being indeed ſent into the world by nature, with the ſame deſign with which men put little fiſh into a pike-pond, in order to be devoured by that voracious water-hero.

But to proceed with our hiſtory, Wild having ſhared the booty in much the ſame manner as before, *i. e.* taken three fourths of it, amounting to eighteen-pence, was now retiring to reſt, in no very happy mood, when by accident he met a young fellow who had formerly been his companion, and indeed intimate friend at ſchool. It hath been thought that friendſhip *is uſually* nurſed by ſimilitude of manners; but the contrary

contrary had been the caſe between theſe lads; for whereas Wild was rapacious and intrepid, the other had always more regard for his ſkin than his money; Wild therefore had very generouſly compaſſionated this defect in his ſchool-fellow, and had brought him off from many ſcrapes, into moſt of which he had firſt drawn him, by taking the fault and whipping to himſelf. He had always indeed been well paid on ſuch occaſions; but there are a ſort of people, who, together with the beſt of the bargain, will be ſure to have the obligation too on their ſide; ſo it had happened here: for this poor lad conſidered himſelf in the higheſt degree obliged to Mr. Wild, and had contracted a very great eſteem and friendſhip for him; the traces of which an abſence of many years had not in the leaſt effaced in his mind. He no ſooner knew Wild therefore, than he accoſted him in the moſt friendly manner, and invited him home with him to breakfaſt, it being now near nine in the morning, which invitation our hero with no great difficulty conſented to. This young man, who was about Wild's age, had ſome time before ſet up in the trade of a jeweller, in the materials or ſtock for which he had laid out the greateſt part of a little fortune, and had married a very agreeable woman for love, by whom he then had two children. As our reader is to be more acquainted with this perſon, it may not be improper to open ſomewhat of his character, eſpecially as it will ſerve as a kind of foil to the noble and great diſpoſition of our hero, and as the one ſeems ſent into this world as a proper object on which the talents of the other were to be diſplayed with a proper and juſt ſucceſs.

Mr. Thomas Heartfree then, for that was his name, was of an honeſt and open diſpoſition. He was of that ſort of men, whom experience only, and not their own natures, muſt inform, that there are ſuch things as deceit and hypocriſy in the world; and who, conſequently, are not at five and twenty as difficult to be impoſed upon as the oldeſt and moſt ſubtile. He was poſſeſſed of ſeveral great weakneſſes of mind; being *good*-natured, friendly and generous to

a great exceſs. He had indeed too little regard to common juſtice, for he had forgiven ſome debts to his acquaintance, only becauſe they could not pay him; and had entruſted a bankrupt on his ſetting up a ſecond time, from having been convinced, that he had dealt in his bankruptcy with a fair and honeſt heart; and that he had broke through misfortune only, and not from neglect or impoſture. He was withal ſo ſilly a fellow, that he never took the leaſt advantage of the ignorance of his cuſtomers, and contented himſelf with very moderate gains on his goods; which he was the better enabled to do, notwithſtanding his generoſity, becauſe his life was extremely temperate, his expences being ſolely confined to the chearful entertainment of his friends at home, and now and then a moderate glaſs of wine, in which he indulged himſelf in the company of his wife, who, with an agreeable perſon, was a mean-ſpirited, poor, domeſtic, low-bred animal, who confined herſelf moſtly to the care of her family; placed her happineſs in her huſband and her children; followed no expenſive faſhions or diverſions; and indeed rarely went abroad, unleſs to return the viſits of a few plain neighbours, and twice a year afforded herſelf, in company with her huſband, the diverſion of a play, where ſhe never ſat in a higher place than the pit.

To this ſilly woman did this ſilly fellow introduce the GREAT WILD, informing her at the ſame time of their ſchool acquaintance, and the many obligations he had received from him. This ſimple woman no ſooner heard her huſband had been obliged to her gueſt, than her eyes ſparkled on him with a benevolence, which is an emanation from the heart, and of which great and noble minds, whoſe hearts never ſwell but with an injury, can have no very adequate idea; it is therefore no wonder that our hero ſhould miſconſtrue, as he did, the poor, innocent, and ſimple affection of Mrs. Heartfree towards her huſband's friend, for that great and generous paſſion, which fires the eyes of a modern heroine, when the colonel is ſo kind as to indulge the city creditor with partaking of his table to-day, and of his bed to-morrow.

Wild therefore inſtantly returned the compliment, as he underſtood it, with his eyes, and preſently after beſtowed many encomiums on her beauty, with which perhaps ſhe, who was a woman, though a good one, and miſapprehended the deſign, was not diſpleaſed any more than the huſband.

When breakfaſt was ended, and the wife retired to her houſhold affairs, Wild, who had a quick diſcernment into the weakneſſes of men, and who, beſides the knowledge of his good (or fooliſh) diſpoſition when a boy, had now diſcovered ſeveral ſparks of goodneſs, friendſhip, and generoſity in his friend, began to diſcourſe over the accidents which had happened in their childhood, and took frequent occaſions of reminding him of thoſe favours which we have before mentioned his having conferred on him; he then proceeded to the moſt vehement profeſſions of friendſhip, and to the moſt ardent expreſſions of joy in this renewal of their acquaintance. He at laſt told him with great ſeeming pleaſure, that he believed he had an opportunity of ſerving him by the recommendation of a gentleman to his cuſtom, who was then on the brink of marriage, and, if he be not already engaged, "I will, ſays he, endeavour to prevail on "him to furniſh his lady with jewels at your ſhop."

Heartfree was not backward in thanks to our hero; and, after many earneſt ſolicitations to dinner, which were refuſed, they parted for the firſt time.

But here, as it occurs to our memory, that our readers may be ſurpriſed (an accident which ſometimes happens in hiſtories of this kind) how Mr. Wild the elder, in his preſent capacity, ſhould have been able to maintain his ſon at a reputable ſchool, as this appears to have been, it may be neceſſary to inform him, that Mr. Wild himſelf was then a tradeſman in good buſineſs; but by misfortunes in the world, to wit, extravagance and gaming, he had reduced himſelf to that honourable occupation which we have formerly mentioned.

Having cleared up this doubt, we will now purſue our hero, who forthwith repaired to the Count, and having firſt ſettled preliminary articles concern-

ing diſtributions, he acquainted him with the ſcheme which he had formed againſt Heartfree; and after conſulting proper methods to put it in execution, they began to concert meaſures for the enlargement of the Count; on which the firſt, and indeed only point to be conſidered, was to raiſe money, not to pay his debts, for that would have required an immenſe ſum, and was contrary to his inclination or intention, but to procure him bail; for as to his eſcape, Mr. Snap had taken ſuch precautions that it appeared abſolutely impoſſible.

CHAP. II.

Great examples of GREATNESS *in* Wild, *ſhewn as well by his behaviour to* Bagſhot, *as in a ſcheme laid firſt to impoſe on* Heartfree *by means of the Count, and then to cheat the Count of the booty.*

WILD undertook, therefore, to extract ſome money from Bagſhot, who, notwithſtanding the depredations made on him, had carried off a pretty conſiderable booty from their engagement at dice the preceding day. He found Mr. Bagſhot in expectation of his bail, and, with a countenance full of concern, which he could at any time, with wonderful art, put on, told him, that all was diſcovered; that the Count knew him, and intended to proſecute him for the robbery, had not I exerted (ſaid he) my utmoſt intereſt, and with great difficulty prevailed on him in caſe you refund the money——"Refund the "money! cry'd Bagſhot, that is in your power: for "you know what an inconſiderable part of it fell to "my ſhare. How! replied Wild, is this your gra"titude to me for ſaving your life? for your own "conſcience muſt convince you of your guilt, and "with how much certainty the gentleman can "give evidence againſt you. Marry come up, quoth "Bagſhot, I believe my life alone will not be in "danger. I know thoſe who are as guilty as myſelf. "Do you tell me of conſcience?———Yes, ſirrah! "anſwered our hero, taking him by the collar, and

"ſince

" ſince you dare threaten me, I will ſhew you the dif-
" ference between committing a robbery, and con-
" niving at it, which is all I can charge myſelf with.
" I own indeed, I ſuſpected when you ſhewed me a
" ſum of money, that you had not come honeſtly by
" it. How, ſays Bagſhot, frighted out of one half of
" his wits, and amazed out of the other, can you
" deny?—Yes, you raſcal, anſwered Wild, I do deny
" every thing, and do you find a witneſs to prove it;
" and, to ſhew you how little apprehenſions I have
" of your power to hurt me, I will have you appre-
" hended this moment."—At which words he offered to break from him; but Bagſhot laid hold of his ſkirts, and, with an altered tone and manner, begged him not to be ſo impatient. " Refund then, ſirrah,
" cries Wild, and perhaps I may take pity on you.
" What muſt I refund? anſwered Bagſhot. Every
" farthing in your pocket, replied Wild; then I may
" have ſome compaſſion on you, and not only ſave
" your life, but, out of an exceſs of generoſity, may
" return you ſomething." At which word Bagſhot ſeeming to heſitate, Wild pretended to make to the door, and rapt out an oath of vengeance with ſo violent an emphaſis, that his friend no longer preſumed to balance, but ſuffered Wild to ſearch his pockets, and draw forth all he found, to the amount of twenty-one guineas and a half, which laſt piece our generous hero returned him again; telling him, he might now ſleep ſecure, but adviſed him for the future never to threaten his friends.

Thus did our hero execute the greateſt exploits with the utmoſt eaſe imaginable, by means of thoſe tranſcendent qualities which nature had indulged him with, *viz.* a bold heart, a thundering voice, and a ſteady countenance.

Wild now returned to the Count, and informed him that he had got ten guineas of Bagſhot; for, with great and commendable prudence, he ſunk the other eleven into his own pocket; and told him with that money he would procure him bail, which he after prevailed on his father, and another gentleman of the ſame occupation, to become, for two guineas each; ſo

ſo that he made lawful prize of ſix more, making Bagſhot debtor for the whole ten; for ſuch were his great abilities, and ſo vaſt the compaſs of his underſtanding, that he never made any bargan without over-reaching (or, in the vulgar phraſe, cheating) the perſon with whom he dealt,

THE Count being, by theſe means, enlarged, the firſt thing they did, in order to procure credit from tradeſmen, was the taking a handſome houſe ready furniſhed in one of the new ſtreets; in which, as ſoon as the Count was ſettled, they proceeded to furniſh him with ſervants and equipage, and all the *Inſignia* of a large eſtate proper to impoſe on poor Heartfree. Theſe being all obtained, Wild made a ſecond viſit to his friend, and, with much joy in his countenance, acquainted him that he had ſucceeded in his endeavours, and that the gentleman had promiſed to deal with him for the jewels which he intended to preſent his bride, and which were deſigned to be very ſplendid and coſtly; he therefore appointed him to go to the Count the next morning, and carry with him a ſet of the richeſt and moſt beautiful jewels he had, giving him at the ſame time ſome hints of the Count's ignorance of that commodity, and that he might extort what price of him he pleaſed; but Heartfree told him, not without ſome diſdain, that he ſcorned to take any ſuch advantage; and, after expreſſing much gratitude to his friend for his recommendation, he promiſed to carry the jewels at the hour, and to the place appointed.

I AM ſenſible that the reader, if he hath but the leaſt notion of greatneſs, muſt have ſuch a contempt for the extreme folly of this fellow, that he will be very little concerned at any misfortunes which may befal him in the ſequel; for, to have no ſuſpicion, that an old ſchool-fellow, with whom he had, in his tendereſt years, contracted a friendſhip, and who, on the accidental renewing of their acquaintance, had profeſſed the moſt paſſionate regard for him, ſhould be very ready to impoſe on him; in ſhort, to conceive that a friend ſhould, of his own accord, without any view to his own intereſt, endeavour to do him a ſervice,

vice, muſt argue ſuch weakneſs of mind, ſuch ignorance of the world, and ſuch an artleſs, ſimple, undeſigning heart, as muſt render the perſon poſſeſſed of it the loweſt creature, and the propereſt object of contempt imaginable, in the eyes of every man of underſtanding and diſcernment.

WILD remembered that his friend Heartfree's faults were rather in his heart than in his head; that though he was ſo mean a fellow, that he was never capable of laying a deſign to injure any human creature, yet was he by no means a fool, nor liable to any groſs impoſition, unleſs where his heart betrayed him. He therefore inſtructed the Count to take only one of his jewels at the firſt interview, and to reject the reſt as not fine enough, and order him to provide ſome richer. He ſaid, this management would prevent Heartfree from expecting ready money, for the jewel he brought with him, which the Count was preſently to diſpoſe of, and by means of that money, and his great abilities at cards and dice, to get together as large a ſum as poſſible, which he was to pay down to Heartfree, at the delivery of the ſet of jewels, who would be thus void of all manner of ſuſpicion, and would not fail to give him credit for the reſidue.

BY this contrivance it will appear in the ſequel, that Wild did not only propoſe to make the impoſition on Heartfree, who was (hitherto) void of all ſuſpicion, more certain; but to rob the Count himſelf of this ſum. This double method of cheating the very tools who are our inſtruments to cheat others, is the ſuperlative degree of greatneſs, and is probably, as far as any ſpirit cruſted over with clay can carry it, falling very little ſhort of Diaboliſm itſelf.

THIS method was immediately put in execution, and the Count, the firſt day, took only a ſingle brilliant, worth about three hundred pounds, and ordered a necklace, ear-rings, and ſolitaire, of the value of three thouſand more, to be prepared by that day ſeven-night.

THIS interval was employed by Wild in proſecuting his ſcheme of raiſing a gang, in which he met with ſuch ſucceſs, that within a few days he had levied ſe-

veral bold and reſolute fellows, fit for any enterprize, how dangerous and great ſoever.

We have before remarked, that the trueſt mark of greatneſs is inſatiability. Wild had covenanted with the Count to receive three-fourths of the booty, and had, at the ſame time, covenanted with himſelf, to ſecure the other fourth part likewiſe, for which he had formed a very great and noble deſign; but he now ſaw with concern, that ſum, which was to be received in hand by Heartfree, in danger of being abſolutely loſt. In order, therefore, to poſſeſs himſelf of that likewiſe, he contrived that the jewels ſhould be brought in the afternoon, and that Heartfree ſhould be detained before the Count could ſee him; ſo that the night ſhould overtake him in his return, when two of his gang were ordered to attack and plunder him.

CHAP. III.

Containing ſcenes of ſoftneſs, love, and honour, all in the great ſtile.

THE Count had diſpoſed of his jewel for its full value, and this he had, by dexterity, raiſed to a thouſand pounds; this ſum therefore he paid down to Heartfree, promiſing him the reſt within a month. His houſe, his equipage, his appearance, but, above all, a certain plauſibility in his voice and behaviour would have deceived any, but one whoſe great and wiſe heart had dictated to him ſomething within, which would have ſecured him from any danger of impoſition from without. Heartfree therefore did not in the leaſt ſcruple giving him credit; but as he had in reality procured thoſe jewels of another, his own little ſtock not being able to furniſh any thing ſo valuable, he begged the Count would be ſo kind to give his note for the money, payable at the time he mentioned; which that gentleman did not in the leaſt ſcruple: ſo he paid him the thouſand pound in ſpecie, and gave his note for two thouſand eight hundred pounds more to Heartfree, who burnt with gratitude to Wild, for the good cuſtomer he had recommended to him.

As

As ſoon as Heartfee was departed, Wild, who waited in another room, came in, and received the caſket from the Count; it having been agreed between them, that this ſhould be depoſited in his hands, as he was the original contriver of the ſcheme, and was to have the largeſt ſhare. Wild having received the caſket, offered to meet the Count late that evening to come to a diviſion; but ſuch was the latter's confidence in the honour of our hero, that he ſaid, if it was any inconvenience to him, the next morning would do altogether as well. This was more agreeable to Wild, and accordingly an appointment being made for that purpoſe, he ſet out in haſte to purſue Heartfree to the place where the two gentlemen were ordered to meet and attack him. Thoſe gentlemen, with noble reſolution, executed their purpoſe; they attacked and ſpoiled the enemy of the whole ſum he had received from the Count.

As ſoon as the engagement was over, and Heartfree left ſprawling on the ground, our hero, who wiſely declined truſting the booty in his friends hands, tho' he had good experience of their honour, made off after the conquerors: at length they being all at a place of ſafety, Wild, according to a previous agreement, received nine tenths of the booty; the ſubordinate heroes did indeed profeſs ſome little unwillingneſs (perhaps more than was ſtrictly conſiſtent with honour) to perform their contract; but Wild, partly by argument, but more by oaths and threatnings, prevailed with them to fulfil their promiſe.

Our hero having thus, with wonderful addreſs, brought this great and glorious action to a happy concluſion, reſolved to relax his mind after his fatigue, in the converſation of the fair. He therefore ſet forwards to his lovely Lætitia: but, in his way, accidentally met with a young lady of his acquaintance, Miſs Molly Straddle, who was taking the air in Bridges-ſtreet. Miſs Molly ſeeing Mr. Wild, ſtopped him, and with a familiarity peculiar to a genteel town education, tapp'd or rather flapp'd him on the back, and aſked him to treat her with a pint of wine, at a neighbouring tavern. The hero, tho' he loved

the chaſte Lætitia with exceſſive tenderneſs, was not of that low ſniveling breed of mortals, who, as it is generally expreſſed, *tie themſelves to a woman's apron-ſtrings*; in a word, who are tainted with that mean, baſe, low vice or virtue as it is called of conſtancy; therefore he immediately conſented, and attended her to a tavern famous for excellent wine, known by the name of the Rummer and Horſeſhoe, where they retired to a room by themſelves. Wild was very vehement in his addreſſes, but to no purpoſe; the young lady declared ſhe would grant no favour till he had made her a preſent; this was immediately complied with, and the lover made as happy as he could deſire.

THE immoderate fondneſs which Wild entertained for his dear Lætitia, would not ſuffer him to waſt any conſiderable time with Miſs Straddle. Notwithſtanding, therefore, all the endearments and careſſes of that young lady, he ſoon made an excuſe to go down ſtairs, and thence immediately ſet forward to Lætitia, without taking any formal leave of Miſs Straddle, or indeed of the drawer, with whom the lady was afterwards obliged to come to an account for the reckoning.

MR. WILD, on his arrival at Mr. Snap's, found only Miſs Doſhy at home; that young lady being employed alone, in imitation of Penelope, with her thread or worſted; only with this difference, that whereas Penelope unravelled by night what ſhe had knit, or wove, or ſpun by day, ſo what our young heroine unravelled by day, ſhe knit again by night. In ſhort, ſhe was mending a pair of blue ſtockings with red clocks: a circumſtance which, perhaps, we might have omitted, had it not ſerved to ſhew that there are ſtill ſome ladies of this age, who imitate the ſimplicity of the antients.

WILD immediately aſked for his beloved, and was informed, that ſhe was not at home. He then enquired where ſhe was to be found, and declared, he would not depart till he had ſeen her; nay, not till he had married her; for, indeed, his paſſion for her was truly honourable; in other words, he had ſo ungovernable a deſire for her perſon, that he would go

any lengths to ſatisfy it. He then pulled out the caſket, which he ſwore was full of the fineſt jewels, and that he would give them all to her with other promiſes; which ſo prevailed on Miſs Doſhy, who had not the common failure of ſiſters in envying, and often endeavouring to diſappoint each other's happineſs, that ſhe deſired Mr. Wild to ſit down a few minutes, whilſt ſhe endeavoured to find her ſiſter, and to bring her to him. The lover thanked her; and promiſed to ſtay till her return; and Miſs Doſhy, leaving Mr. Wild to his meditations, faſtened him in the kitchen by barring the door (for moſt of the doors in this manſion were made to be bolted on the outſide) and then flapping to the door of the houſe with great violence, without going out of it, ſhe ſtole ſoftly up ſtairs, where Miſs Lætitia was engaged in cloſe conference with Mr. Bagſhot. Miſs Letty, being informed by her ſiſter in a whiſper of what Mr. Wild had ſaid, and what he had produced, told Mr. Bagſhot, that a young lady was below to viſit her, whom ſhe would diſpatch with all imaginable haſte, and return to him. She deſired him therefore to ſtay with patience for her in the mean time, and that ſhe would leave the door unlocked, tho' her papa would never forgive her if he ſhould diſcover it. Bagſhot promiſed on his honour, not to ſtep without his chamber; and the two young ladies went ſoftly down ſtairs; when pretending firſt to make their entry into the houſe, they repaired to the kitchen, where not even the preſence of the chaſte Lætitia could reſtore that harmony to the countenance of her lover, which Miſs Theodoſia had left him poſſeſſed of; for, during her abſence, he had diſcovered the abſence of a purſe containing bank notes for 900l. which had been taken from Mr. Heartfree, and which, indeed, Miſs Straddle had, in the warmth of his amorous careſſes, unperceived drawn from him. However, as he had that perfect maſtery of his temper, or rather of his muſcles, which is as neceſſary to the forming a great character, as to the perſonating it on the ſtage, he ſoon conveyed a ſmile into his countenance, and concealing as well his misfortune as his chagrin at it, began to pay ho-

nourable addreſſes to Miſs Letty. This young lady, among many other good ingredients, had three very predominant paſſions, to wit, vanity, wantonneſs, and avarice. To ſatisfy the firſt of theſe, ſhe employed Mr. Smirk and company; to the ſecond, Mr. Bagſhot and company; and our hero had the honour and happineſs of ſolely engroſſing the third. Now, theſe three ſorts of lovers ſhe had very different ways of entertaining. With the firſt, ſhe was all gay and coquette; with the ſecond, all fond and rampant; and with the laſt, all cold and reſerved. She therefore told Mr. Wild, with a moſt compoſed aſpect, that ſhe was glad he had repented of his manner of treating her at their laſt interview, where his behaviour was ſo monſtrous, that ſhe had reſolved never to ſee him any more; that ſhe was afraid her own ſex would hardly pardon her the weakneſs ſhe was guilty of in receding from that reſolution, which ſhe was perſuaded ſhe never ſhould have brought herſelf to, had not her ſiſter, who was there to confirm what ſhe ſaid (as ſhe did with many oaths) betrayed her into his company, by pretending it was another perſon to viſit her: but however, as he now thought proper to give her more convincing proofs of his affections (for he had now the caſket in his hand) and ſince ſhe perceived his deſigns were no longer againſt her virtue, but were ſuch as a woman of honour might liſten to, ſhe muſt own—and then ſhe feign'd an heſitation, when Theodoſia began: "Nay, ſiſter, I am reſolved you ſhall counterfeit no "longer. I aſſure you, Mr. Wild, ſhe hath the moſt "violent paſſion for you in the world; and indeed, "dear Tiſhy, if you offer to go back, ſince I plain-"ly ſee Mr. Wild's deſigns are honourable, I will "betray all you have ever ſaid.—How, ſiſter, (an-"ſwered Lætitia) I proteſt you will drive me out of "the room: I did not expect this uſage from you." Wild then fell on his knees, and taking hold of her hand, repeated a ſpeech which, as the reader may eaſily ſuggeſt it to himſelf, I ſhall not here ſet down. He then offered her the caſket, but ſhe gently rejected it; and on a ſecond offer, with a modeſt countenance and voice, deſired to know what it contained.

Wild

Wild then opened it, and took forth (with ſorrow I write it, and with ſorrow will it be read) one of thoſe beautiful necklaces, with which at the fair of Bartholomew, they deck the well bewhitened neck of Thaleſtris queen of Amazons, Anna Bullen, queen Elizabeth, or ſome other high princeſs in Drollic ſtory. It was indeed compoſed of that paſte, which Derdæus Magnus, an ingenious toyman, doth at a very moderate price diſpenſe to the ſecond rate beaus of the metropolis. For, to open the truth, which we aſk our reader's pardon for having concealed from him ſo long; the ſagacious Count, wiſely fearing leſt ſome accident might prevent Mr. Wild's return at the appointed time, had carefully conveyed the jewels which Mr. Heartfree had brought with him, into his own pocket; and in their ſtead had placed in the caſket theſe artificial ſtones, which, tho' of equal value to a philoſopher, and perhaps of a much greater to a true admirer of the compoſitions of art, had not however the ſame charms in the eyes of Miſs Letty; who had indeed ſome knowledge of jewels; for Mr. Snap, with great reaſon, conſidering how valuable a part of a lady's education it would be to be well inſtructed in theſe things, in an age when young ladies learn little more than how to dreſs themſelves, had in her youth placed Miſs Letty as the hand-maid (or houſe-maid as the vulgar call it) of an eminent pawn-broker. The lightning, therefore, which ſhould have flaſhed from the jewels, flaſhed from her eyes, and thunder immediately followed from her voice. She be-knaved, be-raſcalled, be-rogued the unhappy hero, who ſtood ſilent, confounded with aſtoniſhment, but more with ſhame and indignation, at being thus out-witted and over-reached. At length, he recovered his ſpirits, and throwing down the caſket in a rage, he ſnatched the key from the table; and without making any anſwer to the ladies, who both very plentifully opened upon him, and without taking any leave of them, he flew out at the door, and repaired with the utmoſt expedition to the Count's habitation.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

In which Wild, *after many fruitleſs endeavours to diſcover his friend, moralizes on his misfortunes in a ſpeech, which may be of uſe (if rightly underſtood) to ſome other conſiderable ſpeech-makers.*

NOT the higheſt-fed footman of the higheſt-bred woman of quality knocks with more impetuoſity, than Wild did at the Count's door, which was immediately opened by a well-dreſt livery-man, who anſwered that his maſter was not at home. Wild, not ſatisfied with this, ſearched the houſe, but to no purpoſe; he then ranſacked all the gaming-houſes in town, but found no Count; indeed that gentleman had taken leave of his houſe the ſame inſtant Mr. Wild had turned his back, and, equipping himſelf with boots and a poſt-horſe, without taking with him either ſervant, clothes, or any neceſſaries, for the journey of a great man, made ſuch mighty expedition, that he was now upwards of twenty miles on his way to Dover.

WILD finding his ſearch ineffectual, reſolved to give it over for that night; he then retired to his ſeat of contemplation, a night-cellar, where, without a ſingle farthing in his pocket, he called for a ſneaker of punch, and placing hemſelf on a bench by himſelf, he ſoftly vented the following ſoliloquy:

"How vain is human GREATNESS! What avail "ſuperior abilities, and a noble defiance of thoſe "narrow rules and bounds which confine the vulgar; "when our beſt concerted ſchemes are liable to be "defeated! How unhappy is the ſtate of PRIGGISM! "How impoſſible for human prudence to foreſee and "guard againſt every circumvention! It is even as a "game of Cheſs, where, while the rook, or knight, "or biſhop, is buſied in forecaſting ſome great enter-"prize, a worthleſs pawn interpoſes, and diſconcerts "his ſcheme. Better had it been for me to have ob-"ſerved the ſimple laws of friendſhip and morality,

"than

" than thus to ruin my friend for the benefit of others. " I might have commanded his purſe to any degree " of moderation, I have now diſabled him from the " power of ſerving me. Well! but that was not my " deſign. If I cannot arraign my own conduct, why " ſhould I, like a woman or a child, ſit down and " lament the diſappointment of chance? But can I " acquit myſelf of all neglect? Did I not miſbehave " in putting it in the power of others to outwit me? " But that is impoſſible to be avoided. In this a *Prig* " is more unhappy than any other: a cautious man " may, in a crowd, preſerve his own pockets by keep- " ing his hands in them; but while the *Prig* employs " his hands in another's pocket, how ſhall he be able " to defend his own! Indeed in this light what can " be imagined more miſerable than a *Prig?* How " dangerous are his acquiſitions! how unſafe, how " unquiet his poſſeſſions! why then ſhould any man " wiſh to be a *Prig*, or where is his greatneſs? I " anſwer, in his mind: 'tis the inward glory, the " ſecret conſciouſneſs of doing great and wonderful " actions, which can alone ſupport the truly GREAT " Man, whether he be a CONQUEROR, a TYRANT, " a STATESMAN, or a PRIG. Theſe muſt bear him " up againſt the private curſe and public imprecati- " on, and while he is hated and deteſted by all man- " kind, muſt make him inwardly ſatisfied with him- " ſelf. For what but ſome ſuch inward ſatisfaction " as this could inſpire men poſſeſſed of power, of " wealth, of every human bleſſing, which pride, ava- " rice, or luxury could deſire, to forſake their homes, " abandon eaſe and repoſe, and at the expence of " riches and pleaſures, at the price of labour and " hardſhip, and at the hazard of all that fortune hath " liberally given them, could ſend them at the head " of a multitude of *Prigs* called an army, to moleſt " their neighbours; to introduce rape, rapine, blood- " ſhed, and every kind of miſery among their own " ſpecies? What but ſome ſuch glorious appetite of " mind could inflame princes, endowed with the " greateſt honours, and enriched with the moſt plen- " tiful revenues, to deſire maliciouſly to rob thoſe

" ſubjects

" ſubjects of their liberties, who are content to ſweat " for the luxury, and to bow down their knees to the " pride of thoſe very princes? What but this can in- " ſpire them to deſtroy one half of their ſubjects, in " order to reduce the reſt to an abſolute dependence " on their own wills, and on thoſe of their brutal ſuc- " ceſſors? What other motive could ſeduce a ſubject, " poſſeſt of great property in his community, to be- " tray the intereſt of his fellow-ſubjects, of his bre- " thren, and his poſterity, to the wanton diſpoſition " of ſuch princes? Laſtly, what leſs inducement could " perſuade the *Prig* to forſake the methods of acquir- " ing a ſafe, an honeſt, and a plentiful livelihood; " and, at the hazard of even life itſelf, and what is " miſtakenly called diſhonour, to break openly and " bravely through the laws of his country, for un- " certain, unſteady, and unſafe gain? Let me then " hold myſelf contented with this reflection, that I " have been wiſe, though unſucceſsful, and am a " GREAT, though an unhappy man."

His ſoliloquy and his punch concluded together; for he had at every pauſe comforted himſelf with a ſip. And now it came firſt into his head, that it would be more difficult to pay for it, than it was to ſwallow it, when, to his great pleaſure, he beheld, at another corner of the room, one of the gentlemen whom he had employed in the attack on Heartfree, and who, he doubted not, would readily lend him a guinea or two; but he had the mortification, on applying to him, to hear that the gaming-table had ſtript him of all the booty which his own generoſity had left in his poſſeſſion. He was therefore obliged to purſue his uſual method on ſuch occaſions: ſo, cocking his hat fiercely, he marched out of the room without making any excuſe, or any one daring to make the leaſt demand.

CHAP.

CHAP V.

Containing many ſurpriſing adventures, which our Hero *with* GREAT GREATNESS *atchieved.*

WE will now leave our hero to take a ſhort repoſe, and return to Mr. Snap's, where at Wild's departure the fair Theodoſia had again betaken herſelf to her ſtocking, and Miſs Letty had retired up ſtairs to Mr. Bagſhot; but that gentleman had broken his parole, and, having conveyed himſelf below ſtairs behind a door, he took the opportunity of Wild's ſally to make his eſcape. We ſhall only obſerve, that Miſs Letty's ſurprize was the greater, as ſhe had, notwithſtanding her promiſe to the contrary, taken the precaution to turn the key; but, in her hurry, ſhe did it ineffectually. How wretched muſt have been the ſituation of this young creature, who had not only loſt a lover, on whom her tender heart perfectly doated, but was expoſed to the rage of an injured father, tenderly jealous of his honour, which was deeply engaged to the ſheriff of London and Middleſex for the ſafe cuſtody of the ſaid Bagſhot, and for which two very good reſponſible friends had given not only their words but their bonds.

BUT let us remove our eyes from this melancholy object, and ſurvey our hero, who, after a ſucceſsleſs ſearch for Miſs Straddle, with wonderful greatneſs of mind, and ſteadineſs of countenance, went early in the morning to viſit his friend Heartfree, at a time when the common herd of friends would have forſaken and avoided him. He entered the room with a chearful air, which he preſently changed into ſurprize on ſeeing his friend in a night-gown, and with his wounded head bound about with linen, and looking extremely pale from a great effuſion of blood. When Wild was informed by Heartfree what had happened, he firſt expreſſed great ſorrow, and afterwards ſuffered as violent agonies of rage againſt the robbers to burſt from him. Heartfree, in compaſſion to the deep impreſſions his misfortune ſeemed to make on his friend, endea-

endeavoured to leſſen it as much as poſſible, at the ſame time exaggerating the obligation he owed to Wild, in which his wife likewiſe ſeconded him; and they breakfaſted with more comfort than was reaſonably to be expected after ſuch an accident; Heartfree expreſſing great ſatisfaction that he had put the Count's note in another pocket-book, adding that ſuch a loſs would have been fatal to him; "for, to confeſs "the truth to you, my dear friend, ſaid he, I have "had ſome loſſes lately which have greatly perplexed "my affairs; and though I have many debts due to "me from people of great faſhion, I aſſure you I "know not where to be certain of getting a ſhilling." Wild greatly felicitated him on the lucky accident of preſerving his note, and then proceeded, with much acrimony, to inveigh againſt the barbarity of people of faſhion, who kept tradeſmen out of their money.

WHILE they amuſed themſelves with diſcourſes of this kind, Wild, meditating within himſelf whether he ſhould borrow or ſteal from his friend, or indeed whether he could not effect both, the apprentice brought a bank-note of 500 l. in to Heartfree, which, he ſaid, a gentlewoman in the ſhop, who had been looking at ſome jewels, deſired him to exchange. Heartfree looking at the number, immediately recollected it to be one of thoſe he had been robbed of. With this diſcovery he acquainted Wild, who, with the notable preſence of mind, and unchanged complexion, ſo eſſential to a great character, adviſed him to proceed cautiouſly; and offered (as Mr. Heartfree himſelf was, he ſaid, too much fluſtered to examine the woman with ſufficient art) to take her into a room in his houſe alone. He would, he ſaid, perſonate the maſter of the ſhop, would pretend to ſhew her ſome jewels, and would undertake to get ſufficient information out of her to ſecure the rogues, and moſt probably all their booty. This propoſal was readily and thankfully accepted by Heartfree. Wild went immediately up ſtairs into the room appointed, whither the apprentice, according to appointment, conducted the lady.

THE apprentice was ordered down ſtairs the moment the lady entered the room; and Wild, having

ſhut

ſhut the door, approached her with great ferocity in his looks, and began to expatiate on the complicated baſeneſs of the crime ſhe had been guilty of; but though he uttered many good leſſons of morality, as we doubt whether from a particular reaſon they may work any very good effect on our reader, we ſhall omit his ſpeech, and only mention his concluſion, which was by aſking her, what mercy ſhe could now expect from him? Miſs Straddle, for that was the young lady, who had had a good enducation, and had been more than once preſent at the Old Bailey, very confidently denied the whole charge, and ſaid ſhe had received the note from a friend. Wild then raiſing his voice, told her, ſhe ſhould be immediately committed, and ſhe might depend on being convicted; "but, added he, changing his tone, as I have a "violent affection for thee, my dear Straddle, if you "will follow my advice, I promiſe you on my honour, "to forgive you, nor ſhall you be ever called in queſ-"tion on this account. Why, what would you have "me to do, Mr. Wild, replied the young lady, with "a pleaſanter aſpect. You muſt know then, ſaid "Wild, the money you picked out of my pocket "(nay, by G—d you did, and if you offer to flinch, "you ſhall be convicted of it) I won at play of a "fellow who, it ſeems, robbed my friend of it; you "muſt, therefore, give an information on oath againſt "one Thomas Fierce, and ſay, that you received the "note from him, and leave the reſt to me. I am cer-"tain, Molly, you muſt be ſenſible of your obligati-"ons to me, who return good for evil to you in this "manner." The lady readily conſented: and advanced to embrace Mr. Wild, who ſtept a little back, and cry'd: "Hold, Molly; there are two "other notes of 200l. each to be accounted for, "where are they?" The lady proteſted with the moſt ſolemn aſſeverations that ſhe knew of no more; with which, when Wild was not ſatisfied, ſhe cry'd: "I will ſtand ſearch." "That you ſhall anſwered "Wild, and ſtand ſtrip too:" he then proceeded to tumble and ſearch her, but to no purpoſe, till at laſt ſhe burſt into tears, and declared ſhe would tell the truth

(as

(as indeed she did;) she then confessed that she had disposed of the one to Jack Swagger, a great favourite of the ladies, being an Irish gentleman, who had been bred clerk to an attorney, afterwards whipt out of a regiment of dragoons, and was then a Newgate-solicitor, and a bawdy-house bully; and as for the other, she had laid it all out that very morning in brocaded-silks, and Flanders-lace. With this account Wild, who indeed knew it to be a very probable one, was forced to be contented; and now abandoning all further thoughts of what he saw was irretrievably lost, he gave the lady some further instructions, aud then, desiring her to stay a few minutes behind him, he returned to his friend, and acquainted him that he had discovered the whole roguery; that the woman had confessed from whom she had received the note, and promised to give an information before a justice of peace; adding, he was concerned he could not attend him thither, being obliged to go to the other end of the town to receive thirty pounds, which he was to pay that evening. Heartfree said that should not prevent him of his company, for he could easily lend him such a trifle. This was accordingly done and accepted, and Wild, Heartfree, and the lady went to the justice together.

The warrant being granted, and the constable being acquainted by the lady, who received her information from Wild of Mr. Fierce's haunts, he was easily apprehended, and, being confronted with Miss Straddle, who swore positively to him, though she had never seen him before; he was committed to Newgate, where he immediately conveyed an information to Wild of what had happened, and in the evening received a visit from him.

Wild affected great concern for his friend's misfortune, and as great surprize at the means by which it was brought about. However, he told Fierce that he must certainly be mistaken in that point, of his having had no acquaintance with Miss Straddle; but added, that he would find her out, and endeavour to take off her evidence; which, he observed, did not come home enough to endanger him; besides, he would secure him witnesses of an *Alibi*, and five or

six

fix to his character; ſo that he need be under no apprehenſion, for his confinement till the ſeſſions would be his only puniſhment.

FIERCE, who was greatly comforted by theſe aſſurances of his friend, returned him many thanks, and both ſhaking each other very earneſtly by the hand, with a very hearty embrace they ſeparated.

THE hero conſidered with himſelf that the ſingle evidence of Miſs Straddle would not be ſufficient to convict Fierce, whom he reſolved to hang, as he was the perſon who had principally refuſed to deliver him the ſtipulated ſhare of the booty; he therefore went in queſt of Mr. James Sly, the gentleman who had aſſiſted in the exploit, and found, and acquainted him with the apprehending of Fierce. Wild then intimating his fear, leſt Fierce ſhould impeach Sly, adviſed him to be beforehand, to ſurrender himſelf to a juſtice of peace, and offer himſelf as an evidence. Sly approved Mr. Wild's opinion, went directly to a magiſtrate, and was by him committed to the Gate-houſe, with a promiſe of being admitted evidence againſt his companion.

FIERCE was, in a few days, brought to his trial at the Old Bailey, where, to his great confuſion, his old friend Sly appeared againſt him, as did Miſs Straddle. His only hopes were now in the aſſiſtances which our hero had promiſed him. Theſe unhappily failed him: ſo that the evidence being plain againſt him, and he making no defence, the jury convicted him, the court condemned him, and Mr. Ketch executed him.

WITH ſuch infinite addreſs did this truly great man know how to play with the paſſions of men, to ſet them at variance with each other, and to work his own purpoſes out of thoſe jealouſies and apprehenſions, which he was wonderfully ready at creating by means of thoſe great arts, which the vulgar call treachery, diſſembling, promiſing, lying, falſhood, &c. but which are by great men ſummed up in the collective name of policy, or politics, or rather politrics; an art of which, as it is the higheſt excellence of human nature, perhaps our great man was the moſt eminent maſter.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

Of Hats.

WILD had now got together a very conſiderable gang, compoſed of undone gameſters, ruined bailiffs, broken tradeſmen, idle apprentices, attornies clerks, and looſe and diſorderly youth, who being born to no fortune, nor bred to any trade or profeſſion, were willing to live luxuriouſly without labour. As theſe perſons wore different *Principles*, i. e. *Hats*, frequent diſſentions grew among them. There were particularly two parties, *viz.* thoſe who wore hats *fiercely* cocked, and thoſe who preferr'd the *Nab* or trencher hat, with the brim flapping over their eyes. The former were called *Cavaliers* and *Tory Rory Ranter Boys*, &c. The latter went by the ſeveral names of *Wags*, Round-heads, Shake-Bags, Old-Nolls, and ſeveral others. Between theſe, continual jars aroſe; inſomuch, that they grew in time to think there was ſomething eſſential in their difference, and that their intereſts were incompatible, with each other, whereas, in truth, the difference lay only in the faſhion of their hats. Wild therefore, having aſſembled them all at an ale-houſe on the night after Fierce's execution, and perceiving evident marks of their miſunderſtanding, from their behaviour to each other, addreſſed them in the following gentle, but forcible manner *. "Gentlemen,

* There is ſomething very myſterious in this ſpeech, which probably that chapter written by Ariſtotle on this ſubject, which is mentioned by a French author, might have given ſome light into; but that is unhappily among the loſt works of that philoſopher. It is remarkable, that *Galerus*, which is Latin for a Hat, ſignifies likewiſe a dog-fiſh, as the Greek word Κυνέη doth the Skin of that Animal; of which I ſuppoſe the hats or helmets of the ancients were compoſed, as ours at preſent are of the beaver or rabbit. Sophocles, in the latter end of his Ajax, alludes to a method of cheating in hats, and the ſcholiaſt on the place tells us of one Crephontes, who was a maſter of the art. It is obſervable likewiſe, that Achilles, in the firſt Iliad of Homer, tells Agamemnon, in anger, that he had dog's eyes. Now, as the eyes of a dog are handſomer than thoſe of almoſt any other animal; this could

" tlemen, I am aſhamed to ſee men embarked in ſo " great and glorious an undertaking, as that of rob- " bing the public, ſo fooliſhly and weakly diſſenting " among themſelves. Do you think the firſt inven- " tors of hats, or at leaſt of the diſtinctions between " them, really conceived that one form of hats ſhould " inſpire a man with divinity, another with law, ano- " ther with learning, or another with bravery? No, " they meant no more by theſe outward ſigns, than " to impoſe on the vulgar, and inſtead of putting " great men to the trouble of acquiring or maintain- " ing the ſubſtance, to make it ſufficient that they " condeſcend to wear the type or ſhadow of it. " You do wiſely, therefore, when in a crowd, to " amuſe the mob by quarrels on ſuch accounts, that " while they are liſtening to your jargon, you may, " with the greater eaſe and ſafety, pick their pockets: " but ſurely to be in earneſt, and privately to keep " up ſuch a ridiculous contention among yourſelves, " muſt argue the higheſt folly and abſurdity. When " you know you are all *Prigs*, what difference can a " broad or a narrow brim create? Is a *Prig* leſs a *Prig* " in one hat than in another? If the public ſhould be " weak enough to intereſt themſelves in your quarrels, " and to prefer one pack to the other, while both " are aiming at their purſes; it is your buſineſs to " laugh at, not imitate their folly. What can be " more ridiculous than for gentlemen to quarrel about " hats, when there is not one among you, whoſe hat " is worth a farthing. What is the uſe of a hat, " farther than to keep the head warm, or to hide a " bald crown from the public? It is the mark of a " gentleman to move his hat on every occaſion; and " in courts and noble aſſemblies, no man ever wears " one.

could be no term of reproach. He muſt therefore mean that he had a hat on, which, perhaps, from the creature it was made of, or from ſome other reaſon, might have been a mark of infamy. This ſuperſtitious opinion may account for that cuſtom, which hath deſcended through all nations, of ſhewing reſpect by pulling off this covering; and that no man is eſteemed fit to converſe with his ſuperiors with it on. I ſhall conclude this learned note, with remarking, *that the term* Old Hat, is at preſent uſed by the vulgar, *in no very honourable ſenſe.*

" one. Let me hear no more therefore of this childiſh " diſagreement, but all toſs up your hats together " with one accord, and conſider that hat as the beſt, " which will contain the largeſt booty." He thus ended his ſpeech, which was followed by a murmuring applauſe, and immediately all preſent toſſed their hats together as he had commanded them.

CHAP. VII.

Shewing the conſequence which attended Heartfree's *adventures with* Wild; *all natural, and common enough to little wretches who deal with* Great Men; *together with ſome precedents of letters, being the different methods of anſwering a dun.*

LET us now return to Heartfree, to whom the Count's note, which he had paid away, was returned, with an account that the drawer was not to be found; and that, on enquiry after him, they had heard he was run away, and conſequently the money was now demanded of the indorſer. The apprehenſion of ſuch a loſs would have affected any man of buſineſs, but much more one whoſe unuvoidable ruin it muſt prove. He expreſſed ſo much concern and confuſion on this occaſion, that the proprietor of the note was frightened, and reſolved to loſe no time in ſecuring what he could. So that, in the afternoon of the ſame day, Mr. Snap was commiſſioned to pay Heartfree a viſit, which he did with his uſual formality, and conveyed him to his own houſe.

MRS. Heartfree was no ſooner informed of what had happened to her huſband, than ſhe raved like one diſtracted; but after ſhe had vented the firſt agonies of her paſſion in tears and lamentations, ſhe applied herſelf to all poſſible means to procure her huſband's liberty. She haſtened to beg her neighbours to ſecure bail for him. But as the news had arrived at their houſes before her, ſhe found none of them at home, except an honeſt Quaker, whoſe ſervants durſt not tell a lie. However, ſhe ſucceeded no better with him, for unluckily he had made an affirmation the *day before*, that he would never be bail for any man.

After many fruitleſs efforts of this kind, ſhe repaired to her huſband to comfort him, at leaſt with her preſence. She found him ſealing the laſt of ſeveral letters, which he was diſpatching to his friends and creditors. The moment he ſaw her, a ſudden joy ſparkled in his eyes, which, however, had a very ſhort duration; for deſpair ſoon cloſed them again: nor could he help burſting into ſome paſſionate expreſſions of concern for her and his little family; which ſhe, on her part, did her utmoſt to leſſen, by endeavouring to mitigate the loſs, and to raiſe in him hopes from the Count, who might, ſhe ſaid, be poſſibly only gone into the country. She comforted him likewiſe, with the expectation of favour from his acquaintance, eſpecially from thoſe whom he had in a particular manner obliged and ſerved. Laſtly, ſhe conjured him, by all the value and eſteem he profeſſed for her, not to endanger his health, on which alone depended her happineſs, by too great an indulgence of grief; aſſuring him that no ſtate of life could appear unhappy to her with him, unleſs his own ſorrow or diſcontent made it ſo.

In this manner did this weak, poor-ſpirited woman attempt to relieve her huſband's pains, which it would have rather become her to aggravate, by not only painting out his miſery in the livelieſt colours imaginable, but by upbraiding him with that folly and confidence which had occaſioned it, and by lamenting her own hard fate, in being obliged to ſhare his ſufferings.

Heartfree returned this goodneſs (as it is called) of his wife, with the warmeſt gratitude, and they paſſed an hour in a ſcene of tenderneſs, too low and contemptible to be recounted to our great readers. We ſhall therefore omit all ſuch relations, as they tend only to make human nature low and ridiculous.

Thoſe meſſengers who had obtained any anſwers to his letters now returned. We ſhall here copy a few of them, as they may ſerve for precedents to others who have an occaſion, which happens commonly enough in genteel life, to anſwer the impertinence of a dun.

LETTER I.

MR. HEARTFREE,

MY Lord commands me to tell you, he is very much ſurprized at your aſſurance in aſking for money, which you know hath been ſo little while due; however, as he intends to deal no longer at your ſhop, he hath ordered me to pay you as ſoon as I ſhall have caſh in hand, which, conſidering many diſburſements for bills long due, &c. can't poſſibly promiſe any time, &c. at preſent. And am

Your humble ſervant,

ROGER MORECRAFT.

LETTER II.

DEAR SIR,

THE money, as you truly ſay, hath been three years due, but upon my ſoul I am at preſent incapable of paying a farthing; but as I doubt not, very ſhortly, not only to content that ſmall bill, but likewiſe to lay out very conſiderable further ſums at your houſe, hope you will meet with no inconvenience by this ſhort delay in, dear Sir,

Your moſt ſincere

humble ſervant,

CHA. COURTLY.

LETTER III.

MR. HEARTFREE,

I BEG you would not acquaint my huſband of the trifling debt between us; for, as I know you to be a very good-natured man, I will truſt you with a ſecret. He gave me the money long ſince to diſcharge it, which I had the ill luck to loſe at play. You may be aſſured I will ſatisfy you the firſt opportunity, and am, Sir,

Your very humble ſervant,

CATH. RUBBERS.

Pleaſe to preſent my compliments to Mrs. Heart-

LETTER

LETTER IV.

MR. THOMAS HEARTFREE, SIR,

YOURS received; but as to ſum mentioned therein, doth not ſuit at preſent

Your humble ſervant,

PETER POUNCE.

LETTER V.

SIR,

I AM ſincerely ſorry it is not at preſent poſſible for me to comply with your requeſt, eſpecially after ſo many obligations received on my ſide, of which I ſhall always entertain the moſt grateful memory. I am very greatly concerned at your misfortunes, and would have waited upon you in perſon, but am not at preſent very well, and, beſides, am obliged to go this evening to Vauxhall. I am, Sir,

Your moſt obliged humble ſervant,

CHA. EASY.

P. S. I hope good Mrs. Heartfree and the dear little ones are well.

THERE were more letters to much the ſame purpoſe; but we propoſed giving our reader a taſte only. Of all theſe, the laſt was infinitely the moſt grating to poor Heartfree, as it came from one to whom, when in diſtreſs, he had himſelf lent a conſiderable ſum, and of whoſe preſent flouriſhing circumſtances he was well aſſured.

CHAP VIII.

In which our hero carries GREATNESS *to an immoderate height.*

LET us remove, therefore, as faſt as we can, this deteſtable picture of ingratitude, and preſent the much more agreeable portrait of that aſſurance to which the French very properly annex the epithet of Good. Heartfree had ſcarce done reading his letters, when our hero appeared before his eyes; not

with that aſpect with which a pitiful parſon meets his patron, after having oppoſed him at an election, or which a doctor wears, when ſneaking away from a door, where he is informed of his patient's death; not with that down-caſt countenance which betrays the man, who, after a ſtrong conflict between virtue and vice, hath ſurrendered his mind to the latter, and is diſcovered in his firſt treachery; but with that noble, bold, great confidence with which a prime miniſter aſſures his dependent, that the place he promiſed him was diſpoſed of before. And ſuch concern and uneaſineſs as he expreſſes in his looks on thoſe occaſions, did Wild teſtify on the firſt meeting of his friend. And as the ſaid prime miniſter chides you for neglect of your intereſt, in not having aſked in time, ſo did our hero attack Heartfree for his giving credit to the Count; and, without ſuffering him to make any anſwer, proceeded in a torrent of words to overwhelm him with abuſe; which, however friendly its intention might be, was ſcarce to be outdone by an enemy. By theſe means Heartfree, who might perhaps otherwiſe have vented ſome little concern for that recommendation which Wild had given him to the Count, was totally prevented from any ſuch endeavour, and like an invading prince, when attacked in his own dominions, forced to recal his whole ſtrength to defend himſelf at home. This indeed he did ſo well, by inſiſting on the figure and outward appearance of the Count and his equipage, that Wild at length grew a little more gentle, and with a ſigh ſaid, "I confeſs "I have the leaſt reaſon of all mankind to cenſure "another for an imprudence of this nature, as I am my-"ſelf the moſt eaſy to be impoſed upon, and indeed "have been ſo by this Count, who, if he be inſol-"vent, hath cheated me of five hundred pounds. "But, for my own part, ſaid he, I will not yet de-"ſpair, nor would I have you. Many men have found "it convenient to retire, or abſcond for a while, and "afterwards have paid their debts, or at leaſt hand-"ſomely compounded them. This I am certain of, "ſhould a compoſition take place, which is the worſt "I think that can be apprehended, I ſhall be the

"only

" only loſer; for I ſhall think myſelf obliged in ho-
" nour to repair your loſs, even though you muſt
" confeſs it was principally owing to your own folly.
" Z—ds! had I imagined it neceſſary, I would have
" cautioned you; but I thought the part of the town
" where he lived, ſufficient caution not to truſt him.—
" And ſuch a ſum!——The devil muſt have been in
" you certainly!"

THIS was a degree of impudence beyond poor Mrs. Heartfree's imagination. Tho' ſhe had before vented the moſt violent execrations on Wild, ſhe was now thoroughly ſatisfied of his innocence, and begged him not to inſiſt any longer on what he perceived ſo deeply affected her huſband. She ſaid, trade could not be carried on without credit, and ſurely he was ſufficiently juſtified in giving it to ſuch a perſon as the Count appeared to be. Beſides, ſhe ſaid, reflections on what was paſt and irretriveable would be of little ſervice; that their preſent buſineſs was to conſider how to prevent the evil conſequences which threatened, and firſt to endeavour to procure her huſband his liberty. Why doth he not procure bail? ſaid Wild. Alas! Sir, ſaid ſhe, we have applied to many of our acquaintance in vain; we have met with excuſes even where we could leaſt expect them. " Not bail! anſwered " Wild, in a paſſion, he ſhall have bail, if there is " any in the world. It is now very late, but truſt " me to procure him bail to-morrow morning."

MRS. Heartfree received theſe profeſſions with tears, and told Wild he was a friend indeed. She then propoſed to ſtay that evening with her huſband; but he would not permit her, on account of his little family, whom he would not agree to truſt to the care of ſervants in this time of confuſion.

A HACKNEY coach was then ſent for, but without ſucceſs; for theſe, like hackney friends, always offer themſelves in the ſun-ſhine, but are never to be found when you want them. And as for a chair, Mr. Snap lived in a part of the town which chairmen very little frequent. The good woman was therefore obliged to walk home, whether the gallant Wild offered to attend her as a protector. This favour was thankfully accepted, and

the huſband and wife having taken a tender leave of each other, the former was locked in, and the latter locked out by the hands of Mr. Snap himſelf.

As this viſit of Mr. Wild's to Heartfree may ſeem one of thoſe paſſages in hiſtory, which writers, Drawcanſir like, introduce, only *becauſe they dare*; indeed as it may ſeem ſomewhat contradictory to the greatneſs of our hero, and may tend to blemiſh his character with an imputation of that kind of friendſhip, which ſavours too much of weakneſs and imprudence; it may be neceſſary to account for this viſit, eſpecially to our more ſagacious readers, whoſe ſatisfaction we ſhall always conſult in the moſt eſpecial manner. They are to know then, that at the firſt interview with Mrs. Heartfree, Mr. Wild had conceived that paſſion, or affection, or friendſhip, or deſire, for that handſome creature, which the gentlemen of this our age agree to call LOVE; and which is indeed no other than that kind of affection which, after the exerciſe of the dominical day is over, a luſty divine is apt to conceive for the well-dreſt ſirloin or handſome buttock, which the well-edified 'ſquire in gratitude ſets before him, and which, ſo violent is his love, he devours in imagination the moment he ſees it. Not leſs ardent was the hungry paſſion of our hero, who, from the moment he had caſt his eyes on that charming diſh, had caſt about in his mind by what method he might come at it. This, as he perceived, might moſt eaſily be effected after the ruin of Heartfree, which, for other conſiderations, he had intended. So he poſtponed all endeavours for this purpoſe, till he had firſt effected what, by order of time, was regularly to precede this latter deſign: with ſuch regularity did this our hero conduct all his ſchemes, and ſo truly ſuperior was he to all the efforts of paſſion, which ſo often diſconcert and diſappoint the nobleſt views of others.

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

More GREATNESS *in* Wild. *A low ſcene between Mrs.* Heartfree *and her children, and a ſcheme of our hero, worthy the higheſt admiration, and even aſtoniſhment.*

WHEN firſt Wild conducted his flame (or rather his diſh, to continue our metaphor) from the proprietor, he had projected a deſign of conveying her to one of thoſe eating-houſes in Covent-Garden, where female fleſh is deliciouſly dreſt, and ſerved up to the greedy appetites of young gentlemen; but fearing leſt he ſhould not come readily enough into his wiſhes, and that, by too eager and haſty a purſuit, he ſhould fruſtrate his future expectations, and luckily at the ſame time a noble hint ſuggeſting itſelf to him, by which he might almoſt inevitably ſecure his pleaſure, together with his profit, he contented himſelf with waiting on Mrs. Heartfree home, and after many proteſtations of friendſhip and ſervice to her huſband, took his leave, and promiſed to viſit her early in the morning, and to conduct her back to Mr. Snap's.

WILD now retired to a night-cellar, where he found ſeveral of his acquaintance, with whom he ſpent the remaining part of the night in revelling; nor did the leaſt compaſſion for Heartfree's misfortunes diſturb the pleaſure of his cups. So truly great was his ſoul, that it was abſolutely compoſed, ſave that an apprehenſion of Miſs Tiſhy's making ſome diſcovery (as ſhe was then in no good temper towards him) a little ruffled and diſquieted the perfect ſerenity he would otherwiſe have enjoyed. As he had, therefore, no opportunity of ſeeing her that evening, he wrote her a letter full of ten thouſand proteſtations of honourable love, and (which he more depended on) containing as many promiſes, in order to bring the young lady into good humour, without acquainting her in the leaſt with his ſuſpicion, or giving her any caution: for it was his conſtant maxim, never to put it into any one's head to do you a miſchief, by acquainting him that it is in his own power.

We muſt now return to Mrs, Heartfree, who paſſed a ſleepleſs night in as great agonies and horror for the abſence of her huſband, as a fine well-bred woman would feel at the return of her's from a long voyage or journey. In the morning the children being brought to her, the eldeſt aſked, *where dear Papa was?* At which ſhe could not refrain from burſting into tears. The child perceiving it, ſaid, *Don't cry, Mamma, I am ſure Papa would not ſtay abroad if he could help it.* At theſe words ſhe caught the child in her arms, and throwing herſelf into the chair, in an agony of paſſion, cried out, *No, my child, nor ſhall all the malice of hell keep us long aſunder.*

These are circumſtances which we ſhould not, for the amuſement of ſix or ſeven readers only, have inſerted, had they not ſerved to ſhew, that there are weakneſſes in vulgar life, to which great minds are ſo entirely ſtrangers, that they have not even an idea of them; and, ſecondly, by expoſing the folly of this low creature, to ſet off and elevate that greatneſs, of which we endeavour to draw a true portrait in this hiſtory.

Wild entering the room, found the mother with one child in her arms, and the other at her knee. After paying her his compliments, he deſired her to diſmiſs the children and ſervant, for that he had ſomething of the greateſt moment to impart to her.

She immediately complied with his requeſt, and, the door being ſhut, aſked him with great eagarneſs if he had ſucceeded in his intentions of procuring the bail. He anſwered he had not endeavoured at it yet; for a ſcheme had entered into his head, by which ſhe might certainly preſerve her huſband, herſelf, and her family. In order to which he adviſed her inſtantly to remove with the moſt valuable jewels ſhe had to Holland, before any ſtatute of bankruptcy iſſued to prevent her; that he would himſelf attend her thither, and place her in ſafety, and then return to deliver her huſband, who would be thus eaſily able to ſatisfy his creditors. He added, that he was that inſtant come from Mr. Snap's, where he had communicated the *ſcheme to Heartfree*, who had greatly approved of it, and

and desired her to put it in execution without delay, concluding that a moment was not to be lost.

THE mention of her husband's approbation left no doubt in this poor woman's breast; she only desired a moment's time to pay him a visit, in order to take her leave. But Wild peremptorily refused; he said by every moment's delay she risqued the ruin of her family; that she would be absent only a few days from him, for that the moment he had lodged her safe in Holland, he would return, procure her husband his liberty, and bring him to her. I have been the unfortunate, the innocent cause of all my dear Tom's calamity, Madam, said he; and I will perish with him, or see him out of it. Mrs. Heartfree overflowed with acknowledgments of his goodness; but still begged for the shortest interview with her husband. Wild declared, that a minute's delay might be fatal; and added, tho' with the voice of sorrow rather than of anger, that if she had not resolution enough to execute the commands he brought her from her husband, his ruin would lie at her door; and, for his own part, he must give up any farther meddling in his affairs.

SHE then proposed to take her children with her: but Wild would not permit it, saying, they would only retard their flight, and that it would be properer for her husband to bring them. He at length absolutely prevailed on this poor woman, who immediately packed up the most valuable effects she could find, and after taking a tender leave of her infants, earnestly commended them to the care of a very faithful servant. Then they called a hackney coach, which conveyed them to an inn, where they were furnished with a chariot and six, in which they set forward for Harwich.

WILD rode with an exulting heart; secure, as he now thought himself, of the possession of that lovely woman, together with a rich cargo. In short, he enjoyed in his mind all the happiness which unbridled lust and rapacious avarice could promise him. As to the poor creature, who was to satisfy these passions, her whole soul was employed in reflecting on the condition of her husband and children. A single word

ſcarce eſcaped her lips, tho' many a tear guſhed from her brilliant eyes, which, if I may uſe a coarſe expreſſion, ſerved only as delicious ſauce to heighten the appetite of Wild.

CHAP. X.

Sea-adventures very new and ſurpriſing.

WHEN they arrived at Harwich, they found a veſſel, which had put in there, juſt ready to depart for Rotterdam. So they went immediately on board, and ſailed with a fair wind; but they had hardly proceeded out of ſight of land, when a ſudden and violent ſtorm aroſe, and drove them to the South-Weſt; inſomuch that the captain apprehended it impoſſible to avoid the Goodwin ſands, and he and all his crew gave themſelves for loſt. Mrs. Heartfree, who had no other apprehenſions from death, but thoſe of leaving her dear huſband and children, fell on her knees to beſeech the Almighty's favour, when Wild, with a contempt of danger truly great, took a reſolution as worthy to be admired perhaps as any recorded of the braveſt hero, ancient or modern; a reſolution, which plainly proved him to have theſe two qualifications ſo neceſſary to a hero, to be ſuperior to all the energies of fear or pity. He ſaw the tyrant Death ready to reſcue from him his intended prey, which he had yet devoured only in imagination. He therefore ſwore he would prevent him, and immediately attacked the poor wretch, who was in the utmoſt agonies of deſpair, firſt with ſolicitation, and afterwards with force.

MRS. Heartfree, the moment ſhe underſtood his meaning, which, in her preſent temper of mind, and in the opinion ſhe held of him, ſhe did not immediately, rejected him with all the repulſes which indignation and horror could animate: but when he attempted violence, ſhe filled the cabbin with her ſhrieks, which were ſo vehement, that they reached the ears of the captain, the ſtorm at this time luckily abating. This man, who was a brute, rather from his education, and the element he inhabited, than from nature,

nature, ran haſtily down to her aſſiſtance, and finding her ſtruggling on the ground with our hero, he preſently reſcued her from her intended raviſher; who was ſoon obliged to quit the woman, in order to engage with her luſty champion, who ſpared neither pains nor blows in the aſſiſtance of his fair paſſenger.

When the ſhort battle was over, in which our hero, had he not been overpowered with numbers, who came down on their captain's ſide, would have been victorious; the captain rapped out a hearty oath, and aſked Wild, *If he had no more chriſtianity in him than to raviſh a woman in a ſtorm?* To which the other greatly and ſullenly anſwered: "It was very well; but "d—n him if he had not ſatisfaction the moment they "came on ſhore." The captain with great ſcorn replied, *Kiſs*——&c. and then forcing Wild out of the cabbin, he, at Mrs. Heartfree's requeſt, locked her into it, and returned to the care of his ſhip.

The ſtorm was now entirely ceaſed, and nothing remained but the uſual ruffling of the ſea after it, when one of the ſailors ſpied a ſail at a diſtance, which the captain wiſely apprehended might be a privateer (for we were then engaged in a war with France) and immediately ordered all the ſail poſſible to be crowded; but his caution was in vain; for the little wind which then blew, was directly adverſe; ſo that the ſhip bore down upon them, and ſoon appeared to be what the captain had feared, a French Privateer. He was in no condition of reſiſtance, and immediately ſtruck on her firing the firſt gun. The Captain of the Frenchman, with ſeveral of his hands, came on board the Engliſh veſſel; which they rifled of every thing valuable, and, amongſt the reſt, of poor Mrs. Heartfree's whole cargo; and then taking the crew, together with the two paſſengers, aboard his own ſhip, he determined, as the other would be only a burthen to him, to ſink her, ſhe being very old and leaky, and not worth going back with to Dunkirk. He preſerved, therefore, nothing but the boat, as his own was none of the beſt, and then pouring a broad-ſide into her, he ſent her to the bottom.

The French captain, who was a very young fellow, and a man of gallantry, was preſently enamoured to no ſmall degree with his beautiful captive; and imagining Wild, from ſome words he dropt, to be her huſband, notwithſtanding the ill affection towards him which appeared in her looks, he aſked her, if ſhe underſtood French? She anſwered in the affirmative, for indeed ſhe did perfectly well. He then aſked her, how long ſhe and that gentleman (pointing to Wild) had been married? She anſwered with a deep ſigh, and many tears, that ſhe was married indeed, but not to that villain, who was the ſole cauſe of all her misfortunes. That appellation raiſed a curioſity in the captain, and he importuned her in ſo preſſing, but gentle a manner, to acquaint him with the injuries ſhe complained of, that ſhe was at laſt prevailed on to recount to him the whole hiſtory of her afflictions. This ſo moved the captain, who had too little notions of greatneſs, and ſo incenſed him againſt our hero, that he reſolved to puniſh him; and, without regard to the laws of war, he immediately ordered out his ſhattered boat, and, making Wild a preſent of half-a-dozen biſcuits to prolong his miſery, he put him therein, and then committing him to the mercy of the ſea, proceeded on his cruize.

CHAP. XI.

The great and wonderful behaviour of our Hero in the boat.

IT is probable, that a deſire of ingratiating himſelf with his charming captive, or rather conqueror, had no little ſhare in promoting this extraordinary act of illegal juſtice; for the Frenchman had conceived the ſame ſort of paſſion, or hunger, which Wild himſelf had felt, and was almoſt as much reſolved, by ſome means or other, to ſatisfy it. We will leave him, however, at preſent, in the purſuit of his wiſhes, and attend our hero in his boat; ſince it is in circumſtances of diſtreſs that true greatneſs appears moſt wonderful. For, that a prince in the midſt of his courtiers, all ready to compliment him with his favourite cha-

racter,

racter, or title, and indeed, with every thing elſe; or that a conqueror, at the head of an hundred thouſand men, all prepared to execute his will, how ambitious, wanton, or cruel ſoever, ſhould, in the giddineſs of their pride, elevate themſelves many degrees above thoſe their tools, ſeems not difficult to be imagined, or indeed accounted for. But that a man in chains, in priſon, nay, in the vileſt dungeon, ſhould with perſevering pride, and obſtinate dignity, diſcover that vaſt ſuperiority in his own nature over the reſt of mankind, who to a vulgar eye ſeem much happier than himſelf; nay, that he ſhould diſcover heaven and providence (whoſe peculiar care, it ſeems, he is) at that very time at work for him; this is among the arcana of greatneſs, to be perfectly underſtood only by an adept in that ſcience.

What could be imagined more miſerable than the ſituation of our hero at this ſeaſon, floating in a little boat on the open ſeas, without oar, without ſail, and at the mercy of the firſt wave to overwhelm him? nay, this was indeed the fair ſide of his fortune, as it was a much more eligible fate than that alternative, which threatened him with almoſt unavoidable certainty, viz. ſtarving with hunger, the ſure conſequence of a continuance of the calm.

Our hero finding himſelf in this condition, began to ejaculate a round of blaſphemies, which the reader, without being over pious, might be offended at ſeeing repeated. He then accuſed the whole female ſex, and the paſſion of love (as he called it) particularly that which he bore to Mrs. Heartfree, as the unhappy occaſion of his preſent ſufferings. At length, finding himſelf deſcending too much into the language of meanneſs and complaint, he ſtopp'd ſhort, and ſoon after broke forth as follows. "D——n it, a man can die "but once, what ſignifies it! every man muſt die, "when it is over it is over. I never was afraid of "any thing yet, nor I won't begin now; no, d——n "me, won't I. What ſignifies fear? I ſhall die whe-"ther I am afraid or no: Who's afraid then, d——n "me?" At which words he looked extremely fierce, but recollecting that no one was preſent to ſee him, he

he relaxed a little the terror of his countenance, and pauſing a while, repeated the word, d——n! "Suppoſe I ſhould be d—ned at laſt, cries he, when I never thought a ſyllable of the matter! I have often laughed and made a jeſt about it, and yet it may be ſo, for any thing which I know to the contrary. If there ſhould be another world, it will go hard with me, that is certain. I ſhall never eſcape for what I have done to Heartfree. The devil muſt have me for that undoubtedly. The devil! Pſhaw! I am not ſuch a fool to be frighten'd at him neither. No, no; when a man's dead, there's an end of him. I wiſh I was certainly ſatisfied of it tho'; for there are ſome men of learning, as I have heard, of a different opinion. It is but a bad chance, methinks, I ſtand. If there be no other world, why I ſhall be in no worſe condition than a block or a ſtone: But if there ſhould. —— d——n me, I will think no longer about it.—Let a pack of cowardly raſcals be afraid of death, I dare look him in the face. But ſhall I ſtay and be ſtarved!—No, I will eat up the biſcuits the French ſon of a whore beſtowed on me, and then leap into the ſea for drink, ſince the unconſcionable dog hath not allowed me a ſingle dram." Having thus ſaid, he proceeded immediately to put his purpoſe in execution, and as his reſolution never failed him, he had no ſooner diſpatched the ſmall quantity of proviſion, which his enemy had with ſo vaſt liberality preſented him, than he caſt himſelf headlong into the ſea.

CHAP. XII.

The ſtrange and yet natural eſcape of our Hero.

OUR hero having with wonderful reſolution thrown himſelf into the ſea, as we mentioned at the end of the laſt chapter, was miraculouſly within two minutes after replaced in his boat; and this without the aſſiſtance of a dolphin or ſea-horſe, or any other fiſh or animal, who are always as ready at hand when a poet or hiſtorian pleaſes to call for them to carry a *hero through* a ſea, as any chairman at a coffee-houſe door

door near St. James's, to convey a beau over a ſtreet, and preſerve his white ſtockings. The truth is, we do not chuſe to have any recourſe to miracles, from the ſtrict obſervance we pay to that rule of Horace,

Nec Deus interſit, niſi dignus vindice nodus.

The meaning of which is, Do not bring in a ſupernatural agent when you can do without him; and indeed, we are much deeper read in natural than ſupernatural cauſes. We will therefore endeavour to account for this extraordinary event from the former of theſe; and in doing this it will be neceſſary to diſcloſe ſome profound ſecrets to our reader, extremely well worth his knowing, and which may ſerve him to account for many occurrences of the phænomenous kind which have formerly appeared in this our hemiſphere.

Be it known then, that the great Alma Mater, nature, is of all other females the moſt obſtinate, and tenacious of her purpoſe. So true is that obſervation,

Naturam expelles furca licet, uſque recurret.

Which I need not render in Engliſh, it being to be found in a book which moſt fine gentlemen are forced to read. Whatever nature, therefore, purpoſes to herſelf, ſhe never ſuffers any reaſon, deſign or accident, to fruſtrate. Now tho' it may ſeem to a ſhallow obſerver, that ſome perſons were deſigned by nature for no uſe or purpoſe whatever; yet certain it is, that no man is born into the world without his particular allotment; viz. ſome to be kings, ſome ſtateſmen, ſome embaſſadors, ſome biſhops, ſome generals, and ſo on. Of theſe there be two kinds, thoſe to whom nature is ſo generous to give ſome endowment, qualifying them for the parts ſhe intends them afterwards to act on this ſtage; and thoſe whom ſhe uſes as inſtances of her unlimited power, and for whoſe preferment to ſuch and ſuch ſtations Solomon himſelf could have invented no other reaſon than that nature deſigned them ſo. Theſe latter ſome great philoſophers have, to ſhew them to be the favourites of nature, diſtinguiſhed by the honourable appellation of NATURALS. Indeed, the true reaſon of the general ignorance of mankind on this head ſeems to be this; That as nature chuſes

to

to execute these her purposes by certain second causes, and as many of these second causes seem so totally foreign to her design, the wit of man, which, like his eye, sees best directly forward, and very little and imperfectly what is oblique, is not able to discern the end by the means. Thus, how a handsome wife or daughter should contribute to execute her original designation of a general; or how flattery, or half a dozen houses in a borough-town, should denote a judge, or a bishop, he is not capable of comprehending. And, indeed, we ourselves, wise as we are, are forced to reason *ab effectu*, and if we had been asked what nature had intended such men for, before she herself had by the event demonstrated her purpose, it is possible we might sometimes have been puzzled to declare; for it must be confessed, that at first sight, and to a mind uninspired, a man of vast natural capacity and much acquired knowledge may seem by nature designed for power and honour, rather than one remarkable only for the want of these, and indeed all other qualifications; whereas daily experience convinces us of the contrary, and drives us as it were into the opinion I have here disclosed.

Now, nature having originally intended our great man for that final exaltation, which, as it is the most proper and becoming end of all great men, it were heartily to be wished they might all arrive at; would by no means be diverted from her purpose. She therefore no sooner spied him in the water, than she softly whispered in his ear to attempt the recovery of his boat; which call he immediately obeyed, and being a good swimmer, and it being a perfect calm, with great facility accomplished it.

THUS we think this passage in our history, at first so greatly surprising, is very naturally accounted for; and our relation rescued from the Prodigious, which, tho' it often occurs in biography, is not to be encouraged nor much commended on any occasion, unless when absolutely necessary to prevent the history's being at an end. Secondly, we hope our hero is justified from that imputation of want of resolution, which must have been fatal to the greatness of his character.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIII.

The concluſion of the boat adventure, and the end of the ſecond book.

OUR hero paſs'd the remainder of the evening, the night, and the next day, in a condition not much to be envied by any paſſion of the human mind, unleſs by ambition; which, provided it can only entertain itſelf with the moſt diſtant muſic of fame's trumpet, can diſdain all the pleaſures of the ſenſualiſt, and thoſe more ſolemn, tho' quieter comforts, which a good conſcience ſuggets to a chriſtian philoſopher.

He ſpent his time in contemplation, that is to ſay, in blaſpheming, curſing, and ſometimes ſinging and whiſtling. At laſt, when cold and hunger had almoſt ſubdued his native fierceneſs, it being a good deal paſt midnight, and extremely dark, he thought he beheld a light at a diſtance, which the cloudineſs of the ſky prevented his miſtaking for a ſtar: This light, however, did not ſeem to approach him, at leaſt it approached by ſuch imperceptible degrees, that it gave him very little comfort, and at length totally forſook him. He then renewed his contemplations as before, in which he continued till the day began to break; when to his inexpreſſible delight, he beheld a ſail at a very little diſtance, and which luckily ſeemed to be making towards him. He was likewiſe ſoon eſpied by thoſe in the veſſel, who wanted no ſignals to inform them of his diſtreſs, and as it was almoſt a calm, and their courſe lay within five hundred yards of him, they hoiſted out their boat and fetched him aboard.

The captain of this ſhip was a Frenchman; ſhe was laden with deal from Norway, and had been extremely ſhattered in the late ſtorm. This captain was of that kind of men, who are actuated by a general humanity, and whoſe compaſſion can be raiſed by the diſtreſs of a fellow-creature, though of a nation whoſe king has quarrelled with the monarch of their own. He therefore commiſerating the circumſtances of Wild, who had dreſs'd up a ſtory proper to impoſe upon ſuch a ſilly fellow; told him, that as himſelf

well

well knew, he muſt be a priſoner on his arrival in France, but that he would endeavour to procure his redemption; for which our hero greatly thanked him. But as they were making very ſlow ſail (for they had loſt their main-maſt in the ſtorm) Wild ſaw a little veſſel at a diſtance, they being within a few leagues of the Engliſh ſhore, which, on enquiry, he was informed was probably an Engliſh fiſhing-boat. And, it being then perfectly calm, he promiſed, that if they would accommodate him with a pair of ſcullers, he could get within reach of the boat, at leaſt near enough to make ſignals to her; and he preferred any riſque to the certain fate of being a priſoner. As his courage was ſomewhat reſtored by the proviſions (eſpecially brandy) with which the Frenchmen had ſupplied him, he was ſo earneſt in his entreaties, that the captain, after many perſuaſions, at length complied; and he was furniſhed with ſcullers, and with ſome bread, pork, and a bottle of brandy. Then taking leave of his preſervers, he again betook himſelf to his boat, and rowed ſo heartily, that he ſoon came within the ſight of the fiſherman, who immediately made towards him, and took him aboard.

No ſooner was Wild got ſafe on board the fiſherman, than he begged him to make the utmoſt ſpeed into Deal; for that the veſſel which was ſtill in ſight, was a diſtreſſed Frenchman, bound for Havre de Grace, and might eaſily be made a prize, if there was any ſhip ready to go in purſuit of her. So nobly and greatly did our hero neglect all obligations conferred on him by the enemies of his country, that he would have contributed all he could to the taking his benefactor, to whom he owed both his life and his liberty.

The fiſherman took his advice, and ſoon arrived at Deal, where the reader will I doubt not, be as much concerned as Wild was, that there was not a ſingle ſhip prepared to go on the expedition.

Our hero now ſaw himſelf once more ſafe on *Terra firma*; but unluckily at ſome diſtance from that city where men of ingenuity can moſt eaſily ſupply their wants without the aſſiſtance of money, or rather can *moſt eaſily* procure money for the ſupply of their wants.

wants. However, as his talents were ſuperior to every difficulty, he framed ſo dexterous an account of his being a merchant, having been taken and plundered by the enemy, and of his great effects in London, that he was not only heartily regaled by the fiſherman at his houſe; but made ſo handſome a booty by way of borrowing, a method of taking which we have before mentioned to have his approbation, that he was enabled to provide himſelf with a place in the ſtage-coach; which (as God permitted it to perform the journey) brought him, at the appointed time, to an inn in the metropolis.

And now, reader, as thou canſt be in no ſuſpenſe for the fate of our great man, ſince we have returned him ſafe to the principal ſcene of his glory, we will a little look back on the fortunes of Mr. Heartfree, whom we left in no very pleaſant ſituation; but of this we ſhall treat in the next book.

THE

THE HISTORY OF THE LIFE OF THE LATE Mr. JONATHAN WILD THE GREAT.

BOOK III.

CHAP. I.

The low and pitiful behaviour of Heartfree; and the fooliſh conduct of his apprentice.

HIS misfortunes did not entirely prevent Heartfree from cloſing his eyes. On the contrary, he ſlept ſeveral hours the firſt night of his confinement. However, he perhaps paid too ſeverely dear both for his repoſe, and for a ſweet dream which accompanied it, and repreſented his little family in one of thoſe tender ſcenes, which had frequently paſs'd in the days of his happineſs and proſperity, when the proviſion they were making for the future fortunes of their children uſed to be one of the moſt agreeable topics of diſcourſe, with which he and his wife entertained themſelves. The pleaſantneſs of this viſion, therefore, ſerved only, on his awaking, to ſet forth his preſent miſery with additional horror, and to heighten the dreadful ideas which now crowded on his mind.

HE had ſpent a conſiderable time after his firſt riſing from the bed on which he had, without undreſſing, *thrown himſelf*, and now began to wonder at Mrs. Heartfree's

Heartfree's long abſence; but as the mind is deſirous (and perhaps wiſely too) to comfort itſelf with drawing the moſt flattering concluſions from all events; ſo he hoped the longer her ſtay was, the more certain was his deliverance. At length his impatience prevailed, and he was juſt going to diſpatch a meſſenger to his own houſe, when his apprentice came to pay him a viſit, and on his enquiry, informed him, that his wife had departed in company with Mr. Wild many hours before, and had carried all his moſt valuable effects with her; adding, at the ſame time, that ſhe had herſelf poſitively acquainted him ſhe had her huſband's expreſs orders for ſo doing, and that ſhe was gone to Holland.

It is the obſervation of many wiſe men, who have ſtudied the anatomy of the human ſoul with more attention than our young phyſicians generally beſtow on that of the body, that great and violent ſurprize hath a different effect from that which is wrought in a good houſewife by perceiving any diſorders in her kitchen; who, on ſuch occaſions, commonly ſpreads the diſorder, not only over her whole family, but over the whole neighbourhood. Now, theſe great calamities, eſpecially when ſudden, tend to ſtifle and deaden all the faculties, inſtead of rouſing them; and accordingly Herodotus tells us a ſtory of Crœſus, king of Lydia, who on beholding his ſervants and courtiers led captive, wept bitterly; but when he ſaw his wife and children in that condition, ſtood ſtupid and motionleſs; ſo ſtood poor Heartfree on this relation of his apprentice, nothing moving but his colour, which entirely forſook his countenance.

The apprentice, who had not in the leaſt doubted the veracity of his miſtreſs, perceiving the ſurprize which too viſibly appeared in his maſter, became ſpeechleſs likewiſe, and both remained ſilent ſome minutes, gazing with aſtoniſhment and horror at each other. At laſt Heartfree cry'd out in an agony: "My "wife deſerted me in my misfortunes!" Heaven forbid, Sir, anſwered the other. "And what is become "of my poor children, replied Heartfree?" They are at home, Sir, ſaid the apprentice. "Heaven be "praiſed!

" praiſed! She hath forſaken them too, cries Heart-
" free: Fetch them hither this inſtant. Go, my dear
" Jack, bring hither my little all which remains now:
" Fly, child, if thou doſt not intend likewiſe to for-
" ſake me in my afflictions." The youth anſwered he would die ſooner than entertain ſuch a thought, and begging his maſter to be comforted, inſtantly obeyed his orders.

HEARTFREE, the moment the young man was departed, threw himſelf on his bed in an agony of deſpair; but, recollecting himſelf after he had vented the firſt ſallies of his paſſion, he began to queſtion the infidelity of his wife, as a matter impoſſible. He ran over in his thoughts the uninterrupted tenderneſs which ſhe had always ſhewn him, and, for a minute, blamed the raſhneſs of his belief againſt her; 'till the many circumſtances of her having left him ſo long, and neither writ nor ſent to him ſince her departure with all his effects, and with Wild, of whom he was not before without ſuſpicion; and laſtly and chiefly, her falſe pretence to his commands, entirely turned the ſcale, and convinced him of her diſloyalty.

WHILE he was in theſe agitations of mind, the good apprentice, who had uſed the utmoſt expedition, brought his children to him. He embraced them with the moſt paſſionate fondneſs, and imprinted numberleſs kiſſes on their little lips. The little girl flew to him with almoſt as much eagerneſs as he himſelf expreſſed at her ſight, and cry'd out: " O Papa, why
" did you not come home to poor mamma all this
" while; I thought you would not have left your
" little Nancy ſo long." After which he aſked her for her mother, and was told ſhe had kiſs'd them both in the morning, and cried very much for his abſence. All which brought a flood of tears into the eyes of this weak, ſilly man, who had not greatneſs ſufficient to conquer theſe low efforts of tenderneſs and humanity.

HE then proceeded to enquire of the maid-ſervant, who acquainted him, that ſhe knew no more than that her miſtreſs had taken leave of her children in the morning with many tears and kiſſes, and had recommended

mended them in the moſt earneſt manner to her care; ſhe ſaid ſhe had promiſed faithfully to take care of them, and would while they were entruſted to her, fulfil her promiſe. For which profeſſion Heartfree expreſſed much gratitude to her; and, after indulging himſelf with ſome little fondneſſes, which we ſhall not relate, he delivered his children into the good woman's hands and diſmiſſed her.

CHAP. II.

A ſoliloquy of Heartfree's full of low and baſe ideas, without a ſyllable of GREATNESS.

BEING now alone, he ſat ſome ſhort time ſilent, and then burſt forth into the following ſoliloquy:

"WHAT ſhall I do? Shall I abandon myſelf to a "diſpirited deſpair, or fly in the face of the Al- "mighty? Surely both are unworthy of a wiſe man; "for what can be more vain than weakly to lament "my fortune, if irretrievable, or, if hope remains, "to offend that Being, who can moſt ſtrongly ſup- "port it: But are my paſſions then voluntary? Am I "ſo abſolutely their maſter, that I can reſolve with "myſelf, ſo far only will I grieve? Certainly no. "Reaſon, however we flatter ourſelves, hath not ſuch "deſpotic empire in our minds, that it can with "imperial voice, huſh all our ſorrow in a moment. "Where then is its uſe? For either it is an empty "ſound, and we are deceived in thinking we have "reaſon, or it is given us to ſome end, and hath a "part aſſigned it by the all-wiſe Creator. Why, what "can its office be, other than juſtly to weigh the "worth of all things, and to direct us to that perfec- "tion of human wiſdom, which proportions our eſ- "teem of every object of its real merit, and prevents "us from over or under valuing whatever we hope "for, we enjoy, or we loſe. It doth not fooliſhly "ſay to us, Be not glad, or Be not ſorry, which "would be as vain and as idle, as to bid the purling "river ceaſe to run, or the raging wind to blow. It

" prevents us only from exulting, like children, " when we receive a toy, or from lamenting when " we are deprived of it. Suppoſe then I have loſt " the enjoyments of this world, and my expectation " of future pleaſure and profit is for ever diſappoint- " ed; what relief can my reaſon afford? What, un- " leſs it can ſhew me I had fixed my affections on a " toy; that what I deſired was not by a wiſe man ea- " gerly to be affected, nor its loſs violently deplored; " for there are toys adapted to all ages, from the rat- " tle to the throne; and perhaps the value of all is " equal to their ſeveral poſſeſſors; for if the rattle " pleaſes the ear of the infant, what can the flattery " of ſycophants give more to the prince? The latter " is as far from examining into the reality and ſource " of his pleaſure, as the former; for if both did, " they muſt both equally deſpiſe it. And ſurely if " we conſider them ſeriouſly, and compare them to- " gether, we ſhall be forced to conclude all thoſe " pomps and pleaſures, of which men are ſo fond; " and which, through ſo much danger and difficulty " with ſuch violence and villainy they purſue, to be " as worthleſs trifles as any expoſed to ſale in a toy- " ſhop. I have often noted my little girl viewing with " eager eyes, a jointed baby; I have marked the " pains and ſolicitations ſhe hath uſed, till I have " been prevailed on to indulge her with it. At her " firſt obtaining it, what joy hath ſparkled in her " countenance! with what raptures hath ſhe taken " poſſeſſion; but how little ſatisfaction hath ſhe found " in it! What pains to work out her amuſement from " it! Its dreſs muſt be varied; the tinſel ornaments " which firſt caught her eyes, produce no longer " pleaſure; ſhe endeavours to make it ſtand and walk " in vain, and is conſtrained herſelf to ſupply it with " converſation. In a day's time it is thrown by and " neglected, and ſome leſs coſtly toy preferred to it. " How like the ſituation of this child is that of every " man! What difficulties in the purſuit of his de- " ſires! What inanity in the poſſeſſion of moſt, and " ſatiety in thoſe which ſeem more real and ſubſtan- " tial! The delights of moſt men are as childiſh and " *as ſuperficial* as that of my little girl; a feather

" or a fiddle are their purſuits and their pleaſures " through life even to their ripeſt years, if ſuch men " may be ſaid to attain any ripeneſs at all. But " let us ſurvey thoſe whoſe underſtandings are of a " more elevated and refined temper: How empty do " they ſoon find the world of enjoyments worth their " deſire or attaining! How ſoon do they retreat to " ſolitude and contemplation, to gardening, and " planting, and ſuch rural amuſements, where their " trees and they enjoy the air and the ſun in common, " and both vegetate with very little difference be- " tween them. But ſuppoſe (which neither truth nor " wiſdom will allow) we could admit ſomething more " valuable and ſubſtantial in theſe bleſſings, would " not the uncertainty of their poſſeſſion be alone ſuf- " ficient to lower their price? How mean a tenure is " that at the will of fortune, which chance, fraud, " and rapine, are every day ſo likely to deprive us of, " and often the more likely by how much the greater " worth our poſſeſſions are of! Is it not to place our " affections on a bubble in the water, or on a picture " in the clouds! What madman would build a fine " houſe, or frame a beautiful garden, on land in which " he held ſo uncertain an intereſt! But again, was " all this leſs undeniable, did fortune, the lady of our " manor, leaſe to us for our lives; of how little con- " ſideration muſt even this term appear? For admit- " ting that theſe pleaſures were not liable to be torn " from us; how certainly muſt we be torn from " them! Perhaps to-morrow,—Nay, or even ſooner: " For as the excellent poet ſays,

" Where is to-morrow?——In the other world.
" To thouſands this is true, and the reverſe
" Is ſure to none.

" But if I have no further hope in this world, can I " have none beyond it? Surely thoſe laborious wri- " ters, who have taken ſuch infinite pains to deſtroy " or weaken all the proofs of futurity, have not ſo " far ſucceeded as to exclude us from hope. That " active principle in man, which with ſuch boldneſs " puſhes us on through every labour and difficulty, to

" attain the moſt diſtant and moſt improbable event " in this world, will not ſurely deny us a little flat- " tering proſpect of thoſe beautiful manſions, which, " if they could be thought chimerical, muſt be al- " lowed the loveliest which can entertain the eye of " man; and to which the road, if we underſtand it " rightly, appears to have ſo few thorns and briers " in it, and to require ſo little labour and fatigue " from thoſe who ſhall paſs through it, that its ways " are truly ſaid to be ways of pleaſantneſs, and all " its paths to be thoſe of peace. If the proofs of " chriſtianity be as ſtrong as I imagine them, ſurely, " enough may be deduced from that ground only, to " comfort and ſupport the moſt miſerable man in his " afflictions. And this I think my reaſon tells me, " that if the profeſſors and propagators of infidelity " are in the right, the loſſes which death brings to " the virtuous are not worth their lamenting; but if " theſe are, as certainly they ſeem, in the wrong, " the bleſſings it procures them are not ſufficiently to " be coveted and rejoiced at.

" On my own account then, I have no cauſe for " ſorrow, but on my childrens—! Why, the ſame " Being to whoſe goodneſs and power I entruſt my " own happineſs, is likewiſe as able and as willing " to procure theirs. Nor matters it what ſtate of life " is allotted for them, whether it be their fate to " procure bread with their own labour, or to eat it " at the ſweat of others. Perhaps, if we conſider " the caſe with proper attention, or reſolve it with " due ſincerity; the former is much the ſweeter. The " hind may be more happy than the lord; for his " deſires are fewer, and thoſe ſuch as are attended " with more hope and leſs fear. I will do my utmoſt " to lay the foundations of my childrens happineſs, " I will carefully avoid educating them in a ſtation " ſuperior to their fortune, and for the event truſt to " that Being in whom whoever rightly confides, muſt " be ſuperior to all worldly ſorrows."

In this low manner did this poor wretch proceed to argue, till he had worked himſelf up into an enthuſiaſm, which by degrees ſoon became invulnerable to every

every human attack; ſo that when Mr. Snap acquainted him with the return of the writ, and that he muſt carry him to Newgate, he received the meſſage as Socrates did the news of the ſhip's arrival, and that he was to prepare for death.

CHAP. III.

Wherein our Hero proceeds in the road to Greatneſs.

BUT we muſt not detain our reader too long with theſe low characters. He is doubtleſs as impatient as the audience at the theatre, till the principal figure returns on the ſtage; we will therefore indulge his inclination, and purſue the actions of the Great Wild.

THERE happened to be in the ſtage-coach, in which Mr. Wild travelled from Dover, a certain young gentleman who had ſold an eſtate in Kent, and was going to London to receive the money. There was likewiſe a handſome young woman who had left her parents at Canterbury, and was proceeding to the ſame city, in order, as ſhe informed her fellow-travellers, to make her fortune. With this girl the young ſpark was ſo much enamoured, that he publickly acquainted her with the purpoſe of his journey, and offered her a conſiderable ſum in hand and a ſettlement, if ſhe would conſent to return with him into the country, where ſhe would be at a ſafe diſtance from her relations. Whether ſhe accepted this propoſal or no, we are not able with any tolerable certainty to deliver: But Wild the moment he heard of this money, began to caſt about in his mind by what means he might become maſter of it. He entered into a long harangue about the methods of carrying money ſafely on the road, and ſaid, he had at that time two bank bills of a hundred pounds each ſewed in his coat; which, added he, is ſo ſafe a way, that it is almoſt impoſſible I ſhould be in any danger of being robbed by the moſt cunning highwayman.

THE young gentleman, who was no deſcendant of Solomon, or, if he was, did not, any more than ſome other deſcendants of wiſe men, inherit the wiſdom of his

48226A

his anceſtor, greatly approved Wild's ingenuity, and thanking him for his information, declared he would follow his example when he returned into the country; by which means he propoſed to ſave the premium commonly taken for the remittance. Wild had then no more to do but to inform himſelf rightly of the time of the gentleman's journey, which he did with great certainty, before they ſeparated.

At his arrival in town, he fixed on two whom he regarded as the moſt reſolute of his gang for this enterprize: and accordingly having ſummoned the principal, or moſt deſperate as he imagined him, of theſe two (for he never choſe to communicate in the preſence of more than one) he propoſed to him the robbing and murdering this gentleman.

Mr. Marybone (for that was the gentleman's name to whom he applied) readily agreed to the robbery; but he heſitated at the murder. He ſaid, as to robbery, he had, on much weighing and conſidering the matter, very well renconciled his conſcience to it; for though that noble kind of robbery which was executed on the highway, was from the cowardice of mankind leſs frequent, yet the baſer and meaner ſpecies ſometimes called cheating, but more commonly known by the name of Robbery within the Law, was in a manner univerſal. He did not therefore pretend to the reputation of being ſo much honeſter than other people; but could by no means ſatisfy himſelf in the commiſſion of murder, which was a ſin of the moſt heinous nature, and ſo immediately proſecuted by God's judgment, that it never paſſed undiſcovered or unpuniſhed.

Wild, with the utmoſt diſdain in his countenance anſwered as follows. "Art thou he whom I have ſe "lected out of my whole gang for this glorious un "dertaking, and doſt thou cant of God's revenge "gainſt murder? You have, it ſeems, reconciled yo "conſcience (a pretty word) to robbery from its b "ing ſo common. Is it then the novelty of murd "that deters you? Do you imagine that guns a "piſtols, and ſwords, and knives, are the only "ſtruments of death? Look into the world, and "the numbers whom broken fortunes and brol

"he

" hearts bring untimely to the grave. To omit thoſe " glorious heroes, who, to their immortal honour, " have maſſacred whole nations, what think you of " private perſecution, treachery, and ſlander, by which " the very ſouls of men are in a manner torn from " their bodies? Is it not more generous, nay, more " good natured, to ſend a man to his reſt, than after " having plundered him of all he hath, or from ma- " lice or malevolence deprived him of his character, " to puniſh him with a languiſhing death, or, what " is worſe, a languiſhing life? Murder, therefore, is " not ſo uncommon as you weakly conceive it, tho', " as you ſaid of robbery, that more noble kind, " which lies within the paw of the law, may be ſo. " But this is the moſt innocent in him who doth it, " and the moſt eligible to him who is to ſuf- " fer it. Believe me, lad, the tongue of a viper is " leſs hurtful than that of a ſlanderer, and the gilded " ſcales of a rattleſnake leſs dreadful than the purſe " of the oppreſſor. Let me therefore hear no more " of your ſcruples; but conſent to my propoſal with- " out farther heſitation, unleſs, like a woman, you " are afraid of blooding your cloaths, or, like a fool, " are terrified with the apprehenſions of being hanged " in chains. Take my word for it, you had better " be an honeſt man than half a rogue. Do not " think of continuing in my gang without abandon- " ing yourſelf abſolutely to my pleaſure; for no man " ſhall ever receive a favour at my hands, who ſticks " at any thing, or is guided by any other law than " that of my will."

WILD thus ended his ſpeech, which had not the deſired effect on Marybone: he agreed to the robbery, but would not undertake the murder, as Wild (who feared that by Marybone's demanding to ſearch the gentleman's coat he might hazard ſuſpicion himſelf) inſiſted. Marybone was immediately entered by Wild in his Black-book, and was preſently after impeached and executed, as a fellow on whom his leader could not place a ſufficient dependance; thus falling, as many rogues do, a ſacrifice not to his roguery, but to his conſcience.

CHAP. IV.

In which a young hero, of wonderful good promiſe, makes his firſt appearance, with many other GREAT MATTERS.

OUR hero next applied himſelf to another of his gang, who inſtantly received his orders, and inſtead of heſitating at a ſingle murder, aſked if he ſhould blow out the brains of all the paſſengers, coachman and all. But Wild, whoſe moderation we have before noted, would not permit him; and therefore having given him an exact deſcription of the devoted perſon, with his other neceſſary inſtructions, he diſmiſſed him, with ſtricteſt orders to avoid, if poſſible, doing hurt to any other perſon.

THE name of this youth, who will hereafter make ſome figure in this hiſtory, being the Achates of our Æneas, or rather the Hæpheſtion of our Alexander, was Fireblood. He had every qualification to make a ſecond-rate GREAT MAN; or in other words, he was completely equipped for the tool of a real or firſt-rate GREAT MAN. We ſhall therefore (which is the propereſt way of dealing with this kind of GREATNESS) deſcribe him negatively, and content ourſelves which telling our reader what qualities he had not: in which number were humanity, modeſty, and fear, not one grain of any of which was mingled in his whole compoſition.

WE will now leave this youth, who was eſteemed the moſt promiſing of the whole gang, and whom Wild often declared to be one of the prettieſt lads he had ever ſeen, of which opinion, indeed, were moſt other people of his acquaintance; we will however leave him at his entrance on this enterprize, and keep our attention fixed on our hero, whom we ſhall obſerve taking large ſtrides towards the ſummit of human glory.

WILD, immediately at his return to town, went to pay a viſit to Miſs Lætitia Snap; for he had that weakneſs of ſuffering himſelf to be enſlaved by women, ſo naturally incident to men of heroic diſpoſition;

tion; to ſay the truth, it might more properly be called a ſlavery to his own appetite; for could he have ſatisfied that, he had not cared three farthings what had become of the little tyrant for whom he profeſs'd ſo violent a regard. Here he was informed that Mr. Heartfree had been conveyed to Newgate the day before, the writ being then returnable. He was ſomewhat concerned at this news; not from any compaſſion for the misfortunes of Heartfree, whom he hated with ſuch inveteracy, that one would have imagined he had ſuffered the ſame injuries from him which he had done towards him. His concern therefore had another motive: in fact, he was uneaſy at the place of Mr. Heartfree's confinement, as it was to be the ſcene of his future glory, and where conſequently he ſhould be frequently obliged to ſee a face which hatred, and not ſhame, made him deteſt the ſight of.

To prevent this therefore, ſeveral methods ſuggeſted themſelves to him. At firſt he thought of removing him out of the way by the ordinary method of murder, which he doubted not but Fireblood would be very ready to execute; for that youth had at their laſt interview, ſworn, *D—n his eyes, he thought there was no better paſtime than blowing a man's brains out.* But beſides the danger of this method, it did not look horrible nor barbarous enough for the laſt miſchief which he ſhould do to Heartfree. Conſidering, therefore, a little farther with himſelf, he at length came to a reſolution to hang him, if poſſible, the very next ſeſſions.

Now, though the obſervation, *How apt men are to hate thoſe they injure*, or *how unforgiving they are of the injuries they do themſelves*, be common enough, yet I do not remember to have ever ſeen the reaſon of this ſtrange phænomenon as at firſt it appears. Know therefore, reader, that with much and ſevere ſcrutiny we have diſcovered this hatred to be founded on the paſſion of fear, and to ariſe from an apprehenſion that the perſon whom we have ourſelves greatly injured, will uſe all poſſible endeavours to revenge and retaliate the injuries we have done him. An opinion ſo firmly eſtabliſhed in bad and great minds (and thoſe who

who confer injuries on others, have ſeldom very good, or mean ones) that no benevolence, nor even beneficence on the injured ſide, can eradicate it. On the contrary, they refer all theſe acts of kindneſs to impoſture and deſign of lulling their ſuſpicion, till an opportunity offers of ſtriking a ſurer and ſeverer blow; and thus while the good man who hath received it, hath truly forgotten the injury, the evil mind which did it, hath it in lively and freſh remembrance.

As we ſcorn to keep any diſcoveries ſecret from our readers, whoſe inſtruction, as well as diverſion, we have greatly conſidered in this hiſtory, we have here digreſſed ſomewhat to communicate the following ſhort leſſon to thoſe who are ſimple, and well inclined; *Though as a chriſtian thou art obliged, and we adviſe thee to forgive thy enemy*; NEVER TRUST THE MAN WHO HATH REASON TO SUSPECT THAT YOU KNOW HE HATH INJURED YOU.

CHAP. V.

More and more GREATNESS, *unparalleled in hiſtory or romance.*

IN order to accompliſh this great and noble ſcheme, which the vaſt genius of Wild had contrived, the firſt neceſſary ſtep was to regain the confidence of Heartfree. But however neceſſary this was, it ſeemed to be attended with ſuch inſurmountable difficulties, that even our hero for ſome time deſpaired of ſucceſs. He was greatly ſuperior to all mankind in the ſteadineſs of his countenance, but this undertaking ſeemed to require more of that noble quality than had ever been the portion of a mortal. However, at laſt he reſolved to attempt it, and from his ſucceſs, I think, we may fairly aſſert, that what was ſaid by the Latin poet of labour, that it *conquers all things*, is much more true when applied to impudence.

WHEN he had formed his plan, he went to Newgate, and burſt reſolutely into the preſence of Heartfree, whom he eagerly embraced and kiſſed: and then, firſt arraigning his own raſhneſs, and afterwards lament-

lamenting his unfortunate want of ſucceſs, he acquainted him with the particulars of what had happened; concealing only that ſingle incident of his attack on the other's wife, and his motive to the undertaking, which he aſſured Heartfree was a deſire to preſerve his effects from a ſtatute of bankruptcy.

THE frank openneſs of this declaration, with the compoſure of countenance with which it was delivered; his ſeeming only ruffled by the concern for his friend's misfortune; the probability of truth attending it, joined to the boldneſs and diſintereſted appearance of this viſit, together with his many profeſſions of immediate ſervice, at a time when he could not have the leaſt viſible motive from ſelf-love; and above all his offering him money, the laſt and ſureſt token of friendſhip, ruſhed with ſuch united force on the well-diſpoſed heart, as it is vulgarly called, of this ſimple man, that they inſtantly ſtaggered, and ſoon ſubverted all the determination he had before made in prejudice of Wild; who perceiving the balance to be turning in his favour, preſently threw in a hundred imprecations on his own folly and ill-adviſed forwardneſs to ſerve his friend, which had thus unhappily produced his ruin; he added as many curſes on the Count, whom he vowed, to purſue with revenge all over Europe; laſtly, he caſt in ſome grains of comfort, aſſuring Heartfree that his wife was fallen into the gentleſt hands, that ſhe would be carried no further than Dunkirk, whence ſhe might very eaſily be redeemed.

HEARTFREE, to whom the lighteſt preſumption of his wife's fidelity would have been more delicious than the abſolute reſtoration of all his jewels, and who, indeed, had with the utmoſt difficulty been brought to entertain the ſlighteſt ſuſpicion of her inconſtancy, immediately abandoned all diſtruſt of both her and his friend, whoſe ſincerity (luckily for Wild's purpoſe) ſeemed to him to depend on the ſame evidence. He then embraced our hero, who had in his countenance all the ſymptoms of the deepeſt concern, and begged him to be comforted; ſaying, that the intentions, rather than the actions of men, con-

ferred obligations; that as to the event of human affairs, it was governed either by chance or ſome ſuperior agent; that friendſhip was concerned only in the direction of our deſigns. And ſuppoſe theſe failed of ſucceſs, or produced an event never ſo contrary to their aim, the merit of a good intention was not in the leaſt leſſened, but was rather entitled to compaſſion.

HEARTFREE, however, was ſoon curious enough to enquire how Wild had eſcaped the captivity which his wife then ſuffered. Here likewiſe he recounted the whole truth, omitting only the motive to the French captain's cruelty, for which he aſſigned a very different reaſon, namely, his attempt to ſecure Heartfree's jewels. Wild indeed always kept as much truth as was poſſible in every thing; and this he ſaid was turning the cannon of the enemy upon themſelves.

WILD having thus, with admirable and truly laudable conduct, atchieved the firſt ſtep, began to diſcourſe on the badneſs of the world; and particularly to blame the ſeverity of creditors, who ſeldom or never attended to any unfortunate circumſtances, but without mercy inflicted confinement on the debtor, whoſe body the law, with very unjuſtifiable rigour, delivered into their power. He added, that for his part, he looked on this reſtraint to be as heavy a puniſhment as any appointed by law for the greateſt offenders. That the loſs of liberty was, in his opinion, equal to, if not worſe, than the loſs of life; that he had always determined, if by any accident or misfortune he had been ſubjected to the former, he would run the greateſt riſque of the latter to reſcue himſelf from it; which, he ſaid, if men did not want reſolution, was always enough; for that it was ridiculous to conceive that two or three men could confine two or three hundred, unleſs the priſoners were either fools or cowards, eſpecially when they were neither chained nor fettered. He went on in this manner, till perceiving the utmoſt attention in Heartfree, he ventured to propoſe to him an endeavour to make his eſcape, which, he ſaid, might eaſily be executed; that he would himſelf raiſe a party in the priſon, and that, if a murder or two ſhould happen in the attempt, he

Heartfree) might keep from any ſhare, either in the guilt or in the danger.

THERE is one misfortune which attends all great men and their ſchemes, *viz.* That, in order to carry them into execution, they are obliged in propoſing their purpoſe to their tools, to diſcover themſelves to be of that diſpoſition, in which certain little writers have adviſed mankind to place no confidence; an advice which hath been ſometimes taken. Indeed many inconveniencies ariſe to the ſaid great men from theſe ſcribblers publiſhing without reſtraint their hints or alarms to ſociety; and many great and glorious ſchemes have been thus fruſtrated; wherefore it were to be wiſhed, that in all well-regulated governments, ſuch liberties ſhould be by ſome wholeſome laws reſtrained; and all writers inhibited from venting any other inſtructions to the people than what ſhould be firſt approved and licenſed by the ſaid great men, or their proper inſtruments or tools; by which means nothing would ever be publiſhed but what made for the advancing their moſt noble projects.

HEARTFREE, whoſe ſuſpicions were again raiſed by this advice, viewing Wild with inconceivable diſdain, ſpoke as follows. "There is one thing, the "loſs of which I ſhould deplore infinitely beyond that "of liberty and of life alſo, I mean that of a good "conſcience. A bleſſing which he who poſſeſſes can "never be throughly unhappy; for the bittereſt po"tion of life is by this ſo ſweetened, that it ſoon be"comes palatable; whereas without it, the moſt deli"cate enjoyments quickly loſe all their reliſh, and life "itſelf grows inſipid, or rather naufeous to us. Would "you then leſſen my misfortunes by robbing me of "what hath been my only comfort under them, and "on which I place my dependance of being relieved "from them? I have read that Socrates refuſed to "ſave his life by breaking the laws of his country, "and departing from his priſon, when it was open. "Perhaps my virtue would not go ſo far; but heaven "forbid liberty ſhould have ſuch charms, to tempt "me to the perpetration of ſo horrid a crime as mur"der. As to the poor evaſion of committing it by "*other hands*, it might be uſeful indeed to thoſe who

" ſeek only the eſcape from temporal puniſhment, " but can be of no ſervice to excuſe me to that Being " whom I chiefly fear offending; nay, it would great- " ly aggravate my guilt by ſo impudent an endeavour " to impoſe upon him, and by ſo wickedly involving " others in my crime. Give me therefore no more " advice of this kind; for this is my great comfort " in all my afflictions, that it is in the power of no " enemy to rob me of my conſcience, nor will I ever " be ſo much my own enemy as to injure it."

THOUGH our hero heard all this with proper contempt, he made no direct anſwer; but endeavoured to evade this propoſal as much as poſſible, which he did with admirable dexterity: this method of getting tolerably well off, when you are repulſed in your attack on a man's conſcience may be ſtiled the art of retreating, in which the politician, as well as the general, hath ſometimes a wonderful opportunity of diſplaying his great abilities in his profeſſion.

WILD, having made this admirable retreat, and argued away all deſign of involving his friend in the guilt of murder, concluded however, that he thought him rather too ſcrupulous in not attempting his eſcape; and then promiſing to uſe all ſuch means as the other would permit, in his ſervice, took his leave for the preſent. Heartfree, having indulged himſelf an hour with his children, repaired to reſt, which he enjoyed quiet and undiſturbed; whilſt Wild, diſdaining repoſe, ſat up all night conſulting how he might bring about the final deſtruction of his friend, without being beholden to any aſſiſtance from himſelf; which he now deſpaired of procuring. With the reſult of theſe conſultations we ſhall acquaint our reader in good time; but at preſent we have matters of much more conſequence to relate to him.

CHAP. VI.

The event of Fireblood's *adventure, and a treaty of marriage, which might have been concluded either at* Smithfield *or* St. James's.

FIREBLOOD returned from his enterprize unſucceſsful. The gentleman happened to go home *another way* than he had intended; ſo that the whole deſign

deſign miſcarried. Fireblood had indeed robbed the coach, and had wantonly diſcharged a piſtol into it, which ſlightly wounded one of the paſſengers in the arm. The booty he met with was not very conſiderable, tho' much greater than that with which he acquainted Wild; for, of eleven pounds in money, two ſilver watches, and a wedding-ring, he produced no more than two guineas and the ring, which he proteſted with numberleſs oaths was his whole booty. However, when an advertiſement of the robbery was publiſhed, with a reward promiſed for the ring and the watches; Fireblood was obliged to confeſs the whole, and to acquaint our hero where he had pawned the watches; which Wild, taking the full value of them for his pains, reſtored to the right owner.

He did not fail catechiſing his young friend on this occaſion. He ſaid, he was ſorry to ſee any of his gang guilty of a breach of honour; that without honour *Priggery* was at an end; that if a *Prig* had but honour, he would overlook every vice in the world. "But, nevertheleſs, ſaid he, I will forgive you this "time, as you are a hopeful lad; and I hope never "afterwards to find you delinquent in this great "point."

Wild had now brought his gang to great regularity: he was obeyed and feared by them all. He had likewiſe eſtabliſhed an office, where all men who were robbed, paying the value only (or a little more) of their goods, might have them again. This was of notable uſe to ſeveral perſons who had loſt pieces of plate they had received from their grand-mothers; to others who had a particular value for certain rings, watches, heads of canes, ſnuff-boxes, &c. for which they would not have taken twenty times as much as they were worth, either becauſe they had them a little while or a long time, or that ſomebody elſe had them before, or from ſome other ſuch excellent reaſon, which often ſtamps a greater value on a toy, than the great Bubble-boy himſelf would have the impudence to ſet upon it.

By theſe means, he ſeemed in ſo promiſing a way of procuring a fortune, and was regarded in ſo thriving

ing a light by all the gentleman of his acquaintance, as by the keeper and turnkeys of Newgate, by Mr. Snap and others of his occupation, that Mr. Snap one day, taking Mr. Wild the elder aſide, very ſeriouſly propoſed what they had often lightly talked over, a ſtrict union between their families, by marrying his daughter Tiſhy to our hero. This propoſal was very readily accepted by the old gentleman, who promiſed to acquaint his ſon with it.

On the morrow, on which this meſſage was to be delivered, our hero, little dreaming of the happineſs which, of its own accord, was advancing ſo near towards him, had called Fireblood to him; and, after informing that youth of the violence of his paſſion for the young lady, and aſſuring him what confidence he repoſed in him and his honour, he diſpatched him to Miſs Tiſhy with the following letter; which we here inſert, not only as we take it to be extremely curious, but to be a much better pattern for that epiſtolary kind of writing, which is generally called Love-letters, than any to be found in the *academy of compliments*, and which we challenge all the beaus of our time to excel either in mattter or ſpelling.

" Moſt deivine and adwhorable creeture,

" I Doubt not but thoſe IIs, briter than the ſon, " which have kindled ſuch a flam in my hart, " have likewiſe the faculty of ſeeing it. It would " be the hieſt preaſſumption to imagin you eggnorant " of my loav. No, Madam, I ſollemly purteſt, that " of all the butys in the univarſal glob, there is none " kapable of hateracting my IIs like you. Corts and " pallaces would be to me deſerts without your kum- " pany, and with it a wilderneſs would have more " charms than haven itſelf. For I hop you will be- " leve me when I ſware every place in the univarſe is a " haven with you, I am konvinced you muſt be ſin- " ſibel of my violent paſſion for you, which, if I en- " devored to hid it, would be as impoſſible as for " you, or the ſon to hide your buty's. I aſſure you " I have not ſlept a wink ſince I had the hapneſs of

" ſeein

" ſeeing you laſt; therefore hop you will, out of " Kumpaſſion, let me have the honour of ſeeing you " this afternune; for I am with the greateſt ad- " whoration,

" Moſt deivine creeture,

" Iour moſt paſſionate amirer,

" Adwhorer and ſlave,

JONATHAN WYLD."

IF the ſpelling of this letter be not ſo ſtrictly orthographical, the reader will be pleaſed to remember, that ſuch a defect might be worthy of cenſure in a low and ſcholaſtic character; but can be no blemiſh in that ſublime greatneſs, of which we endeavour to raiſe a complete idea in this hiſtory. In which kind of compoſition, ſpelling, or indeed any kind of human literature, hath never been thought a neceſſary ingredient; for if theſe ſort of great perſonages can but complot and contrive their noble ſchemes, and hack and hew mankind ſufficiently, there will never be wanting fit and able perſons who can ſpell, to record their praiſes. Again, if it ſhould be obſerved, that the ſtile of this letter doth not exactly correſpond with that of our hero's ſpeeches, which we have here recorded, we anſwer, it is ſufficient if in theſe the hiſtorian adheres faithfully to the matter, though he embelliſhes the diction with ſome flouriſhes of his own eloquence, without which the excellent ſpeeches recorded in antient hiſtorians (particularly in Salluſt) would have ſcarce been found in their writings. Nay, even amongſt the moderns, famous as they are for elocution, it may be doubted whether thoſe inimitable harangues, publiſhed in the monthly Magazines, came literally from the mouths of the HURGOS, &c. as they are there inſerted, or whether we may not rather ſuppoſe ſome hiſtorian of great eloquence hath borrowed the matter only, and adorned it with thoſe rhetorical flowers for which many of the ſaid HURGOS are not ſo extremely eminent.

CHAP.

CHAP. VII.

Matters preliminary to the marriage between Mr. Jonathan Wild *and the chaſte* Lætitia.

BUT to proceed with our hiſtory: Fireblood, having received this letter, and promiſed on his honour, with many voluntary aſſeverations, to diſcharge his embaſſy faithfully, went to viſit the fair Lætitia. The lady having opened the letter, and read it, put on an air of diſdain, and told Mr. Fireblood ſhe could not conceive what Mr. Wild meant by troubling her with his impertinence; ſhe begged him to carry the letter back again, ſaying, had ſhe known from whom it came, ſhe would have been d—d before ſhe had opened it. "But with you, young gentleman, ſays "ſhe, I am not in the leaſt angry. I am rather ſorry "that ſo pretty a young man ſhould be employed in "ſuch an errand." She accompanied theſe words with ſo tender an accent, and ſo wanton a leer, that Fireblood, who was no backward youth, began to take her by the hand, and proceeded ſo warmly, that, to imitate his actions with the rapidity of our narration, he in a few minutes raviſhed this fair creature, or at leaſt would have raviſhed her, if ſhe had not, by a timely compliance, prevented him.

FIREBLOOD, after he had raviſhed as much as he could, returned to Wild, and acquainted him, as far as any wiſe man would, with what had paſſed; concluding with many praiſes of the young lady's beauty, with whom, he ſaid, if his honour would have permitted him, he ſhould himſelf have fallen in love; but, d——n him, if he would not ſooner be torn in pieces by wild horſes, than even think of injuring his friend. He aſſerted indeed, and ſwore ſo heartily, that had not Wild been ſo thoroughly convinced of the impregnable chaſtity of the lady, he might have ſuſpected his ſucceſs: however, he was, by theſe means, entirely ſatisfied of his friend's inclination towards his miſtreſs.

THUS conſtituted were the love affairs of our hero, when his father brought him Mr. Snap's propoſal. The reader muſt know very little of love, or indeed of any thing elſe, if he requires any information concerning

concerning the reception which his propoſal met with. *Not guilty* never ſounded ſweeter in the ears of a priſoner at the bar, nor the ſound of a reprieve to one at the gallows, than did every word of the old gentleman in the ears of our hero. He gave his father full power to treat in his name, and deſired nothing more than expedition.

THE old people now met, and Snap, who had information from his daughter of the violent paſſion of her lover, endeavoured to improve it to the beſt advantage, and would have not only declined giving her any fortune himſelf, but have attempted to cheat her of what ſhe owed to the liberality of her relations, particularly of a pint ſilver caudle-cup, the gift of her grandmother. However, in this the young lady herſelf afterwards took care to prevent him. As to the old Mr. Wild, he did not ſufficiently attend to all the deſigns of Snap, as his faculties were buſily employed in deſigns of his own to over-reach (or, as others expreſs it, to cheat) the ſaid Mr. Snap, by pretending to give his ſon a whole number for a chair, when in reality he was intitled to a third only.

WHILE matters were thus ſettling between the old folks, the young lady agreed to admit Mr. Wild's viſits; and, by degrees, began to entertain him with all the ſhew of affection, which the great natural reſerve of her temper, and the greater artificial reſerve of her education, would permit. At length, every thing being agreed between their parents, ſettlements made, and the lady's fortune (to wit, ſeventeen pounds and nine ſhillings in money and goods) paid down, the day for their nuptials was fixed, and they were celebrated accordingly.

MOST private hiſtories, as well as comedies, end at this period; the hiſtorian and the poet both concluding they have done enough for their hero when they have married him; or intimating rather, that the reſt of his life muſt be a dull calm of happineſs, very delightful indeed to paſs through, but ſomewhat inſipid to relate; and matrimony in general muſt, I believe, without any diſpute, be allowed to be this ſtate of tranquil felicity, including ſo little variety, that,

that, like Salisbury Plain, it affords only one prospect, a very pleasant one it must be confessed, but the same.

Now, there was all the probability imaginable, that this contract would have proved of such happy note, both from the great accomplishments of the young lady, who was thought to be possessed of every qualification necessary to make the marriage state happy, and from the truly ardent passion of Mr. Wild; but whether it was that nature and fortune had great designs for him to execute, and would not suffer his vast abilities to be lost and sunk in the arms of a wife, or whether neither nature nor fortune had any hand in the matter, is a point I will not determine. Certain it is, that this match did not produce that serene state we have mentioned above; but resembled the most turbulent and ruffled, rather than the most calm sea.

I CANNOT here omit a conjecture ingenious enough of a friend of mine, who had a long intimacy in the Wild family. He hath often told me, he fancied one reason of the dissatisfactions which afterwards fell out between Wild and his lady, arose from the number of gallants, to whom she had before marriage granted favours; for, says he, and indeed very probable it is too, the lady might expect from her husband, what she had before received from several, and being angry not to find one man as good as ten, she had, from that indignation, taken those steps which we cannot perfectly justify.

FROM this person I received the following dialogue, which he assured me, he had overheard, and taken down *verbatim*. It passed on the day fortnight after they were married.

CHAP. VIII.

A dialogue matrimonial, which passed between JONATHAN WILD, *Esquire, and* LÆTITIA *his wife, on the morning of the day fortnight on which his nuptials were celebrated; which concluded more amicably than those debated generally do.*

JONATHAN. MY dear, I wish you would lie a little longer in bed this morning.

LÆTITIA.

LÆTITIA. Indeed I cannot; I am engaged to breakfaſt with Jack Strongbow.

JONATHAN. I don't know what Jack Strongbow doth ſo often at my houſe. I aſſure you I am uneaſy at it; for though I have no ſuſpicion of your virtue, yet it may injure your reputation in the opinion of my neighbours.

LÆTITIA. I don't trouble my head about my neighbours; and they ſhall no more tell me what company I am to keep, than my huſband ſhall.

JONATHAN. A good wife would keep no company which made her huſband uneaſy.

LÆTITIA. You might have found one of thoſe good wives, Sir, if you had pleaſed; I had no objection to it.

JONATHAN. I thought I had found one in you.

LÆTITIA. You did! I am very much obliged to you for thinking me ſo poor-ſpirited a creature; but I hope to convince you to the contrary. What, I ſuppoſe, you took me for a raw, ſenſeleſs girl, who knew not what other married women do?

JONATHAN. No matter what I took you for: I have taken you for better and worſe.

LÆTITIA. And at your own deſire too: for, I am ſure, you never had mine. I ſhould not have broken my heart if Mr. Wild had thought proper to beſtow himſelf on any other more happy woman—Ha, ha.

JONATHAN. I hope, Madam, you don't imagine that was not in my power, or that I married you out of any kind of neceſſity.

LÆTITIA. O no, Sir, I am convinced there are ſilly women enough. And far be it from me to accuſe you of any neceſſity for a wife. I believe you could have been very well contented with the ſtate of a batchelor; I have no reaſon to complain of your neceſſities; but that, you know, a woman cannot tell beforehand.

JONATHAN. I can't gueſs what you would inſinuate; for I believe no woman had ever leſs reaſon to complain of her huſband's want of fondneſs.

LÆTITIA. Then ſome, I am certain, have great reaſon to complain of the price they give for them.—

But

But I know better things. (*These words were ſpoken with a very great air, and toſs of the head.*)

JONATHAN. Well, my ſweeting, I will make it impoſſible for you to wiſh me more fond.——

LÆTITIA. Pray, Mr. Wild, none of this nauſeous behaviour, nor thoſe odious words.—I wiſh you were fond!—I aſſure you—I don't know what you would pretend to inſinuate of me.—I have no wiſhes which miſbecome a virtuous woman—No, nor ſhould not, if I had married for love.—And eſpecially now when nobody, I am ſure, can ſuſpect me of any ſuch thing.—

JONATHAN. If you did not marry for love, why did you marry?

LÆTITIA. Becauſe it was convenient, and my parents forced me.

JONATHAN. I hope, Madam, at leaſt, you will not tell me to my face, you have made your convenience of me.

LÆTITIA. I have made nothing of you; nor do I deſire the honour of making any thing of you.

JONATHAN. Yes, you have made a huſband of me.

LÆTITIA. No, you made yourſelf ſo; for I repeat once more, It was not my deſire, but your own.

JONATHAN. You ſhould think yourſelf obliged to me for that deſire.

LÆTITIA. La! Sir, you was not ſo ſingular in it. I was not in deſpair.——I have had other offers, and better too.

JONATHAN. I wiſh you had accepted them with all my heart.

LÆTITIA. I muſt tell you, Mr. Wild, this is a very brutiſh manner of treating a woman, to whom you have ſuch obligations; but I know how to deſpiſe it, and to deſpiſe you too for ſhewing it me. Indeed I am well enough paid for the fooliſh preference I gave to you. I flatter myſelf that I ſhould at leaſt have been uſed with good manners. I thought I had married a gentleman: but I find you every way contemptible, and below my concern.

JONATHAN. D—n you, Madam, have I not more reaſon to complain, when you tell me you married me for your convenience only?

LÆTITIA.

LÆTITIA. Very fine, truly, Is it behaviour worthy a man to ſwear at a woman? yet why ſhould I mention what comes from a wretch whom I deſpiſe.

JONATHAN. Don't repeat that word ſo often. I deſpiſe you as heartily as you can me. And, to tell you a truth, I married you for my convenience likewiſe, to ſatisfy a paſſion which I have now ſatisfied, and you may be d—d for any thing I care.

LÆTITIA. The world ſhall know how barbarouſly I am treated by ſuch a villain.

JONATHAN. I need take very little pains to acquaint the world what a b—ch you are, your actions will demonſtrate it.

LÆTITIA. Monſter! I would adviſe you not to depend too much on my ſex, and provoke me too far; for I can do you a miſchief, and will, if you dare uſe me ſo, you villain!

JONATHAN. Begin whenever you pleaſe, Madam; but aſſure yourſelf, the moment you lay aſide the woman, I will treat you as ſuch no longer; and if the firſt blow is your's, I promiſe you the laſt ſhall be mine.

LÆTITIA. Uſe me as you will; but d—n me if ever you ſhall uſe me as a woman again; for may I be curſed, if ever I enter your bed more.

JONATHAN. May I be curſed if that abſtinence be not the greateſt obligation you can lay upon me; for I aſſure you faithfully, your perſon was all I had ever any regard for; and that I now loath and deteſt, as much as ever I liked it.

LÆTITIA. It is impoſſible for two people to agree better; for I always deteſted your perſon; and, as for any other regard, you muſt be convinced I never could have any for you.

JONATHAN. Why, then, ſince we are come to a right underſtanding, as we are to live together, ſuppoſe we agreed, inſtead of quarrelling and abuſing, to be civil to each other.

LÆTITIA. With all my heart.

JONATHAN. Let us ſhake hands then, and henceforwards never live like man and wife; that is, never be loving, nor ever quarrel.

LÆTITIA.

LÆTITIA. Agreed—But pray Mr. Wild, why B——ch? Why did you ſuffer ſuch a word to eſcape you?

JONATHAN. It is not worth your remembrance.

LÆTITIA. You agree I ſhall converſe with whomſoever I pleaſe?

JONATHAN. Without controul. And I have the ſame liberty?

LÆTITIA. When I interfere, may every curſe you can wiſh attend me.

JONATHAN. Let us now take a farewel kiſs; and may I be hang'd if it is not the ſweeteſt you ever gave me.

LÆTITIA. But why B—ch?—Methinks I ſhould be glad to know why B—ch?

AT which words he ſprang from the bed, d—ing her temper heartily. She returned it again with equal abuſe, which was continued on both ſides while he was dreſſing. However, they agreed to continue ſteadfaſt in this new reſolution; and the joy ariſing on that occaſion at length diſmiſſed them pretty chearfully from each other, though Lætitia could not help concluding with the words, WHY B—CH.

CHAP. IX.

Obſervations on the foregoing dialogue, together with a baſe deſign on our hero, which muſt be deteſted by every lover of GREATNESS.

THUS did this dialogue (which though we have termed it matrimonial, had indeed very little ſavour of the ſweets of matrimony in it) produce at laſt a reſolution more wiſe than ſtrictly pious, and which, if they could have rigidly adhered to it, might have prevented ſome unpleaſant moments, as well to our hero as to his ſerene conſort; but their hatred was ſo very great and unaccountable, that they never could bear to ſee the leaſt compoſure in one another's countenance, without attempting to ruffle it. This ſet them on ſo many contrivances to plague and vex one another, that their proximity afforded them ſuch frequent opportunities of executing their malicious purpoſes,

purpoſes, they ſeldom paſs'd one eaſy or quiet day together.

And this, reader, and no other, is the cauſe of thoſe many inquietudes, which thou muſt have obſerved to diſturb the repoſe of ſome married couple, who miſtake implacable hatred for indifference; for why ſhould Corvinus, who lives in a round of intrigue, and ſeldom doth, and never willingly would, dally with his wife, endeavour to prevent her from the ſatisfaction of an intrigue in her turn? Why doth Camilla refuſe a more agreeable invitation abroad, only to expoſe her huſband at his own table at home? In ſhort, to mention no more inſtances, whence can all the quarrels, and jealouſies and jars, proceed, in people who have no love for each other, unleſs from that noble paſſion above-mentioned, that deſire, according to my lady Betty Modiſh, of *curing each other of a ſmile.*

We thought proper to give our reader a ſhort taſte of the domeſtic ſtate of our hero, the rather to ſhew him that great men are ſubject to the ſame frailties and inconveniencies in ordinary life, with little men, and that hero's are really of the ſame ſpecies with other human creatures, notwithſtanding all the pains they themſelves, or their flatterers, take to aſſert the contrary; and that they differ chiefly in the immenſity of their greatneſs, or, as the vulgar erroneouſly call it, villainy. Now, therefore, that we may not dwell too long on low ſcenes, in a hiſtory of this ſublime kind, we ſhall return to actions of a higher note, and more ſuitable to our purpoſe.

When the boy Hymen had, with his lighted torch, driven the boy Cupid out of doors; that is to ſay, in common phraſe, when the violence of Mr. Wild's paſſion (or rather appetite) for the chaſte Lætitia began to abate, he returned to viſit his friend Heartfree, who was now in the liberties of the Fleet, and had appeared to the commiſſion of bankruptcy againſt him. Here he met with a more cold reception than he himſelf had apprehended. Heartfree had long entertained ſuſpicions of Wild, but theſe ſuſpicions had from time to time been confounded with circumſtances, and principally ſmothered with that amazing confidence, which

was

was indeed the moſt ſtriking virtue in our hero. Heartfree was unwilling to condemn his friend without certain evidence, and laid hold on every probable ſemblance to aquit him; but the propoſal made at his laſt viſit had ſo totally blackened his character in this poor man's opinion, that it entirely fixed the wavering ſcale, and he no longer doubted but that our hero was one of the greateſt villains in the world.

CIRCUMSTANCES of great improbability often eſcape men who devour a ſtory with greedy ears; the reader therefore cannot wonder that Heartfree, whoſe paſſions were ſo variouſly concerned, firſt for the fidelity, and ſecondly for the ſafety of his wife; and laſtly, who was ſo diſtracted with doubt concerning the conduct of his friend, ſhould at his firſt relation paſs unobſerved the incident of his being committed to the boat by the captain of the privateer, which he had at the time of his telling ſo lamely accounted for; but now when Heartfee came to reflect on the whole, and with a high prepoſſeſſion againſt Wild, the abſurdity of this fact glared in his eyes, and ſtruck him in the moſt ſenſible manner. At length a thought of great horror ſuggeſted itſelf to his imagination, and this was whether the whole was not a fiction, and Wild, who was, as he had learned from his own mouth, equal to any undertaking how black ſoever, had not ſpirited away, robbed and murdered his wife.

INTOLERABLE as this apprehenſion was, he not only turned it round and examined it carefully in his own mind, but acquainted young Friendly with it at their next interview. Friendly, who deteſted Wild, (from that envy probably, with which theſe GREAT CHARACTERS naturally inſpire low fellows) encouraged theſe ſuſpicions ſo much, that Heartfree reſolved to attach our hero, and carry him before a magiſtrate.

THIS reſolution had been ſome time taken, and Friendly with a warrant and a conſtable, had with the utmoſt diligence ſearched ſeveral days for our hero; but whether it was that, in compliance with modern cuſtom, he had retired to ſpend the honey-

moon with his bride, the only moon indeed in which it is fashionable or customary for the married parties to have any correspondence with each other; or perhaps his habitation might, for particular reasons, be usually kept a secret: like those of some few great men, whom unfortunately the law hath left out of that reasonable as well as honourable provision, which it hath made for the security of the persons of other great men.

But Wild relolved to perform works of supererogation in the way of honour, and though no hero is obliged to answer the challenge of my lord chief justice, or indeed, of any other magistrate; but may with unblemished reputation slide away from it; yet such was the bravery, such the greatness, the magnanimity of Wild, that he appeared in person to it.

Indeed envy may say one thing, which may lessen the glory of this action, namely, that the said Mr. Wild knew nothing of the said warrant or challenge; and as thou mayst be assured, reader, that the malicious fury will omit nothing which can any ways sully so great a character, so she hath endeavoured to account for the second visit of our hero to his friend Heartfree from a very different motive, than that of asserting his own innocence.

CHAP. X.

Mr. Wild *with unprecedented generosity visits his friend* Heartfree, *and the ungrateful reception he met with.*

It hath been said then, that Mr. Wild, not being able on the strictest examination to find in a certain spot of human nature called his own heart, the least grain of that pitiful low quality called honesty, had resolved, perhaps, a little too generally, that there was no such thing. He therefore imputed the resolution with which Mr. Heartfree had so positively refused to concern himself in murder, either to a fear of bloodying his hands, or the apprehension of a ghost, or lest he should make an additional example in that excellent book called, God's Revenge against Mur-

Murder; and doubted not but he would (at leaſt in his preſent neceſſity) agree without ſcruple to a ſimple robbery, eſpecially where any conſiderable booty ſhould be propoſed, and the ſafety of the attack plauſibly made appear: which, if he could prevail on him to undertake, he would immediately get him impeached, convicted, and hanged. He no ſooner therefore had diſcharged his duties to Hymen, and heard that Heartfree had procured himſelf the liberties of the Fleet, than he reſolved to viſit him, and to propoſe a robbery with all the allurements of profit, eaſe, and ſafety.

THIS propoſal was no ſooner made, than it was anſwered by Heartfree in the following manner.

"I MIGHT have hoped the anſwer which I gave "to your former advice would have prevented me "from the danger of receiving a ſecond affront of "this kind. An affront I call it, and ſurely if it be "ſo to call a man a villain, it can be no leſs to "ſhew him you ſuppoſe him one. Indeed, it may be "wondered, how any man can arrive at the boldneſs, "I may ſay, impudence, of firſt making ſuch an "overture to another; ſurely it is ſeldom done, un-"leſs to thoſe who have previouſly betrayed ſome "ſymptoms of their own baſeneſs. If I have there-"fore ſhewn you any ſuch, theſe inſults are more "pardonable; but I aſſure you, if ſuch appear, they "diſcharge all their malignance outwardly, and re-"flect not even a ſhadow within; for to me baſeneſs "ſeems inconſiſtent with this rule, OF DOING NO "OTHER PERSON AN INJURY FROM ANY MO-"TIVE OR ON ANY CONSIDERATION WHATEVER. "This, Sir, is the rule by which I am determined "to walk, nor can that man juſtify diſbelieving "me, who will not own, he walks not by it him-"ſelf. But whether it be allowed to me or no, or "whether I feel the good effects of its being practiſed "by others, I am reſolved to maintain it: For ſurely "no man can reap a benefit from my purſuing it "equal to the comfort I myſelf enjoy: For what "a raviſhing thought! how replete with extaſy "*muſt the* conſideration be, that Almighty Good-

"neſs

" neſs is by its own nature engaged to reward me!
" How indifferent muſt ſuch a perſuaſion make a man
" to all the occurrences of this life! What trifles
" muſt he repreſent to himſelf both the enjoyments
" and the afflictions of this world! How eaſily muſt
" he acquieſce under miſſing the former, and how
" patiently will he ſubmit to the latter who is con-
" vinced that his failing of a tranſitory imperfect
" reward here, is a moſt certain argument of his ob-
" taining one permanent and compleat hereafter!
" Doſt thou think then, thou little, paltry, mean
" animal, (with ſuch language did he treat our truly
" great man) that I will forego ſuch comfortable ex-
" pectations for any pitiful reward which thou canſt
" ſuggeſt or promiſe to me; for that ſordid lucre
" for which all pains and labour are undertaken by
" the induſtrious, and all barbarities and iniquities
" committed by the vile; for a worthleſs acquiſition
" which, ſuch as thou art can poſſeſs, can give, or
" can take away?" The former part of this ſpeech occaſioned much yawning in our hero, but the latter rouſed his anger; and he was collecting his rage to anſwer, when Friendly and the conſtable, who had been ſummoned by Heartfree, on Wild's firſt appearance, entered the room, and ſeized the great man juſt as his wrath was burſting from his lips.

THE dialogue which now enſued, is not worth relating, Wild was ſoon acquainted with the reaſon of this rough treatment, and preſently conveyed before a magiſtrate.

NOTWITHSTANDING the doubts raiſed by Mr. Wild's lawyer on his examination, he inſiſting that the proceeding was improper; for that a *Writ de Homine replegiando* ſhould iſſue, and on the return of that a *Capias in Withernam*, the juſtice inclined to commitment, ſo that Wild was driven to other methods for his defence. He therefore acquainted the juſtice, that there was a young man likewiſe with him in the boat, and begged that he might be ſent for, which requeſt was accordingly granted, and the faithful Achates (Mr. Fireblood) was ſoon produced to bear teſtimony for his friend, which he did with

ſo much becoming zeal, and went through his examination with ſuch coherence (though he was forced to collect his evidence from the hints given him by Wild in the preſence of the juſtice and the accuſers) that as here was direct evidence againſt mere preſumption, our hero was moſt honourably acquitted, and poor Heartfree was charged by the juſtice, the audience, and all others, who afterwards heard the ſtory, with the blackeſt ingratitude, in attempting to take away the life of a man, to whom he had ſuch eminent obligations.

LEST ſo vaſt an effort of friendſhip as this of Fireblood's ſhould too violently ſurprize the reader in this degenerate age; it may be proper to inform him, that beſides the ties of engagement in the ſame employ, another nearer and ſtronger alliance ſubſiſted between our hero and this youth, which latter was juſt departed from the arms of the lovely Lætitia, when he received her huſband's meſſage: an inſtance which may alſo ſerve to juſtify thoſe ſtrict intercourſes of love and acquaintance, which ſo commonly ſubſiſt in modern hiſtory between the huſband and gallant, diſplay the vaſt force of friendſhip, contracted by this more honourable than legal alliance, which is thought to be at preſent one of the ſtrongeſt bonds of amity between great men, and the moſt reputable as well as eaſy way of their favour.

FOUR months had now paſſed ſince Heartfree's firſt confinement, and his affairs had begun to wear a more benign aſpect; but they were a good deal injured by this attempt on Wild (ſo dangerous is any attack on a GREAT MAN) ſeveral of his neighbours, and particularly one or two of his own trade, induſtriouſly endeavouring, from their bitter animoſity againſt ſuch kind of iniquity, to ſpread and exaggerate his ingratitude as much as poſſible; not in the leaſt ſcrupling, in the violent ardour of their indignation, to add ſome ſmall circumſtances of their own knowledge of the many obligations conferred on Heartfree by Wild. To all theſe ſcandals he quietly ſubmitted, comforting himſelf in the conſciouſneſs of his

his own innocence, and confiding in the ſure friend of juſtice to acquit him.

CHAP. XI.

A ſcheme ſo deeply laid that it ſhames all the politics of this our age; with digreſſion and ſub-digreſſion.

WILD having now, to the hatred he bore Heartfree on account of thoſe injuries he had done him, an additional ſpur from this injury received (for ſo it appeared to him, who, no more than the moſt ignorant, conſidered how truly he deſerved it) applied his utmoſt induſtry to accompliſh the ruin of one whoſe very name ſounded odious in his ears; when, luckily, a ſcheme aroſe in his imagination, which not only promiſed to effect it ſecurely; but (which pleaſed him moſt) by means of the miſchief he had already done him; and which would at once load him with the imputation of having committed what he himſelf had done to him, and would bring on him the ſevereſt puniſhment for a fact, of which he was not only innocent, but had already ſo greatly ſuffered by. And this was no other than to charge him with having conveyed away his wife, with his moſt valuable effects, in order to defraud his creditors.

HE no ſooner ſtarted this thought than he immediately reſolved on putting it into execution. What remained to conſider was only the *Quomodo*, and the perſon or tool to be employed; for the ſtage of the world differs from that in Drury-Lane principally in this; that whereas on the latter, the hero, or chief figure, is almoſt continually before your eyes, whilſt the under-actors are not ſeen above once in an evening; now, on the former, the hero, or great man, is always behind the curtain, and ſeldom or never appears, or doth any thing in his own perſon. He doth indeed, in this Grand Drama, rather perform the part of the Prompter, and doth inſtruct the well-dreſt figures, who are ſtrutting in public on the ſtage, what to ſay and do. To ſay the truth, a puppet-ſhow will illuſtrate our meaning better, where it is the maſter of the ſhow (the great man) who dances and moves

every thing; whether it be the king of Muſcovy, or whatever other potentate, alias puppet, which we behold on the ſtage; but he himſelf wiſely keeps out of ſight; for ſhould he once appear, the whole motion would be at an end. Not that any one is ignorant of his being there, or ſuppoſes that the puppets are not mere ſticks of wood, and he himſelf the ſole mover; but as this (though every one knows it) doth not appear viſibly, i. e. to their eyes, no one is aſhamed of conſenting to be impoſed upon; of helping on the Drama, by calling the ſeveral ſticks or puppets by the names which the maſter hath allotted to them, and by aſſigning to each the character which the great man is pleaſed they ſhall move in, or rather in which he himſelf is pleaſed to move them.

It would be to ſuppoſe thee, gentle reader, one of very little knowledge in this world, to imagine thou haſt never ſeen ſome of theſe puppet-ſhows, which are ſo frequently acted on the great ſtage; but though thou ſhouldſt have reſided all thy days in thoſe remote parts of this iſland, which great men ſeldom viſit; yet, if thou haſt any penetration, thou muſt have had ſome occaſions to admire both the ſolemnity of countenance in the actor, and the gravity of the ſpectator, while ſome of thoſe farces are carried on, which are acted almoſt daily in every village in the kingdom. He muſt have a very deſpicable opinion of mankind indeed, who can conceive them to be impoſed on as often as they appear to be ſo. The truth is, they are in the ſame ſituation with the readers of Romances; who, though they know the whole to be one entire fiction, nevertheleſs agree to be deceived; and as theſe find amuſement, ſo do the others find eaſe and convenience in this concurrence. But this being a ſub-digreſſion, I return to my digreſſion.

A Great Man ought to do his buſineſs by others; to employ hands, as we have before ſaid, to his purpoſes, and keep himſelf as much behind the curtain as poſſible; and though it muſt be acknowledged that two very great men, whoſe names will be both recorded in hiſtory, did, in theſe latter times, come forth themſelves on the ſtage; and did hack and hew,

and

and lay each other moſt cruelly open to the diverſion of the ſpectators; yet this muſt be mentioned rather as an example of avoidance, than imitation, and is to be aſcribed to the number of thoſe inſtances which ſerve to evince the truth of theſe maxims: *Nemo mortalium omnibus horis ſapit. Ira furor brevis eſt*, &c.

CHAP. XII.

New inſtances of Friendly's *folly*, &c.

TO return to my hiſtory, which, having reſted itſelf a little, is now ready to proceed on its journey: Fireblood was the perſon choſen by Wild for this ſervice. He had, on a late occaſion, experienced the talents of this youth for a good round perjury. He immediately, therefore, found him out, and propoſed it to him: when receiving his inſtant aſſent, they conſulted together, and ſoon framed an evidence; which, being communicated to one of the moſt bitter and ſevere creditors of Heartfree, by him laid before a magiſtrate, and atteſted by the oath of Fireblood, the juſtice granted his warrant; and Heartfree was accordingly apprehended and brought before him.

WHEN the officers came for this poor wretch, they found him meanly diverting himſelf with his little children, the younger of whom ſat on his knees, and the elder was playing at a little diſtance from him with Friendly. One of the officers, who was a very good ſort of a man, but one very laudably ſevere in his office, after acquainting Heartfree with his errand, bade him come along and be d—d, and leave thoſe little baſtards, for ſo, he ſaid, he ſuppoſed they were, for a legacy to the pariſh. Heartfree was much ſurprized at hearing there was a warrant for felony againſt him; but he ſhewed leſs concern than Friendly did in his countenance. The elder daughter, when ſhe ſaw the officer lay hold on her father, immediately quitted her play, and running to him, and burſting into tears, cry'd out: You ſhall not hurt poor Papa. One of the other ruffians offered to take the little one rudely from his knees; but Heartfree

ſtarted up, and, catching the fellow by the collar, daſhed his head ſo violently againſt the wall, that, had he had any brains, he might poſſibly have loſt them by the blow.

THE officer, like moſt of thoſe heroic ſpirits who inſult men in adverſity, had ſome prudence mixt with his zeal for juſtice. Seeing, therefore, this rough treatment of his companion, he began to purſue more gentle methods, and very civilly deſired Mr. Heartfree to go with him, ſeeing he was an officer, and obliged to execute his warrant; that he was ſorry for his misfortune, and hoped he would be acquitted. The other anſwered, he ſhould patiently ſubmit to the laws of his country, and would attend him whither he was ordered to conduct him: then, taking leave of his children with a tender kiſs, he recommended them to the care of Friendly; who promiſed to ſee them ſafe home, and then to attend him at the juſtice's, whoſe name and abode he had learnt of the conſtable.

FRIENDLY arrived at the magiſtrate's houſe juſt as that gentleman had ſigned the Mittimus againſt his friend; for the evidence of Fireblood was ſo clear and ſtrong, and the juſtice was ſo incenſed againſt Heartfree, and ſo convinced of his guilt, that he would hardly hear him ſpeak in his own defence, which the reader, perhaps, when he hears the evidence againſt him, will be leſs inclined to cenſure: For this witneſs depoſed, that he had been, by "Heartfree himſelf, employed to carry the orders of "embezzling to Wild, in order to be delivered to "his wife; that he had been afterwards preſent with "Wild and her at the inn, when they took coach "for Harwich, where ſhe ſhewed him the caſket "of jewels, and deſired him to tell her huſband, "that ſhe had fully executed his command; and this "he ſwore to have been done after Heartfree had no-"tice of the commiſſion, and in order to bring it "within that time, Fireblood, as well as Wild, ſwore "that Mrs. Heartfree lay ſeveral days concealed at "Wild's houſe before her departure for Holland."

WHEN

When Friendly found the juſtice obdurate, and that all he could ſay had no effect, nor was it any way poſſible for Heartfree to eſcape being committed to Newgate, he reſolved to accompany him thither: where, when they arrived, the turnkey would have confined Heartfree (he having no money) amongſt the common felons; but Friendly would not permit it, and advanced every ſhilling he had in his pocket, to procure a room in the Preſs-Yard for his friend, which, indeed, through the humanity of the keeper, he did at a cheap rate.

They ſpent that day together, and, in the evening, the priſoner diſmiſſed his friend, deſiring him, after many thanks for his fidelity, to be comforted on his account. "I know not, ſays he, how far the ma-"lice of my enemy may prevail; but whatever my "ſufferings are, I am convinced my innocence will "ſomewhere be rewarded. If, therefore, any fatal "accident ſhould happen to me, (for he who is in "the hands of perjury, may apprehend the worſt) my "dear Friendly, be a father to my poor children," at which words the tears guſhed from his eyes. The other begged him not to admit any ſuch apprehenſions; for that he would employ his utmoſt diligence in his ſervice, and doubted not but to ſubvert any villainous deſign laid for his deſtruction, and to make his innocence appear to the world as white as it was in his opinion.

We cannot help mentioning a circumſtance here, though we doubt it will appear very unnatural and incredible to our reader; which is, that, notwithſtanding the former character and behaviour of Heartfree, the ſtory of his embezzling was ſo far from ſurprizing his neighbours, that many of them declared they expected no better from him. Some were aſſured he could pay forty ſhillings in the pound, if he would. Others had overheard hints formerly paſs between him and Mrs. Heartfree, which had given them ſuſpicions. And, what is moſt aſtoniſhing of all is, that many of thoſe who had before cenſured him for an extravagant heedleſs fool, now no leſs

confidently abuſed him for a cunning, tricking, avaricious knave.

CHAP. XIII.

Something concerning Fireblood, which will ſurprize; and ſomewhat touching one of the Miſs Snaps, which will greatly concern the reader.

HOWEVER, notwithſtanding all theſe cenſures abroad, and in deſpight of all his misfortunes at home, Heartfree in Newgate enjoyed a quiet, undiſturbed repoſe; while our hero, nobly diſdaining reſt, lay ſleepleſs all night; partly from the apprehenſions of Mrs. Heartfree's return before he had executed his ſcheme; and partly from a ſuſpicion leſt Fireblood ſhould betray him; of whoſe infidelity he had, nevertheleſs, no other cauſe to maintain any fear, but from his knowing him to be an accompliſhed raſcal, as the vulgar term it, a complete GREAT MAN in our language. And indeed, to confeſs the truth, theſe doubts were not without ſome foundation; for the very ſame thought unluckily ent.red the head of that noble youth, who conſidered, whether he might not poſſibly ſell himſelf for ſome advantage to the other ſide, as he had yet no promiſe from Wild; but this was, by the ſagacity of the latter, prevented in the morning with a profuſion of promiſes, which ſhewed him to be of the moſt generous temper in the world, with which Fireblood was extremely well ſatisfied; and made uſe of ſo many proteſtations of his faithfulneſs, that he convinced Wild of the juſtice of his ſuſpicions.

AT this time an accident happened, which, though it did not immediately affect our hero, we cannot avoid relating, as it occaſioned great confuſion in his family, as well as in the family of Snap. It is indeed a calamity highly to be lamented, when it ſtains untainted blood, and happens to an honourable houſe. An injury never to be repaired. A blot never to be wiped out. A ſore never to be healed. To detain my reader no longer: Miſs Theodoſia Snap was now ſafely delivered of a male-infant, the product of an amour

amour which that beautiful (O that I could ſay, virtuous) creature had with the Count.

Mr. Wild and his lady were at breakfaſt, when Mr. Snap, with all the agonies of deſpair both in his voice and countenance, brought them this melancholy news. Our hero, who had (as we have ſaid) wonderful good-nature when his greatneſs or intereſt was not concerned, inſtead of reviling his ſiſter-in-law, aſked with a ſmile: "Who was the father?" But the chaſte Lætitia, we repeat the chaſte, for well did ſhe now deſerve that epithet; received it in another manner. She fell into the utmoſt fury at the relation, reviled her ſiſter in the bittereſt terms, and vowed ſhe would never ſee nor ſpeak to her more. Then burſt into tears, and lamented over her father, that ſuch diſhonour ſhould ever happen to him and herſelf. At length ſhe fell ſeverely on her huſband, for the light treatment which he gave this fatal accident. She told him, he was unworthy of the honour he enjoyed, of marrying into a chaſte family. That ſhe looked on it as an affront to her virtue. That if he had married one of the naughty huſſies of the town, he could have behaved to her in no other manner. She concluded, with deſiring her father to make an example of the ſlut, and to turn her out of doors; for that ſhe would not otherwiſe enter his houſe, being reſolved never to ſet her foot within the ſame threſhold with the trollop, whom ſhe deteſted ſo much the more, becauſe (which was perhaps true) ſhe was her own ſiſter.

So violent, and indeed ſo outrageous was this chaſte lady's love of virtue, that ſhe could not forgive a ſingle ſlip (indeed the only one Theodoſia had ever made) in her own ſiſter, in a ſiſter who loved her, and to whom ſhe owed a thouſand obligations.

Perhaps the ſeverity of Mr. Snap, who greatly felt the injury done to the honour of his family, would have relented, had not the pariſh-officers been extremely preſſing on this occaſion, and, for want of ſecurity, conveyed the unhappy young lady to a place, the name of which, for the honour of the Snaps, to whom our hero was ſo nearly allied, we bury in eter-

nal oblivion; where ſhe ſuffered ſo much correction for her crime, that the good-natured reader of the male-kind may be inclined to compaſſionate her, at leaſt to imagine ſhe was ſufficiently puniſhed for a fault, which, with ſubmiſſion to the chaſte Lætitia, and all other ſtrictly virtuous ladies, it ſhould be either leſs criminal in a woman to commit, or more ſo in a man to ſolicit her to it.

But to return to our hero, who was a living and ſtrong inſtance, that human greatneſs and happineſs are not always inſeparable. He was under a continual alarm of frights, and fears, and jealouſies. He thought every man he beheld wore a knife for his throat, and a pair of ſciſſars for his purſe. As for his own gang particularly, he was thoroughly convinced there was not a ſingle man amongſt them, who would not, for the value of five ſhillings, bring him to the gallows. Theſe apprehenſions ſo conſtantly broke his reſt, and kept him ſo aſſiduouſly on his guard, to fruſtrate and circumvent any deſigns which might be forming againſt him; that his condition, to any other than the glorious eye of ambition, might ſeem rather deplorable, than the object of envy or deſire.

CHAP. XIV.

In which our Hero makes a ſpeech well worthy to be celebrated; and the behaviour of one of the gang perhaps more unnatural than any other part of this hiſtory.

There was in the gang a man named Blueſkin; one of thoſe merchants who trade in dead oxen, ſheep, &c. in ſhort, what the vulgar call a Butcher. This gentleman had two qualities of a great man, viz. undaunted courage, and an abſolute contempt of thoſe ridiculous diſtinctions of *Meum* and *Tuum* which would cauſe endleſs diſputes, did not the law happily decide them by converting both into *Suum*. The common form of exchanging property by trade ſeemed to him too tedious; he therefore reſolved to quit the mercantile profeſſion, and, falling acquainted with ſome of Mr. Wild's people, he provided

vided himſelf with arms, and enlifted of the gang. In which he behaved for ſome time with great decency and order, and ſubmitted to accept ſuch ſhare of the booty with the reſt, as our hero allotted him.

But this ſubſerviency agreed ill with his temper; for we ſhould have before remembered a third heroic quality, namely, ambition, which was no inconſiderable part of his compoſition; one day, therefore, having robbed a gentleman at Windſor of a gold-watch; which, on its being advertiſed in the news-paper, with a conſiderable reward, was demanded of him by Wild, he peremptorily refuſed to deliver it.

"How, Mr. Blueſkin! ſays Wild, you will not "deliver the watch? No, Mr. Wild, anſwered he; "I have taken it, and will keep it; or, if I diſpoſe of "it, I will diſpoſe of it myſelf, and keep the money "for which I ſell it. Sure, replied Wild, you have "not the aſſurance to pretend you have any property "or right in this watch? I am certain, returned "Blueſkin, whether I have any right in it or no, you "can prove none. I will undertake, cries the other, "to ſhew I have an abſolute right to it, and that "by the laws of our gang, of which I am providen-"tially at the head. I know not who put you at "the head of it, cries Blueſkin; but thoſe who did, "certainly did it for their own good, that you might "conduct them the better in their robberies, inform "them of the richeſt booties, prevent ſurprizes, pack "juries, bribe evidence, and ſo contribute to their "benefit and ſafety; and not to convert all their "labour and hazard to your own benefit and ad-"vantage. You are greatly miſtaken, Sir, anſwered "Wild; you are talking of a legal ſociety, where "the chief magiſtrate is always choſen for the pub-"lic good, which, as we ſee in all the legal ſocieties "of the world, he conſtantly conſults, daily contri-"buting, by his ſuperior ſkill, to their proſperity, "and not ſacrificing their good to his own wealth, "or pleaſure, or humour: but in an illegal ſociety "or gang, as this of ours, it is otherwiſe; for who "would be at the head of a gang, unleſs for his own

"in-

" intereſt? And without a head, you know, you " cannot ſubſiſt. Nothing but a head, and obedience " to that head, can preſerve a gang a moment from " deſtruction. It is abſolutely better for you to con- " tent yourſelves with a moderate reward, and enjoy " that in ſafety at the diſpoſal of your chief, than " to engroſs the whole with the hazard to which you " will be liable without his protection. And ſurely, " there is none in the whole gang, who hath leſs " reaſon to complain than you; you have taſted of " my favours; witneſs that piece of ribbon you wear " in your hat, with which I dubbed you captain.— " Therefore, pray captain, deliver the watch.—— " D—n your cajoling, ſays Blueſkin: Do you think " I value myſelf on this bit of ribbon, which I could " have bought myſelf for ſix-pence, and have worn " without your leave? Do you imagine I think my- " ſelf a captain, becauſe you, whom I know not em- " powered to make one, call me ſo? The name of " captain is but a ſhadow: the men and the ſalary " are the ſubſtance: and I am not to be bubbled " with a ſhadow. I will be called captain no lon- " ger, and he who flatters me by that name, I ſhall " think affronts me, and I will knock him down, I " aſſure you.——Did ever man talk ſo unreaſon- " ably? cries Wild. Are you not reſpected as a " captain by the whole gang ſince my dubbing you " ſo! But it is the ſhadow only, it ſeems; and you " will knock a man down for affronting you, who " calls you captain! Might not a man as reaſonably " tell a miniſter of ſtate: *Sir, you have given me the* " *ſhadow only. The ribbon or the bauble, that you gave* " *me, implies that I have either ſignalized myſelf, by* " *ſome great action, for the benefit and glory of my coun-* " *try; or at leaſt that I am deſcended from thoſe who* " *have done ſo. I know myſelf to be a ſcoundrel,* " *and ſo have been thoſe few anceſtors I can remember,* " *or have ever heard of. Therefore I am reſolved to* " *knock the firſt man down, who calls me Sir, or Right* " *Honourable.* But all great and wiſe men think " themſelves ſufficiently repaid by what procures

" them

" them honour and precedence in the gang, without " enquiring into ſubſtance; nay, if a title, or a fea- " ther, be equal to this purpoſe, they are ſubſtance, " and not mere ſhadows. But I have not time to ar- " gue with you at preſent, ſo give me the watch " without any more deliberation. I am no more a " friend to deliberation than yourſelf, anſwered " Blueſkin, and ſo I tell you once for all, by G— " I never will give you the watch, no, nor will I " ever hereafter ſurrender any part of my booty. " I won it, and I will wear it. Take your piſtols " yourſelf, and go out on the highway, and don't " lazily think to fatten yourſelf with the dangers " and pains of other people." At which words he departed in a fierce mood, and repaired to the tavern uſed by the gang, where he had appointed to meet ſome of his acquaintance, whom he informed of what had paſſed between him and Wild, and adviſed them all to follow his example; which they all readily agreed to, and Mr. Wild's D—tion was the univerſal toaſt; in drinking bumpers to which they had finiſhed a large bowl of punch, when a conſtable, with a numerous attendance, and Wild at their head, entered the room, and ſeized on Blueſkin, whom his companions, when they ſaw our hero, did not dare attempt to reſcue. The watch was found upon him, which, together with Wild's information, was more than ſufficient to commit him to Newgate.

In the evening, Wild, and the reſt of thoſe who had been drinking with Blueſkin, met at the tavern, where nothing was to be ſeen but the profoundeſt ſubmiſſion to their leader. They vilified and abuſed Blueſkin as much as they had before abuſed our hero, and now repeated the ſame toaſt, only changing the name of Wild into that of Blueſkin. All agreeing with Wild, that the watch found in his pocket, and which muſt be a fatal evidence againſt him, was a juſt judgment on his diſobedience and revolt.

Thus did this Great Man, by a reſolute and timely example (for he went directly to the juſtice when Blueſkin left him) quell one of the moſt dangerous con-

conſpiracies which could poſſibly ariſe in a gang; and which, had it been permitted one day's growth, would inevitably have ended in his deſtruction; ſo much doth it behove all great men to be eternally on their guard, and expeditious in the execution of their purpoſes; while none but the weak and honeſt can indulge themſelves in remiſſneſs or repoſe.

THE Achates, Fireblood, had been preſent at both theſe meetings; but though he had a little too haſtily concurred in curſing his friend, and in vowing his perdition; yet now he ſaw all that ſcheme diſſolved, he returned to his integrity; of which he gave an inconteſtable proof, by informing Wild of the meaſures which had been concerted againſt him. In which, he ſaid, he had pretended to acquieſce, in order the better to betray them; and this, as he afterwards confeſſed on his death-bed, at Tyburn, was only a copy of his countenance: For that he was, at that time, as ſincere and hearty in his oppoſition to Wild as any of his companions.

OUR hero received Fireblood's information with a very placid countenance. He ſaid, as the gang had ſeen their errors, and repented, nothing was more noble than forgiveneſs. But though he was pleaſed modeſtly to aſcribe this to his lenity, it really aroſe from much more noble and political principles. He conſidered that it would be dangerous to attempt the puniſhment of ſo many; beſides, he flattered himſelf that fear would keep them in order; and indeed Fireblood had told him nothing more than he knew before, viz. that they were all complete Prigs, whom he was to govern by their fears, and in whom he was to place no more confidence than was neceſſary, and to watch them with the utmoſt caution and circumſpection: for a rogue, he wiſely ſaid, like gunpowder, muſt be uſed with caution; ſince both are altogether as liable to blow up the party himſelf who uſes them, as to execute his miſchievous purpoſe againſt ſome other perſon or animal.

WE will now repair to Newgate, it being the place where moſt of the great men of this hiſtory are haſten-

haſtening as faſt as poſſible; and to confeſs the truth, it is a caſtle very far from being an improper, or miſbecoming habitation for any great man whatever. And as this ſcene will continue during the reſidue of our hiſtory, we ſhall open it with a new book; and ſhall, therefore, take this opportunity of cloſing our third.

THE

THE HISTORY OF THE LIFE OF THE LATE Mr. JONATHAN WILD THE GREAT.

BOOK IV.

CHAP. I.

A ſentiment of the Ordinary's, worthy to be written in letters of gold; a very extraordinary inſtance of folly in Friendly; *and a dreadful accident which befel our hero.*

HEARTFREE had not been long in Newgate before his frequent converſation with his children, and other inſtances of a good heart, which betrayed themſelves in his actions and converſation, created an opinion in all about him that he was one of the ſilleſt fellows in the univerſe. The ordinary himſelf, a very ſagacious as well as very worthy perſon, declared that he was a curſed rogue, but no conjurer.

WHAT indeed might induce the former, *i. e.* the roguiſh part of this opinion in the ordinary was a wicked ſentiment which Heartfree one day diſcloſed in converſation, and which we, who are truly orthodox, will not pretend to juſtify, *that he believed a ſincere* Turk *would be ſaved.* To this the good man, with becoming zeal and indignation, anſwered, *I know not what*

what may become of a ſincere Turk, *but if this be your perſuaſion, I pronounce it impoſſible you ſhould be ſaved. No, Sir, ſo far from a ſincere* Turk's *being within the pale of ſalvation, neither will any ſincere* Preſbyterian, Anabaptiſt, *nor* Quaker *whatever, be ſaved.*

But neither did the one or the other part of this character prevail on Friendly to abandon his old maſter. He ſpent his whole time with him, except only thoſe hours when he was abſent for his ſake, in procuring evidence for him againſt his trial, which was now ſhortly to come on. Indeed this young man was the only comfort, beſides a clear conſcience, and the hopes beyond the grave, which this poor wretch had; for the ſight of his children was like one of thoſe alluring pleaſures which men in ſome diſeaſes indulge themſelves often fatally in, which at once flatter and heighten their malady.

Friendly being one day preſent while Heartfree was, with tears in his eyes, embracing his eldeſt daughter, and lamenting the hard fate to which he feared he ſhould be obliged to leave her, ſpoke to him thus. "I have long obſerved with admiration the "magnanimity with which you go thro' your own "misfortunes, and the ſteady countenance with which "you look on death. I have obſerved that all your "agonies ariſe from the thoughts of parting with "your children, and of leaving them in a diſtreſt "condition; now, tho' I hope all your fears will "prove ill-grounded, yet, that I may relieve you as "much as poſſible from them, be aſſured, that as "nothing can give me more real miſery, than to ob"ſerve ſo tender and loving a concern in a maſter, "to whoſe goodneſs I owe ſo many obligations, and "whom I ſo ſincerely love, ſo nothing can afford me "equal pleaſure with my contributing to leſſen or to "remove it. Be convinced, therefore, if you can "place any confidence in my promiſe, that I will em"ploy my little fortune, which you know to be not "entirely inconſiderable, in the ſupport of this your "little family. Should any misfortune, which I pray "heaven avert, happen to you before you have better "provided for theſe little ones, I will be myſelf their

"father,

" father, nor ſhall either of them ever know diſtreſs, " if it be any way in my power to prevent it. Your " younger daughter I will provide for, and as for my " little prattler, your elder, as I never yet thought " of any woman for a wife, I will receive her as ſuch " at your hands; nor will I ever relinquiſh her for " another." Heartfree flew to his friend, and embraced him with raptures of acknowledgment. He vowed to him that he had eaſed every anxious thought of his mind but one, and that he muſt carry with him out of that world. " O Friendly, (cried he) it is my " concern for that beſt of women, whom I hate my- " ſelf for ever having cenſured in my opinion. O " Friendly, thou didſt know her goodneſs, yet, ſure " her perfect character none but myſelf was ever ac- " quainted with. She had every perfection both of " mind and body, which heaven hath indulged to " her whole ſex, and poſſeſſed all in a higher excel- " lence than nature ever indulged to another in any " ſingle virtue. Can I bear the loſs of ſuch a wo- " man? Can I bear the apprehenſions of what miſ- " chiefs that villain may have done to her, of which " death is perhaps the lighteſt?" Friendly gently interrupted him as ſoon as he ſaw an opportunity, endeavouring to comfort him on this head likewiſe, by magnifying every circumſtance which could poſſibly afford any hope of his ſeeing her again.

By this kind of behaviour, in which the young man examplified ſo uncommon an height of friendſhip, he had ſoon obtained in the caſtle the character of as odd and ſilly a fellow as his maſter. Indeed, they were both the by-word, laughing-ſtock, and contempt of the whole place.

The ſeſſions now came on at the Old Bailey. The grand jury at Hicks's-hall had found the bill of indictment againſt Heartfree, and on the ſecond day of the ſeſſions he was brought to his trial; where, notwithſtanding the utmoſt efforts of Friendly, and of the honeſt old female ſervant, the circumſtances of the fact corroborating the evidence of Fireblood, as well as that of Wild, who counterfeited the moſt artful *reluctance at* appearing againſt his old Friend Heartfree, *the jury found* the priſoner guilty.

Wild

WILD had now accompliſhed his ſcheme; for as to what remained, it was certainly unavoidable, ſeeing that Heartfree was entirely void of intereſt with the great, and was beſides convicted on a ſtatute, the inſtingers of which could hope no parrdon.

THE cataſtrophe, to which our hero had reduced this wretch, was ſo wonderful an effort of greatneſs, that it probably made fortune envious of her own darling; but whether it was from this envy, or only from that known inconſtancy and weakneſs ſo often and judiciouſly remarked in that lady's temper, who frequently lifts men to the ſummit of human greatneſs, only

ut lapſu graviore ruant;

certain it is, ſhe now began to meditate miſchief againſt Wild, who ſeems to have come to that period, at which all heroes have arrived, and which ſhe was reſolved they never ſhould tranſcend. In ſhort, there ſeems to be a certain meaſure of miſchief and iniquity, which every great man is to fill up, and then fortune looks on him of no more uſe than a ſilk-worm, whoſe bottom is ſpun, and deſerts him. Mr. Blueſkin was convicted the ſame day of robbery, by our hero, an unkindneſs, which tho' he had drawn on himſelf, and neceſſitated him to, he took greatly amiſs; as Wild therefore was ſtanding near him, with that diſregard and indifference which great men are too careleſsly inclined to have for thoſe whom they have ruined; Blueſkin privily drawing a knife, thruſt the ſame into the body of our hero with ſuch violence, that all who ſaw it concluded he had done his buſineſs. And indeed, had not fortune, not ſo much out of love to our hero, as from a fixed reſolution to accompliſh a certain purpoſe, of which we have formerly given a hint, carefully placed his guts out of the way, he muſt have fallen a ſacrifice to the wrath of his enemy, which, as he afterwards ſaid, he did not deſerve; for had he been contented to have robbed and only ſubmitted to give him the booty, he might have ſtill continued ſafe and unimpeached in the gang; but ſo it was, that the knife miſſing thoſe noble parts (the nobleſt of many)

many) the guts, perforated only the hollow of his belly, and cauſed no other harm than an immoderate effuſion of blood, of which, tho' it at preſent weakened him, he ſoon after recovered.

THIS accident, however, was in the end atttended with worſe conſequences: for, as very few people (thoſe greateſt of all men, abſolute princes, excepted) attempt to cut the thread of human life, like the fatal ſiſters, merely out of wantonneſs and for their diverſion, but rather by ſo doing, propoſe to themſelves the acquiſition of ſome future good, or the avenging ſome paſt evil; and as the former of theſe motives did not appear probable, it put inquiſitive perſons on examining into the latter. Now, as the vaſt ſchemes of Wild, when they were diſcovered, however great in their nature, ſeemed to ſome perſons like the projects of moſt other ſuch perſons, rather to be calculated for the glory of the great man himſelf, than to redound to the general good of ſociety: deſigns began to be laid by ſeveral of thoſe who thought it principally their duty, to put a ſtop to the future progreſs of our hero, and a learned judge particularly, a great enemy to this kind of greatneſs, procured a clauſe in an act of parliament as a trap for Wild, which he ſoon after fell into. By this law it was made capital in a Prig to ſteal with the hands of other people. A law ſo plainly calculated for the deſtruction of all priggiſh greatneſs, that it was indeed impoſſible for our hero to avoid it.

CHAP. II.

A ſhort hint concerning popular ingratitude. Mr. Wild's *arrival in the caſtle, with other occurrences to be found in no other hiſtory.*

IF we had any leiſure, we would here digreſs a little on that ingratitude, which ſo many writers have obſerved to ſpring up in the people in all free governments towards their great men; who, while they have been conſulting the good of the public, by raiſing their own greatneſs, in which the whole body (as the kingdom of France thinks itſelf in the glory

of

of their grand monarch) was ſo deeply concerned, have been ſometimes ſacrificed by thoſe very people for whoſe glory the ſaid great men were ſo induſtriouſly at work: and this from a fooliſh zeal for a certain ridiculous imaginary thing called Liberty, to which great men are obſerved to have a great animoſity.

THIS law had been promulgated a very little time, when Mr. Wild, having received from ſome dutiful members of the gang, a valuable piece of goods, did, for a conſideration ſomewhat ſhort of its original price, re-convey it to the right owner; for which fact being ungrateſully informed againſt by the ſaid owner, he was ſurprized in his own houſe, and being overpower'd by numbers, was hurried before a magiſtrate, and by him committed to that caſtle, which, ſuitable as it is to greatneſs, we do not chuſe to name too often in our hiſtory, and where many great men, at this time, happened to be aſſembled.

THE governor, or, as the law more honourably calls him, keeper of this caſtle, was Mr. Wild's old friend and acquaintance. This made the latter greatly ſatisfied with the place of his confinement, as he promiſed himſelf not only a kind reception and handſome accommodation there, but even to obtain his liberty from him, if he thought it neceſſary to deſire it: but alas! he was deceived, his old friend knew him no longer, and refuſed to ſee him, and the lieutenant governor inſiſted on as high garniſh for fetters, and as exorbitant a price for lodging, as if he had had a fine gentleman in cuſtody for murder, or any other genteel crime.

TO confeſs a melancholy truth, it is a circumſtance much to be lamented, that there is no abſolute dependance on the friendſhip of great men. An obſervation which hath been frequently made by thoſe who have lived in courts or in Newgate, or in any other place ſet apart for the habitation of ſuch perſons.

THE ſecond day of his confinement he was greatly ſurprized at receiving a viſit from his wife; and much more ſo, when, inſtead of a countenance ready to inſult him, the only motive to which he could aſcribe

her preſence, he ſaw the tears trickling down her lovely cheeks. He embraced her with the utmoſt mark of affection, and declared he could hardly regret his confinement, ſince it had produced ſuch an inſtance of the happineſs he enjoyed in her, whoſe fidelity to him on this occaſion would, he believed, make him the envy of moſt huſbands, even in Newgate. He then begged her to dry her eyes, and be comforted; for that matters might go better with him than ſhe expected. "No, no (ſays ſhe) I am certain "you will be found guilty *Death*. I knew what it "would always come to. I told you it was impoſſible "to carry on ſuch a trade long; but you would not "be adviſed, and now you ſee the conſequence, now "you repent when it is too late. All the comfort I "ſhall have when you are * *nubbed* is, that I gave "you good advice. If you had always gone out by "yourſelf, as I would have had you, you might have "robbed on to the end of the chapter; but you was "wiſer than all the world, or rather lazier, and ſee "what your lazineſs is come to—to the † *cheat*, for "thither you will go now, that's infallible. And a "juſt judgment on you for following your headſtrong "will; I am the only perſon to be pitied, poor I, "who ſhall be ſcandalized for your fault. *There goes "ſhe whoſe huſt and was hanged:* methinks I hear them "crying ſo already." At which words ſhe burſt into tears. He could not then forbear chiding her for this unneceſſary concern on his account, and begged her not to trouble him any more. She anſwered with ſome ſpirit: "On your account, and be d—d to you! No, "if the old cull of a juſtice had not ſent me hither, I "believe it would have been long enough before I "ſhould have come hither to ſee after you: d—n me, "I am committed for the ‡ *filing-lay*, man, and we "ſhall be both *nubbed* together. I' faith, my dear, "it almoſt makes me amends for being *nubbed* myſelf "to have the pleaſure of ſeeing thee *nubbed* too. Indeed, my dear, (anſwered Wild) it is what I have "long wiſhed for thee; but I do not deſire to bear

* The cant word for *hanging*. † The *gallows*. ‡ *Picking pockets*.

"thee

" thee company, and I have ſtill hopes to have the " pleaſure of ſeeing you go without me; at leaſt I " will have the pleaſure to be rid of you now." And ſo ſaying, he ſeized her by the waiſt, and with ſtrong arm flung her out of the room; but not before ſhe had with her nails left a bloody memorial on his cheek: and thus this fond couple parted.

WILD had ſcarce recovered himſelf from the uneaſineſs into which this unwelcome viſit, proceeding from the diſagreeable fondneſs of his wife, had thrown him, than the faithful Achates appeared. The preſence of this youth was indeed a cordial to his ſpirits. He received him with open arms, and expreſſed the utmoſt ſatisfaction in the fidelity of his friendſhip, which ſo far exceeded the faſhion of the times, and ſaid many things, which we have forgot, on the occaſion; but we remember they all tended to the praiſe of Fireblood, whoſe modeſty, at length, put a ſtop to the torrent of compliments, by aſſerting that he had done no more than his duty, and that he ſhould have deteſted himſelf, could he have forſaken his friend in his adverſity: and after many proteſtations, that he came the moment he heard of his misfortune, he aſked him if he could be of any ſervice. Wild anſwered, ſince he had ſo kindly propoſed that queſtion, he muſt ſay he ſhould be obliged to him, if he could lend him a few guineas; for that he was very *ſeedy*. Fireblood replied, that he was greatly unhappy in not having it then in his power, adding many hearty oaths, that he had not a farthing of money in his pocket, which was, indeed, ſtrictly true; for he had only a bank-note, which he had that evening purloined from a gentleman in the play-houſe paſſage. He then aſked for his wife, to whom, to ſpeak truly, the viſit was intended, her confinement being the misfortune of which he had juſt heard; for, as for that of Mr. Wild himſelf, he had known it from the firſt minute, without ever intending of trouble him with his company. Being informed therefore of the viſit which had lately happened, he reproved Wild for his cruel treatment of that good creature; then taking as ſudden a leave as he civilly could of the gentleman, he haſtened

to comfort his lady, who received him with great kindneſs.

CHAP. III.

Curious anecdotes relating to the hiſtory of Newgate.

THERE reſided in the caſtle at the ſame time with Mr. Wild, one Roger Johnſon, a very GREAT MAN, who had long been at the head of all the *Prigs* in Newgate, and had raiſed contributions on them. He examined into the nature of their defence, procured and inſtructed their evidence, and made himſelf, at leaſt in their opinion, ſo neceſſary to them, that the whole fate of Newgate ſeemed entirely to depend upon him.

WILD had not been long in confinement before he began to oppoſe this man. He repreſented him to the *Prigs* as a fellow, who, under the plauſible pretence of aſſiſting their cauſes, was in reality undermining THE LIBERTIES OF NEWGATE. He at firſt threw out certain ſly hints and inſinuations; but having, by degrees, formed a party againſt Roger, he one day aſſembled them together, and ſpoke to them in the following florid manner.

Friends and fellow-citizens,

"THE cauſe which I am to mention to you this "day, is of ſuch mighty importance, that when I "conſider my own ſmall abilities, I tremble with an "apprehenſion, leſt your ſafety may be rendered pre- "carious by the weakneſs of him who hath under- "taken to repreſent to you your danger. Gentlemen, "the liberty of Newgate is at ſtake: your privileges "have been long undermined, and are now openly "violated by one man; by one who hath engroſſed "to himſelf the whole conduct of your trials, under "colour of which he exacts what contributions on "you he pleaſes; but are thoſe ſums appropriated "to the uſes for which they are raiſed? Your frequent "convictions at the Old Bailey, thoſe depredations "of juſtice, muſt too ſenſibly and ſorely demonſtrate

"the

" the contrary. What evidence doth he ever produce " for the priſoner, which the priſoner himſelf could " not have provided, and often better inſtructed? " How many noble youths have there been loſt, when " a ſingle *Alibi* would have ſaved them! Should I be " ſilent, nay, could your own injuries want a tongue " to remonſtrate, the very breath, which by his ne- " glect hath been ſtopped at the *Cheat*, would cry out " loudly againſt him. Nor is the exorbitancy of his " plunders viſible only in the dreadful conſequences " it hath produced to the *Prigs*, nor glares it only in " the miſeries brought on them: it blazes forth in " the more deſirable effects it hath wrought for him- " ſelf, in the rich perquiſites acquired by it: witneſs " that ſilk night-gown, that robe of ſhame, which, " to his eternal diſhonour, he publickly wears; that " gown, which I will not ſcruple to call the winding- " ſheet of the liberties of Newgate. Is there a *Prig* " who hath the intereſt and honour of Newgate ſo " little at heart, that he can refrain from bluſhing " when he beholds that trophy, purchaſed with the " breath of ſo many *Prigs!* Nor is this all. His " waiſtcoat embroidered with ſilk, and his velvet cap, " bought with the ſame price, are enſigns of the " ſame diſgrace. Some would think the rags which " covered his nakedneſs, when firſt he was committed " hither, well exchanged for theſe gaudy trappings; " but in my eye, no exchange can be profitable when " diſhonour is the condition. If therefore, New- " gate—" Here the only copy which we could pro- cure of this ſpeech breaks off abruptly; however, we can aſſure the reader, from very authentic in- formation, that he concluded with adviſing the *Prigs* to put their affairs into other hands. After which, one of his party, as had been before concerted, in a very long ſpeech recommended him (Wild himſelf) to their choice.

NEWGATE was divided into parties on this occa- ſion; the *Prigs* on each ſide repreſenting their chief or Great Man to be the only perſon by whom the af- fairs of Newgate could be managed with ſafety and advantage. The *Prigs* had indeed very incompatible

intereſts; for whereas the ſupporters of Johnſon, who was in poſſeſſion of the plunder of Newgate, were admitted to ſome ſhare under their leader; ſo the abettors of Wild, had, on his promotion, the ſame views of dividing ſome part of the ſpoil among themſelves. It is no wonder, therefore, they were both ſo warm on each ſide. What may ſeem more remarkable, was, that the debtors, who were entirely unconcerned in the diſpute, and who were the deſtined plunder of both parties, ſhould intereſt themſelves with the utmoſt violence, ſome on behalf of Wild, and others in favour of Johnſon. So that all Newgate reſounded with WILD *for ever!* JOHNSON *for ever!* And the poor debtors re-echoed *the liberties of Newgate!* which, in the cant language, ſignifies *Plunder*, as loudly as the thieves themſelves. In ſhort, ſuch quarrels and animoſities happened between them, that they ſeemed rather the people of two countries long at war with each other, than the inhabitants of the ſame caſtle.

WILD's party at length prevailed, and he ſucceeded to the place and power of Johnſon, whom he preſently ſtript of all his finery; but when it was propoſed, that he ſhould ſell it, and divide the money for the good of the whole; he waved that motion, ſaying, it was not yet time, that he ſhould find a better opportunity, that the cloaths wanted cleaning, with many other pretences, and, within two days, to the ſurprize of many, he appeared in them himſelf; for which he vouchſafed no other apology than that they fitted him much better than they did Johnſon, and that they became him in a much more elegant manner.

THIS behaviour in Wild greatly incenſed the debtors, particularly thoſe by whoſe means he had been promoted. They grumbled extremely, and vented great indignation againſt Wild; when one day a very grave man, and one of much authority among them, beſpake them as follows:

"NOTHING ſure can be more juſtly ridiculous "than the conduct of thoſe who ſhould lay the "lamb in the wolf's way, and then ſhould lament "*his* being devoured. What a wolf is in a ſheep-

" fold, a great man is in ſociety. Now, when one " wolf is in poſſeſſion of a ſheepfold, how little would " it avail the ſimple flock to expel him, and place " another in his ſtead? Of the ſame benefit to us is " the overthrowing one *Prig* in favour of another. " And for what other advantage was your ſtruggle? " Did you not all know, that Wild and his followers " were *Prigs*, as well as Johnſon and his? What " then could the contention be among ſuch, but that " which you have now diſcovered it to have been? " Perhaps ſome would ſay, Is it then our duty tamely " to ſubmit to the rapine of the *Prig* who now plun- " ders us, for fear of an exchange? Surely no: but " I anſwer, It is better to ſhake the plunder off, than " to exchange the plunderer. And by what means " can we effect this, but by a total change in our " manners? Every *Prig* is a ſlave. His own *Prig-* " *giſh* deſires which enſlave him, themſelves be- " tray him to the tyranny of others. To preſerve, " therefore, the liberty of Newgate, is to change the " manners of Newgate. Let us, therefore, who are " confined here for debt only, ſeparate ourſelves en- " tirely from the *Prigs*; neither drink with them, " nor converſe with them. Let us, at the ſame " time, ſeparate ourſelves father from *Priggiſm* it- " ſelf: inſtead of being ready, on every opportunity, " to pillage each other, let us be content with our " honeſt ſhare of the common bounty, and with the " acquiſition of our own induſtry. When we ſepa- " rate from the *Prigs*; let us enter into a cloſer alli- " ance with one another. Let us conſider ourſelves " all as members of one community, to the public " good of which we are to ſacrifice our private views; " not to give up the intereſt of the whole for every " little pleaſure or profit which ſhall accrue to our- " ſelves. Liberty is conſiſtent with no degree of ho- " neſty inferior to this, and the community where " this abounds, no *Prig* will have the impudence or " audaciouſneſs to endeavour to enſlave; or if he " ſhould, his own deſtruction would be the only con- " ſequence of his attempt. But while one man pur- " ſues his ambition, another his intereſt, another his

" ſafety; while one hath a roguery (a *Priggiſm* they " here call it) to commit, and another a roguery to " defend, they muſt naturally fly to the favour and " protection of thoſe, who have power to give them " what they deſire, and to defend them from what " they fear; nay, in this view it becomes their in- " tereſt to promote this power in their patrons. Now, " gentlemen, when we are no longer *Prigs*, we ſhall " no longer have theſe fears or theſe deſires. What " remains, therefore, for us, but to reſolve bravely " to lay aſide our *Priggiſm*, our roguery, in plainer " words, and preſerve our liberty, or to give up the " latter in the preſervation and preference of the for- " mer."

THIS ſpeech was received with much applauſe; however, Wild continued as before to levy contributions among the priſoners, to apply the garniſh to his own uſe, and to ſtrut openly in the ornaments which he had ſtript from Johnſon. To ſpeak ſincerely, there was more bravado than real uſe or advantage in theſe trappings. As for the night-gown, its outſide indeed made a glittering tinſel appearance, but it kept him not warm; nor could the finery of it do him much honour, ſince every one knew it did not properly belong to him; as to the waiſtcoat it fitted him very ill, being infinitely too big for him; and the cap was ſo heavy, that it made his head ach. Thus theſe cloaths, which, perhaps, (as they preſented the idea of their miſery more ſenſibly to the people's eyes) brought him more envy, hatred, and detraction, than all his deeper impoſitions and more real advantages; afforded very little uſe or honour to the weaver; nay, could ſcarce ſerve to amuſe his own vanity, when this was cool enough to reflect with the leaſt ſeriouſneſs. And, ſhould I ſpeak in the language of a man who eſtimated human happineſs without regard to that greatneſs, which we have ſo laborioufly endeavoured to paint in this hiſtory, it is probable he never took (*i. e.* robbed the priſoners of) a ſhilling, which he himſelf did not pay too dear for.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

The dead-warrant arrives for Heartfree; *on which occaſion* Wild *betrays ſome human weakneſs.*

THE dead-warrant, as it is called, now came down to Newgate for the execution of Heartfree among the reſt of the priſoners. And here the reader muſt excuſe us, who profeſs to draw natural, not perfect characters, and to record the truths of hiſtory, not the extravagancies of romance, while we relate a weakneſs in Wild, of which we are ourſelves aſhamed, and which we would willingly have concealed, could we have preſerved, at the ſame time, that ſtrict attachment to truth and impartiality, which we have profeſſed in recording the annals of this great man. Know then, reader, that this dead-warrant did not affect Heartfree, who was to ſuffer a ſhameful death by it, with half the concern it gave Wild, who had been the occaſion of it. He had been a little ſtruck the day before, on ſeeing the children carried away in tears from their father. This ſight brought the remembrance of ſome ſlight injuries he had done the father, to his mind, which he endeavoured, as much as poſſible, to obliterate; but when one of the keepers (I ſhould ſay lieutenants of the caſtle) repeated Heartfree's name among thoſe of the malefactors who were to ſuffer within a few days, the blood forſook his countenance, and, in a cold ſtill ſtream, mov'd heavily to his heart, which had ſcarce ſtrength enough left to return it through his veins. In ſhort, his body ſo viſibly demonſtrated the pangs of his mind, that, to eſcape obſervation, he retired to his room, where he ſullenly gave vent to ſuch bitter agonies, that even the injured Heartfree, had not the apprehenſion of what his wife had ſuffered, ſhut every avenue of compaſſion, would have pitied him.

WHEN his mind was thoroughly fatigued, and worn out with the horrors which the approaching fate of the poor wretch, who lay under a ſentence which he had iniquitouſly brought upon him, had ſuggeſted, ſleep promiſed him relief; but this promiſe was, alas!

deluſive. This certain friend to the tired body is often the ſevereſt enemy to the oppreſſed mind. So at leaſt it proved to Wild, adding viſionary to real horrors, and tormenting his imagination with phantoms too dreadful to be deſcribed. At length, ſtarting from theſe viſions, he no ſooner recovered his waking ſenſes, than he cry'd out: "I may yet prevent this "cataſtrophe. It is not too late to diſcover the "whole." He then pauſed a moment; but greatneſs inſtantly returning to his aſſiſtance, checked the baſe thought as it firſt offered itſelf to his mind. He then reaſoned thus coolly with himſelf: "Shall I, like a "child, or a woman, or one of thoſe mean wretches, "whom I have always deſpiſed, be frightened by "dreams and viſionary phantoms, to ſully that ho"nour which I have ſo difficultly acquired, and ſo "glorioufly maintained! Shall I, to redeem the worth"leſs life of this ſilly fellow, ſuffer my reputation to "contract a ſtain, which the blood of millions cannot "wipe away! Was it only that the few, the ſimple "part of mankind, ſhould call me a Rogue, perhaps "I could ſubmit; but to be for ever contemptible to "the PRIGS, as a wretch who wanted ſpirit to exe"cute my undertaking, can never be digeſted. "What is the life of a ſingle man? Have not whole "armies and nations been ſacrificed to the honour "of ONE GREAT MAN? Nay, to omit that firſt "claſs of greatneſs, the conquerors of mankind, how "often have numbers fallen by a fictitious plot, only "to ſatisfy the ſpleen, or perhaps exerciſe the inge"nuity of a member of that ſecond order of great"neſs, the Miniſterial! What have I done then? "Why, I have ruined a family, and brought an in"nocent man to the gallows. I ought rather to weep "with Alexander, that I have ruined no more, than "to regret the little I have done." He at length, therefore, bravely reſolved to conſign over Heartfree to his fate, though it coſt him more ſtruggling than may eaſily be believed, utterly to conquer his reluctance, and to baniſh away every degree of humanity from his mind, theſe little ſparks of which compoſed

one

one of those weaknesses, which we lamented in the opening of our history.

But, in vindication of our hero, we must beg leave to observe, that nature is seldom so kind as those writers who draw characters absolutely perfect. She seldom creates any man so completely great, or completely low, but that some sparks of humanity will glimmer in the former, and some sparks of what the vulgar call evil, will dart forth in the latter; utterly to extinguish which will give some pain and uneasiness to both; for I apprehend, no mind was ever yet formed entirely free from blemish, unless, peradventure, that of a sanctified hypocrite, whose praises some well-fed flatterer hath gratefully thought proper to sing forth.

CHAP. V.

Containing various matters.

The day was now come when poor Heartfree was to suffer an ignominious death. Friendly had, in the strongest manner, confirmed his assurance of fulfilling his promise, of becoming a father to one of his children, and a husband to the other. This gave him inexpressible comfort, and he had, the evening before, taken his last leave of the little wretches, with a tenderness which drew a tear from one of the keepers, joined to a magnanimity which would have pleased a stoic. When he was informed that the coach, which Friendly had provided for him, was ready, and that the rest of the prisoners were gone, he embraced that faithful friend with great passion, and begged that he would leave him here; but the other desired leave to accompany him to his end; which at last he was forced to comply with. And now he was proceeding towards the coach, when he found his difficulties were not yet over; for now a friend arrived, of whom he was to take a harder and more tender leave than he had yet gone through. This friend, reader, was no other than Mrs. Heartfree herself, who ran to him with a look all wild, staring, and frantic, and, having reached his arms, fainted

away in them without uttering a ſingle ſyllable. Heartfree was, with great difficulty, able to preſerve his own ſenſes in ſuch a ſurprize at ſuch a ſeaſon. And indeed our good-natured reader will be rather inclined to wiſh this miſerable couple had, by dying in each other's arms, put a final period to their woes, than have ſurvived to taſte thoſe bitter moments which were to be their portion, and which the unhappy wife, ſoon recovering from the ſhort intermiſſion of being, now began to ſuffer. When ſhe became firſt miſtreſs of her voice, ſhe burſt forth into the following accents: "O my huſband!—Is this "the condition in which I find you after our cruel "ſeparation! Who hath done this? Cruel heaven! "What is the occaſion? I know thou canſt deſerve "no ill. Tell me, ſomebody who can ſpeak, while "I have my ſenſes left to underſtand,—what is the "matter!" At which words ſeveral laughed, and one anſwered: "The matter! Why no great matter. "—The gentleman is not the firſt, nor won't be the "laſt: the worſt of the matter is, that if we are to "ſtay all the morning here, I ſhall loſe my dinner." Heartfree, pauſing a moment, and recollecting himſelf, cry'd out: "I will bear all with patience." And then, addreſſing himſelf to the commanding officer, begged he might only have a few minutes by himſelf with his wife, whom he had not ſeen before, ſince his misfortunes. The great man anſwered: "He had "compaſſion on him, and would do more than he "could anſwer; but he ſuppoſed he was too much a "gentleman not to know that ſomething was due "for ſuch civility." On this hint, Friendly, who was himſelf half dead, pulled five guineas out of his pocket; which the great man took, and ſaid, he would be ſo generous to give him ten minutes; on which one obſerved, that many a gentleman had bought ten minutes with a woman dearer, and many other facetious remarks were made, unneceſſary to be here related. Heartfree was now ſuffered to retire into a room with his wife, the commander informing him at his entrance, that he muſt be expeditious, for that the reſt of the good company would be at the

tre

tree before him, and he ſuppoſed he was a gentleman of too much breeding to make them wait.

THIS tender wretched couple were now retired for theſe few minutes, which the commander without carefully meaſured with his watch; and Heartfree was muſtering all his reſolution to part with what his ſoul ſo ardently doated on, and to conjure her to ſupport his loſs for the ſake of her poor infants, and to comfort her with the promiſe of Friendly on their account; but all his deſign was fruſtrated. Mrs. Heartfree could not ſupport the ſhock, but again fainted away, and ſo entirely loſt every ſymptom of life, that Heartfree called vehemently for aſſiſtance. Friendly ruſhed firſt into the room, and was ſoon followed by many others, and what was remarkable, one who had unmoved beheld the tender ſcene between theſe parting lovers, was touched to the quick by the pale looks of the woman, and ran up and down for water, drops, &c. with the utmoſt hurry and confuſion. The ten minutes were expired, which the commander now hinted; and ſeeing nothing offered for the renewal of the term (for indeed Friendly had unhappily emptied his pockets) he began to grow very importunate, and at laſt told Heartfree, *He ſhould be aſhamed not to act more like a man.* Heartfree begged his pardon, and ſaid, he would make him wait no longer. Then, with the deepeſt ſigh cry'd: "O "my angel!" and embracing his wife with the utmoſt eagerneſs, kiſſed her pale lips with more fervency than ever bridegroom did the bluſhing cheeks of his bride; he then cry'd: "The Almighty "bleſs thee, and, if it be his pleaſure, reſtore thee "to life; if not, I beſeech him we may preſently "meet again in a better world than this." He was breaking from her, when, perceiving her ſenſe returning, he could not forbear renewing his embrace, and again preſſing her lips, which now recovered life and warmth ſo faſt, that he begged one ten minutes more to tell her what her ſwooning had prevented her hearing. The worthy commander, being perhaps, a little touched at this tender ſcene, took Friendly aſide, and aſked him what he would give

if he would ſuffer his friend to remain half an hour? Friendly anſwered, any thing; that he had no more money in his pocket, but he would certainly pay him that afternoon. Well then, I'll be moderate, ſaid he,——Twenty guineas.—Friendly anſwered, It is a bargain. The commander, having exacted a firm promiſe, cry'd,——Then I don't care if they ſtay a whole hour together; for what ſignifies hiding good news?——The gentleman is reprieved——; of which he had juſt before received notice in a whiſper. It would be very impertinent to offer at a deſcription of the joy this occaſioned to the two friends, or to Mrs. Heartfree, who was now again recovered. A ſurgeon who was happily preſent, was employed to bleed them all. After which the commander, who had his promiſe of the money again confirmed to him, wiſhed Heartfree joy, and, ſhaking him very friendly by the hands, cleared the room of all the company, and left the three friends together.

CHAP. VI.

In which the foregoing happy incident is accounted for.

BUT here, though I am convinced my good-natured reader may almoſt want the ſurgeon's aſſiſtance alſo, and that there is no paſſage in this whole ſtory, which can afford him equal delight; yet, leſt our reprieve ſhould ſeem to reſemble that in the Beggar's Opera, I ſhall endeavour to ſhew him, that this incident, which is undoubtedly true, is at leaſt as natural as delightful; for, we aſſure him, we would rather have ſuffered half mankind to be hanged, than have ſaved one contrary to the ſtricteſt rules of writing and probability.

BE it known then (a circumſtance which I think highly credible) that the great Fireblood had been, a few days before, taken in the fact of a robbery, and carried before the ſame juſtice of peace, who had on his evidence, committed Heartfree to priſon. This magiſtrate, who did indeed no ſmall honour to the commiſſion he bore, duly conſidered the weighty charge committed to him, by which he was entruſted with

with decisions affecting the lives, liberties, and properties of his countrymen: he therefore examined always with the utmost diligence and caution into every minute circumstance. And, as he had a good deal balanced even when he committed Heartfree, on the excellent character given him by Friendly and the maid; and, as he was much staggered on finding that of the two persons, on whose evidence alone Heartfree had been committed, and had been since convicted, one was in Newgate for a felony, and the other was now brought before him for a robbery, he thought proper to put the matter very home to Fireblood at this time. The young Achates was taken, as we have said, in the fact; so that denial, he saw, was in vain. He, therefore, honestly confessed what he knew must be proved; and desired, on the merit of the discoveries he made, to be admitted as an evidence against his accomplices. This afforded the happiest opportunity to the justice, to satisfy his conscience in relation to Heartfree. He told Fireblood, that, if he expected the favours he solicited, it must be on condition, that he revealed the whole truth to him concerning the evidence which he had lately given against a bankrupt, and which some circumstances had induced a suspicion of; that he might depend on it, the truth would be discovered by other means, and gave some oblique hints (a deceit entirely justifiable) that Wild himself had offered such a discovery. The very mention of Wild's name immediately alarmed Fireblood, who did not in the least doubt the readiness of that GREAT MAN to hang any of the gang, when his own interest seemed to require it. He therefore hesitated not a moment; but, having obtained a promise from the justice, that he should be accepted as an evidence, he discovered the whole falshood, and declared that he had been seduced by Wild to despose as he had done.

THE justice having thus luckily and timely discovered this scene of villainy, alias greatness, lost not a moment in using his utmost endeavours to get the case of that unhappy convict represented to the sovereign; who immediately granted him that gracious reprieve,

which

which cauſed ſuch happineſs to the perſons concerned; and which we hope, we have now accounted for to the ſatisfaction of the reader.

THE good magiſtrate having obtained this reprieve for Heartfree, thought it incumbent on him to viſit him in the priſon, and to ſound, if poſſible, the depth of this affair, that if he ſhould appear as innocent, as he now began to conceive him, he might uſe all imaginable methods to obtain his pardon and enlargement.

THE next day therefore, after that when the miſerable ſcene above deſcribed had paſſed, he went to Newgate, where he found thoſe three perſons, namely Heartfree, his wife, and Friendly, ſitting together. The juſtice informed the priſoner of the confeſſion of Firebſood, with the ſteps which he had taken upon it. The reader will eaſily conceive the many outward thanks as well as inward gratitude which he received from all three; but thoſe were of very little conſequence to him, compared with the ſecret ſatisfaction he felt in his mind, from reflecting on the preſervation of innocence, as he ſoon after very clearly perceived was the caſe.

WHEN he entered the room, Mrs. Heartfree was ſpeaking with ſome earneſtneſs; as he perceived, therefore, he had interrupted her, he begged ſhe would continue her diſcourſe, which, if he prevented by his preſence, he deſired to depart; but Heartfree would not ſuffer it. He ſaid, ſhe had been relating ſome adventures, which, perhaps, might entertain him to hear, and which ſhe the rather deſired he would hear, as they might ſerve to illuſtrate the foundation on which this falſhood had been built, which had brought on her huſband all his misfortunes.

THE juſtice very gladly conſented, and Mrs. Heartfree, at her huſband's deſire, began the relation from the firſt renewal of Wild's acquaintance with him; but, though this recapitulation was neceſſary for the information of our good magiſtrate, as it would be uſeleſs, and perhaps, tedious, to the reader, we ſhall only repeat that part of her ſtory to which he is only a ſtranger, beginning with what happened to her after

Wild

Wild had been turned adrift in the boat, by the captain of the French privateer.

CHAP. VII.

Mrs. Heartfree *relates her adventures.*

MRS. Heartfree proceeded thus. "The vengeance which the French captain exacted on "that villian (our hero) perſuaded me, that I was "fallen into the hands of a man of honour and juſtice; nor indeed, was it poſſible for any perſon to "be treated with more reſpect and civility than I now "was; but if this could not mitigate my ſorrows, "when I reflected on the condition in which I had "been betrayed to leave all that was dear to me, much "leſs could it produce ſuch an effect, when I diſcovered, as I ſoon did, that I owed it chiefly to a "paſſion, which threatened me with great uneaſineſs, "as it quickly appeared to be very violent, and as I "was abſolutely in the power of the perſon who poſſeſſed it, or was rather poſſeſſed by it. I muſt, "however, do him the juſtice to ſay, my fears carried "my ſuſpicions farther than I afterwards found I had "any reaſon to carry them: he did, indeed, very "ſoon acquaint me with his paſſion, and uſed all thoſe "gentle methods, which frequently ſucceed with our "ſex, to prevail with me to gratify it; but never once "threatened, nor had the leaſt recourſe to force. He "did not even once inſinuate to me, that I was totally in his power, which I myſelf ſufficiently ſaw, "and whence I drew the moſt dreadful apprehenſions, "well knowing, that as there are ſome diſpoſitions, "ſo brutal, that cruelty adds a zeſt and ſavour to "their pleaſures; ſo there are others whoſe gentler "inclinations are better gratified, when they win us "by ſofter methods to comply with their deſires; yet "that even theſe may be often compelled by an unruly paſſion to have recourſe at laſt to the means of "violence, when they deſpair of ſucceſs from perſuaſion; but I was happily the captive of a better "man. My conqueror was one of thoſe over whom "vice hath a limited juriſdiction, and tho' he was too

"eaſily

" eaſily prevailed on to ſin, he was proof againſt any " temptation to villainy.

" We had been two days almoſt totally becalmed, " when a briſk gale riſing, as we were in ſight of " Dunkirk, we ſaw a veſſel making full ſail towards " us. The captain of the privateer was ſo ſtrong, " that he apprehended no danger but from a man of " war, which the ſailors diſcerned this not to be. " He therefore ſtruck his colours, and furled his ſails " as much as poſſible, in order to lie by and expect " her, hoping ſhe might be a prize." (Here Heart-free ſmiling, his wife ſtopp'd and enquired the cauſe. He told her, it was from her uſing the ſea-terms ſo aptly: She laughed, and anſwered, he would wonder leſs at this, when he heard the long time ſhe had been on board: And then proceeded:) " This veſſel now " came along-ſide of us, and hailed us, having per-" ceived that, on which we were aboard, to be of " her own country: they begged us not to put into " Dunkirk, but to accompany them in their purſuit " of a large Engliſh merchant-man, whom we ſhould " eaſily overtake, and both together as eaſily con-" quer. Our captain immediately conſented to this " propoſition, and ordered all his ſail to be crowded. " This was moſt unwelcome news to me; how-" ever, he comforted me all he could, by aſſuring " me, I had nothing to fear, that he would be ſo far " from offering the leaſt rudeneſs to me himſelf, that " he would at the hazard of his life protect me from " it. This aſſurance gave me all the conſolation, " which my preſent circumſtances, and the dreadful " apprehenſions I had on your dear account, would " admit." (At which words the tendereſt glances paſſed on both ſides between the huſband and wife.)

" We ſailed near twelve hours, when we came in " ſight of the ſhip we were in purſuit of, and which " we ſhould probably have ſoon come up with had " not a very thick miſt raviſhed her from our eyes. " This miſt continued ſeveral hours, and when it " cleared up we diſcovered our companion at a great " diſtance from us; but what gave us (I mean the " captain and his crew) the greateſt uneaſineſs, was

" the

" the ſight of a very large ſhip within a mile of us, " which preſently ſaluted us with a gun, and now " appeared to be a third-rate Engliſh man of war. " Our captain declared the impoſſibility of either " fighting or eſcaping, and accordingly ſtruck, with- " out waiting for the broadſide which was preparing " for us, and which perhaps would have prevented " me from the happineſs I now enjoy." This occa- ſioned Heartfree to change colour, his wife there- fore paſs'd haſtily to circumſtances of a more ſmil- ing complexion.

" I GREATLY rejoiced at this event, as I thought " it would not only reſtore me to the ſafe poſſeſſion of " my jewels, but to what I value beyond all the trea- " ſure in the univerſe. My expectation, however, " of both theſe was ſomewhat croſt for the preſent: " As to the former, I was told, they ſhould be care- " fully preſerved; but that I muſt prove my right " to them before I could expect their reſtoration; " which, if I miſtake not, the captain did not very " eagerly deſire I ſhould be able to accompliſh: And " as to the latter, I was acquainted, that I ſhould " be put on board the firſt ſhip, which they met on " her way to England; but that they were proceed- " ing to the Weſt-Indies.

" I HAD not been long on board the man of war, " before I diſcovered juſt reaſon rather to lament " than rejoice at the exchange of my captivity (for " ſuch I concluded my preſent ſituation to be.) I had " now another lover in the captain of this Engliſh- " man, and much rougher and leſs gallant than the " Frenchman had been. He uſed me with ſcarce " common civility, as indeed he ſhewed very little " to any other perſon, treating his officers little better " than a man of no great good-breeding would exert " to his meaneſt ſervant, and that too on ſome very ir- " ritating provocation. As for me, he addreſſed me " with the inſolence of a baſha to a Circaſſian ſlave; " he talked to me with the looſe licence in which the " moſt profligate libertine converſe with harlots, and " which women abandoned only in a moderate de- " gree detest and abhor. He often kiſſed me with very

" rude

" rude familiarity, and one day attempted further " brutality, when a gentleman on board, and who " was in my ſituation, that is, had been taken by a " privateer and was retaken, reſcued me from his " hands; for which the captain confined him, tho' " he was not under his command, two day in irons; " when he was releaſed (for I was not ſuffered to viſit " him in his confinement) I went to him and thanked " him with the utmoſt acknowledgment, for what he " had done and ſuffered on my account. The gentle- " man behaved to me in the handſomeſt manner on " this occaſion; told me, he was aſhamed of the high " ſenſe I ſeemed to entertain of ſo ſmall an obligation, " of an action to which his duty as a chriſtian, and " his honour as a man, obliged him. From this " time I lived in great familiarity with this man, " whom I regarded as my protector, which he pro- " feſſed himſelf ready to be on all occaſions, expreſ- " ſing the utmoſt abhorrence of the captain's brutality, " eſpecially that ſhewn towards me, and the tender- " neſs of a parent for the preſervation of my virtue, " for which I was not myſelf more ſolicitous than he " appeared. He was indeed, the only man I had " hitherto met, ſince my unhappy departure, who " did not endeavour by all his looks, words, and " actions, to aſſure me, he had a liking to my un- " fortunate perſon. The reſt ſeeming deſirous of ſa- " crificing the little beauty they complimented, to " their deſires, without the leaſt conſideration of the " ruin, which I earneſtly repreſented to them, they " were attempting to bring on me and on my future " repoſe.

" I NOW paſſed ſeveral days pretty free from the " captain's moleſtation, till one fatal night:" Here perceiving Heartfree grew pale, ſhe comforted him by an aſſurance, that heaven had preſerved her chaſtity, and again had reſtored her unſullied to his arms. She continued thus: " Perhaps, I gave it a wrong " epithet in the word fatal; but a wretched night, " I am ſure I may call it, for no woman, who came " off victorious, was, I believe, ever in greater dan- " ger. One night, I ſay, having drank his ſpirits

" high

" high with punch, in company with the purſer, who
" was the only man in the ſhip he admitted to his
" table, the captain ſent for me into his cabin; whi-
" ther, tho' unwilling, I was obliged to go. We
" were no ſooner alone together, than he ſeized me
" by the hand, and after affronting my ears with
" diſcourſe which I am unable to repeat, he ſwore a
" great oath, that his paſſion was to be dallied with
" no longer, that I muſt not expect to treat him in
" the manner, to which a ſet of blockhead land-men
" ſubmitted. None of your coquet airs, therefore
" with me madam, ſaid he, for I am reſolved to
" have you this night. No ſtruggling nor ſquawl-
" ing, for both will be impertinent. The firſt man
" who offers to come in here, I will have his ſkin
" flea'd off at the gangway. He then attempted to
" pull me violently towards his bed. I threw myſelf
" on my knees, and with tears and intreaties be-
" ſought his compaſſion; but this was, I found, to
" no purpoſe: I then had recourſe to threats, and
" endeavoured to frighten him with the conſequence;
" but neither had this, tho' it ſeemed to ſtagger him
" more than the other method, ſufficient force to
" deliver me. At laſt, a ſtratagem came into my
" head, of which my perceiving him reel, gave me
" the firſt hint. I intreated a moment's reprieve only,
" when, collecting all the ſpirits I could muſter, I
" put on a conſtrained air of gaiety, and told him
" with an affected laugh, he was the rougheſt lover
" I had ever met with, and that I believed I was the
" firſt woman he had ever paid his addreſſes to. *Ad-*
" *dreſſes*, ſaid he, *d——n your addreſſes, I want to un-*
" *dreſs you.* I then begged him to let us drink ſome
" punch together; for that I loved a cann as well as
" himſelf, and never would grant the favour to any
" man till I had drank a hearty glaſs with him. O,
" ſaid he, if that be all, you ſhall have punch enough
" to drown yourſelf in. At which words he rung the
" bell, and ordered in a gallon of that liquor. I was
" in the mean time obliged to ſuffer his nauſeous
" kiſſes, and ſome rudeneſſes which I had great dif-
" ficulty to reſtrain within moderate bounds. When

" the

" the punch came in, he took up the bowl and drank
" my health oſtentatiouſly, in ſuch a quantity, that
" it conſiderably advanced my ſcheme. I followed
" him with bumpers, as faſt as poſſible, and was my-
" ſelf obliged to drink ſo much, that at another time
" it would have ſtaggered my own reaſon, but at pre-
" ſent it did not affect me. At length, perceiving
" him very far gone, I watched an opportunity,
" and ran out of the cabin, reſolving to ſeek protec-
" tion of the ſea, if I could find no other: but hea-
" ven was now graciouſly pleaſed to relieve me; for
" in his attempt to purſue me, he reeled backwards,
" and falling down the cabbin ſtairs, he diſlocated
" his ſhoulder, and ſo bruiſed himſelf, that I was not
" only preſerved that night from any danger of my
" intended raviſher; but the accident threw him into
" a fever, which endangered his life, and whether
" he ever recovered or no, I am not certain; for,
" during his delirious fits, the eldeſt lieutenant com-
" manded the ſhip. This was a virtuous and a
" brave fellow, who had been twenty-five years in
" that poſt without being able to obtain a ſhip, and
" had ſeen ſeveral boys, the baſtards of noblemen,
" put over his head. One day, while the ſhip re-
" mained under his command, an Engliſh veſſel
" bound to Corke, paſſed by; myſelf and my friend,
" who had formerly lain two days in irons on my
" account, went on board this ſhip, with the leave
" of the good lieutenant, who made us ſuch preſents
" as he was able of proviſions, and congratulating
" me on my delivery from a danger to which none
" of the ſhip's crew had been ſtrangers, he kindly
" wiſhed us both a ſafe voyage."

CHAP. VIII.

In which Mrs Heartfree *continues the relation of her adventures.*

" THE firſt evening after we were aboard this
" veſſel, which was a brigantine, we being
" then at no very great diſtance from the Madeiras,
" the moſt violent ſtorm aroſe from the north-weſt, in

" which

" which we preſently loſt both our maſts; and indeed
" death now preſented itſelf as inevitable to us——I
" need not tell my Tommy what were then my
" thoughts. Our danger was ſo great, that the cap-
" tain of the ſhip, a profeſſed atheiſt, betook him-
" ſelf to prayers, and the whole crew, abandoning
" themſelves for loſt, fell with the utmoſt eagerneſs
" to the emptying a caſk of brandy, not one drop of
" which, they ſwore, ſhould be polluted with ſalt
" water. I obſerved here, my old friend diſplayed
" leſs courage than I expected from him. He ſeem-
" ed entirely ſwallowed up in deſpair. But, heaven
" be praiſed! we were all at laſt preſerved. The
" ſtorm, after above eleven hours continuance, be-
" gan to abate, and by degrees entirely ceaſed; but
" left us ſtill rolling at the mercy of the waves, which
" carried us at their own pleaſure to the ſouth-eaſt,
" a vaſt number of leagues. Our crew were all dead
" drunk with the brandy which they had taken ſuch
" care to preſerve from the ſea; but, indeed, had
" they been awake, their labour would have been of
" very little ſervice, as we had loſt all our rigging;
" our brigantine being reduced to a naked hulk only.
" In this condition we floated above thirty hours, till
" in the midſt of a very dark night we ſpied a light
" which ſeeming to approach us, grew ſo large, that
" our ſailors concluded it to be the lanthorn of a
" man of war; but when we were cheering ourſelves
" with the hopes of our deliverance from this wretch-
" ed ſituation, on a ſudden, to our great concern, the
" light entirely diſappeared, and left us in a deſpair,
" increaſed by the remembrance of thoſe pleaſing
" imaginations with which we had entertained our
" minds during its appearance. The reſt of the
" night we paſſed in melancholy conjectures on the
" light which had deſerted us, which the major part
" of the ſailors concluded to be a meteor. In this
" diſtreſs we had one comfort, which was a plentiful
" ſtore of proviſion: this ſo ſupported the ſpirits of
" the ſailors, that they declared, had they but a
" ſufficient quantity of brandy, they cared not whe-
" ther they ſaw land for a month to come: but in-

" deed,

" deed, we were much nearer it than we imagined, " as we perceived at break of day: one of the moſt " knowing of the crew declared we were near the " continent of Africa; but when we were within " three leagues of it, a ſecond violent ſtorm aroſe " from the north, ſo that we again gave over all hopes " of ſafety. This ſtorm was not quite ſo outrageous " as the former, but of much longer continuance, " for it laſted near three days; and drove us an im- " menſe number of leagues to the ſouth. We were " within a league of the ſhore, expecting every mo- " ment our ſhip to be daſhed to-pieces, when the " tempeſt ceaſed all on a ſudden; but the waves ſtill " continued to roll like mountains, and before the " ſea recovered its calm motion, our ſhip was thrown " ſo near the land, that the captain ordered out his " boat, declaring he had ſcarce any hopes of ſaving " her; and indeed we had not quitted her many " minutes, before we ſaw the juſtice of his appre- " henſions; for ſhe ſtruck againſt a rock, and im- " mediately ſunk. The behaviour of the ſailors on " this occaſion very much affected me, they beheld " their ſhip periſh with the tenderneſs of a lover or " a parent, they ſpoke of her as the fondeſt huſband " would of his wife; and many of them, who ſeemed " to have no tears in their compoſition, ſhed them " plentifully at her ſinking. The captain himſelf " cried out, *Go thy way, charming* Molly, *the ſea* " *never devoured a lovelier morſel. If I have fifty* " *veſſels, I ſhall never love another like thee. Poor* " *ſlut! I ſhall remember thee to my dying day.*—Well, " the boat now conveyed us all ſafe to ſhore, where " we landed with very little difficulty. It was now " about noon, and the rays of the ſun which de- " ſcended almoſt perpendicular on our heads, were ex- " tremely hot and troubleſome. However, we travelled " through this extreme heat about five miles over a " plain. This brought us to a vaſt wood, which ex- " tended itſelf as far as we could ſee both to the " right and left, and ſeemed to me to put an en- " tire end to our progreſs. Here we decreed to reſt " and dine on the proviſion which we had brought

" from

"from the ſhip, of which we had ſufficient for very "few meals; our boat being ſo overloaded with peo- "ple, that we had very little room for luggage of "any kind. Our repaſt was ſalt pork broiled, which "the keenneſs of hunger made ſo delicious to my "companions, that they fed very heartily upon it. "As for myſelf, the fatigue of my body, and the "vexation of my mind, had ſo thoroughly weakened "me, that I was almoſt entirely deprived of appetite; "and the utmoſt dexterity of the moſt accompliſhed "French cook would have been ineffectual, had he "endeavoured to tempt me with delicacies. I thought "myſelf very little a gainer by my late eſcape from "the tempeſt, by which I ſeemed only to have ex- "changed the element in which I was preſently to "die. When our company had ſufficiently, and in- "deed very plentifully, feaſted themſelves, they re- "ſolved to enter the wood, and endeavour to paſs "it, in expectation of finding ſome inhabitants, at "leaſt ſome proviſion. We proceeded therefore in "the following order; one man in the front with a "hatchet to clear our way, and two others followed "him with guns to protect the reſt from wild beaſts; "then walked the reſt of our company, and laſt of all "the captain himſelf, being armed likewiſe, with a "gun to defend us from any attack behind, in the "rear, I think you call it. And thus our whole "company, being fourteen in number, travelled on "till night overtook us, without ſeeing any thing un- "leſs a few birds, and ſome very inſignificant animals. "We reſted all night under the covert of ſome trees, "and indeed we very little wanted ſhelter at that "ſeaſon, the heat in the day being the only incle- "mency we had to combat with in this climate. I "cannot help telling you, my old friend lay ſtill "neareſt to me on the ground, and declared he would "be my protector ſhould any of the ſailors offer rude- "neſs; but I can acquit them of any ſuch attempt; "nor was I ever affronted by any one, more than "with a coarſe expreſſion, proceeding rather from the "roughneſs and ignorance of their education, than "from any abandoned principle or want of humanity.

"We

" We had now proceeded a very little way on our " next day's march, when one of the ſailors having " ſkipt nimbly up a hill, with the aſſiſtance of a ſpeak- " ing-trumpet informed us, that he ſaw a town a very " little way off. This news ſo comforted me, and " gave me ſuch ſtrength, as well as ſpirits, that, " with the help of my old friend, and another, who " ſuffered me to lean on them, I, with much diffi- " culty, attained the ſummit; but was ſo abſolutely " overcome in climbing it, that I had no longer ſuffi- " cient ſtrength to ſupport my tottering limbs, and " was obliged to lay myſelf again on the ground; " nor could they prevail on me to undertake deſcend- " ing through a very thick wood into a plain, at the " end of which indeed appeared ſome houſes or ra- " ther huts; but at a much greater diſtance than " the ſailor had aſſured us. The little way, as he " had called it, ſeeming to me full twenty miles, nor " was it I believe, much leſs.

CHAP. IX.

Containing incidents very ſurprizing.

" THE captain declared, he would, without de- " lay, proceed to the town before him; in " which reſolution he was ſeconded by all the crew; " but when I could not be perſuaded, nor was I able " to travel any further before I had reſted myſelf, " my old friend proteſted he would not leave me, but " would ſtay behind as my guard; and, when I had " refreſhed myſelf with a little repoſe, he would at- " tend me to the town, which the captain promiſed " he would not leave, before he had ſeen us.

" THEY were no ſooner departed than (having firſt " thanked my protector for his care of me) I reſign- " ed myſelf to ſleep, which immediately cloſed my " eyelids, and would probably have detained me " very long in his gentle dominion, had I not been " awaked with a ſqueeze by the hand by my guard; " which I at firſt thought intended to alarm me with " the danger of ſome wild beaſt; but I ſoon perceiv- " ed it aroſe from a ſofter motive, and that a gentle

" ſwain

" ſwain was the only wild beaſt I had to apprehend.
" He began now to diſcloſe his paſſion in the ſtrongeſt
" manner imaginable, indeed with a warmth rather
" beyond that of both my former lovers; but as yet
" without any attempt of abſolute force. On my
" ſide remonſtrances were made in more bitter ex-
" clamations and revilings than I had uſed to any,
" that villain Wild excepted. I told him, he was
" the baſeſt and moſt treacherous wretch alive; that
" his having cloaked his iniquitous deſigns under the
" appearance of virtue and friendſhip, added an in-
" effable degree of horror to them; that I deteſted
" him of all mankind the moſt, and, could I be
" brought to yield to proſtitution, he ſhould be the
" laſt to enjoy the ruins of my honour. He ſuffered
" himſelf not to be provoked by this language, but
" only changed his method of ſolicitation from flat-
" tery to bribery. He unript the lining of his waiſt-
" coat, and pulling forth ſeveral jewels; theſe, he ſaid,
" he had preſerved from infinite danger to the happieſt
" purpoſe, if I could be won by them. I rejected
" them often with the utmoſt indignation, till at laſt
" caſting my eye, rather by accident than deſign
" on a diamond necklace, a thought, like lightning,
" ſhot through my mind, and, in an inſtant, I re-
" membered, that this was the very necklace you had
" ſold the curſed Count, the cauſe of all my misfor-
" tunes. The confuſion of ideas, into which this
" ſurprize hurried me, prevented my reflecting on
" the villain who then ſtood before me: but the firſt
" recollection preſently told me, it could be no other
" than the Count himſelf, the wicked tool of Wild's
" barbarity. Good heavens! what was then my con-
" dition! How ſhall I deſcribe the tumult of paſſions
" which then laboured in my breaſt! However, as I
" was happily unknown to him, the leaſt ſuſpicion
" on his ſide was altogether impoſſible. He imputed,
" therefore, the eagerneſs with which I gazed on the
" jewels, to a very wrong cauſe, and endeavoured
" to put as much additional ſoftneſs into his counte-
" nance as he was able. My fears were a little quieted,
" and I was reſolved to be very liberal of promiſes,

" and hoped ſo thoroughly to perſuade him of my " venality, that he might, without any doubt, be " drawn in to wait the captain and crew's return, " who would, I was very certain, not only preſerve " me from his violence, but ſecure the reſtoration of " what you had been ſo cruelly robbed of. But, alas! " I was miſtaken." Mrs. Heartfree again perceiving ſymptoms of the utmoſt diſquietude in her huſband's " countenance, cry'd out: " My dear, don't you " apprehend any harm.—But, to deliver you as ſoon " as poſſible from your anxiety.—When he perceived " I declined the warmth of his addreſſes, he begged " me to conſider; he changed at once his voice and " features, and, in a very different tone from " what he had hitherto affected, he ſwore I ſhould " not deceive him as I had the captain; that fortune " had kindly thrown an opportunity in his way, " which he was reſolved not fooliſhly to loſe; and " concluded with a violent oath, that he was deter- " mined to enjoy me that moment; and, therefore, I " knew the conſequence of reſiſtance. He then caught " me in his arms, and began ſuch rude attempts, " that I ſcreamed out with all the force I could, tho' " I had ſo little hopes of being reſcued, when there " ſuddenly ruſhed forth from a thicket, a creature, " which, at its firſt appearance, and in the hurry of " ſpirits I then was, I did not take for a man; but " indeed had he been the fierceſt of wild beaſts, I " ſhould have rejoiced at his devouring us both. I " ſcarce perceived he had a muſket in his hand, " before he ſtruck my raviſher ſuch a blow with it, " that he felled him at my feet. He then advanced " with a gentle air towards me, and told me in French, " he was extremely glad he had been luckily preſent " to my aſſiſtance. He was naked, except his middle " and his feet, if I can call a body ſo which was " covered with hair almoſt equal to any beaſt what- " ever. Indeed his appearance was ſo horrid in my " eyes, that the friendſhip he had ſhewn me, as well " as his courteous behaviour, could not entirely re- " move the dread I had conceived from his figure. " *I believe* he ſaw this very viſibly; for he begged me

" not

" not to be frightened, ſince, whatever accident had
" brought me thither, I ſhould have reaſon to thank
" heaven for meeting him, at whoſe hands I might
" aſſure myſelf of the utmoſt civility and protection.
" In the midſt of all this conſternation, I had ſpirits
" enough to take up the caſket of jewels, which the
" villain, in falling, had dropt out of his hands, and
" conveyed it into my pocket. My deliverer telling
" me, that I ſeemed extremely weak and faint,
" deſired me to refreſh myſelf at his little hut, which,
" he ſaid, was hard by. If his demeanour had been
" leſs kind and obliging, my deſperate ſituation muſt
" have lent me confidence; for ſure the alternative
" could not be doubtful, whether I ſhould rather truſt
" this man, who, notwithſtanding his ſavage outſide,
" expreſſed ſo much devotion to ſerve me, which at
" leaſt I was not certain of the falſhood of, or ſhould
" abide with one whom I ſo perfectly well knew to
" be an accompliſhed villain. I, therefore, commit-
" ted myſelf to his guidance, though with tears in
" my eyes, and begged him to have compaſſion on
" my innocence, which was abſolutely in his power.
" He ſaid, the treatment he had been witneſs of,
" which, he ſuppoſed, was from one who had bro-
" ken his truſt towards me, ſufficiently juſtified my
" ſuſpicion; but begged me to dry my eyes, and he
" would ſoon convince me, that I was with a man of
" different ſentiments. The kind accents which ac-
" companied theſe words, gave me ſome comfort,
" which was aſſiſted by the re-poſſeſſion of our jewels
" by an accident, ſo ſtrongly favouring of the diſpo-
" ſition of Providence in my favour.

" We left the villain weltering in his blood, tho'
" beginning to recover a little motion, and walked
" together to his hut, or rather cave; for it was un-
" der ground, on the ſide of a hill; the ſituation
" was very pleaſant, and, from its mouth, we over-
" looked a large plain, and the town I had before
" ſeen. As ſoon as I entered it, he deſired me to
" ſit down on a bench of earth, which ſerved him
" for chairs, and then laid before me ſome fruits, the
" wild *product of that* country, one or two of which

" had an excellent flavour. He likewiſe produced " ſome baked fleſh, a little reſembling that of veni- " ſon. He then brought forth a bottle of brandy, " which, he ſaid, had remained with him ever ſince " his ſettling there, now above thirty years; during " all which time he had never opened it, his only " liquor being water; that he had reſerved this " bottle as a cordial in ſickneſs; but, he thanked " heaven, he had never yet had occaſion for it. He " then acquainted me he that was a hermit, that " he had been formerly caſt away on that coaſt, with " his wife, whom he dearly loved, but could not " preſerve from periſhing; on which account he had " reſolved never to return to France, which was his " native country, but to devote himſelf to prayer, " and a holy life, placing all his hopes in the bleſſed " expectation of meeting that dear woman again in " heaven, where he was convinced, ſhe was now " a ſaint, and an interceder for him. He ſaid, he " had exchanged a watch with the king of that coun- " try, whom he deſcribed to be a very juſt and good " man, for a gun, ſome powder, ſhot, and ball; " with which he ſometimes provided himſelf food, " but more generally uſed it in defending himſelf " againſt wild beaſts; ſo that his diet was chiefly of " the vegetable kind. He told me many more cir- " cumſtances, which I may relate to you hereafter: " but to be as conciſe as poſſible at preſent, he at " length greatly comforted me, by promiſing to con- " duct me to a ſea-port, where I might have an op- " portunity to meet with ſome veſſels trafficking for " ſlaves; and whence I might once more commit " myſelf to that element, which though I had already " ſuffered ſo much on it, I muſt again truſt, to put " me in poſſeſſion of all I loved.

" The character he gave me of the inhabitants of " the town we ſaw below us, and of their king, " made me deſirous of being conducted thither; " eſpecially as I very much wiſhed to ſee the captain " and ſailors, who had behaved very kindly to me, " and with whom, notwithſtanding all the civil beha- " viour of the hermit, I was rather eaſier in my

" mind, than alone with this ſingle man; but he " diſſuaded me greatly from attempting ſuch a walk, " till I had recruited my ſpirits and reſt, deſiring " me to repoſe myſelf on his couch or bank, ſaying, " that he himſelf would retire without the cave, " where he would remain as my guard. I accepted " this kind propoſal; but it was long before I could " procure any ſlumber: however, at length, weari- " neſs prevailed over my fears, and I enjoyed ſeve- " ral hours ſleep. When I awaked, I found my " faithful centinel on his poſt, and ready at my ſum- " mons. This behaviour infuſed ſome confidence " in me, and I now repeated my requeſt, that he " would go with me to the town below; but he an- " ſwered, it would be better adviſed to take ſome " repaſt before I undertook the journey, which I " ſhould find much longer than it appeared. I con- " ſented, and he ſet forth a greater variety of fruits " than before, of which I eat very plentifully: my " collation being ended, I renewed the mention of " my walk; but he ſtill perſiſted in diſſuading me, " telling me, that I was not yet ſtrong enough; that " I could repoſe myſelf no where with greater ſafe- " ty, than in his cave; and that, for his part, he " could have no greater happineſs than that of at- " tending me; adding, with a ſigh, it was a hap- " pineſs he ſhould envy any other, more than all the " gifts of fortune. You may imagine, I began now " to entertain ſuſpicions; but he preſently removed " all doubt, by throwing himſelf at my feet, and ex- " preſſing the warmeſt paſſion for me. I ſhould have " now ſunk with deſpair, had he not accompanied " theſe profeſſions with the moſt vehement proteſta- " tions, that he would never offer me any other " force but that of entreaty, and that he would ra- " ther die the moſt cruel death by my coldneſs, than " gain the higheſt bleſs by becoming the occaſion of " a tear of ſorrow to theſe bright eyes, which, he " ſaid, were ſtars, under whoſe benign influence a- " lone he could enjoy, or indeed ſuffer life." She was repeating many more compliments he made her, when a *horrid uproar*, which alarmed the whole

Gate, put a ſtop to her narration at preſent. It is impoſſible for me to give the reader a better idea of the noiſe which now aroſe, than by deſiring him to imagine I had the hundred tongues the poet once wiſhed for, and was vociferating from them all at once, by hollowing, ſcolding, crying, ſwearing, bellowing, and in ſhort, by every different articulation which is within the ſcope of the human organ.

CHAP. X.

A horrible uproar in the Gate.

BUT however great an idea the reader may hence conceive of this uproar, he will think the occaſion more than adequate to it, when he is informed, that our hero, (I bluſh to name it) had diſcovered an injury done to his honour, and that in the tendereſt point.—In a word, reader, (for thou muſt know it, tho' it give thee the greateſt horror imaginable) he had caught Fireblood in the arms of his lovely Lætitia.

As the generous bull, who having long depaſtured among a number of cows, and thence contracted an opinion that theſe cows are all his own property, if he beholds another bull beſtride a cow within his walks, he roars aloud, and threatens inſtant vengeance with his horns, till the whole pariſh are alarmed with his bellowing: not with leſs noiſe, nor leſs dreadful menaces did the fury of Wild burſt forth, and terrify the whole Gate. Long time did rage render his voice inarticulate to the hearer; as when, at a viſiting day, fifteen or ſixteen, or perhaps twice as many females of delicate but ſhrill pipes, ejaculate all at once on different ſubjects, all is ſound only, the harmony entirely melodious indeed, but conveys no idea to our ears: but at length, when reaſon began to get the better of his paſſion, which latter being deſerted by his breath, began a little to retreat, the following accents leapt over the hedge of his teeth, or rather the ditch of his gums, whence thoſe hedgeſtakes had long ſince by a patten been diſplaced in battle with an amazon of Drury.

"—Man

* "—Man of honour! doth this become a friend? "Could I have expected ſuch a breach of all the laws "of honour from thee, whom I had taught to walk "in its paths? Hadſt thou choſen any other way to "injure my confidence, I could have forgiven it; "but this is a ſtab in the tendereſt part, a wound ne-"ver to be healed, an injury never to be repaired: "for it is not only the loſs of an agreeable com-"panion, of the affection of a wife, dearer to my "ſoul than life itſelf, it is not this loſs alone I la-"ment: this loſs is accompanied with diſgrace, and "with diſhonour. The blood of the Wilds, which "hath run with ſuch uninterrupted purity through "ſo many generations, this blood is fouled, is conta-"minated: Hence flow my tears, hence ariſes my "grief. This is the injury never to be redreſſed, nor "ever to be with honour forgiven. My—in a band-"box, anſwered Fireblood, here is a noiſe about your "honour: If the miſchief done to your blood be all "you complain of, I am ſure you complain of no-"thing; for my blood is as good as your's. You have "no conception, replied Wild, of the tenderneſs of "honour; you know not how nice and delicate it is "in both ſexes; ſo delicate, that the leaſt breath of "air which rudely blows on it, deſtroys it. I will "prove from your own words, ſays Fireblood, I have "not wronged your honour. Have you not often told "me, that the honour of a man conſiſted in receiv-"ing no affront from his own ſex, and that of a wo-"man in receiving no kindneſs from ours. Now, "Sir, if I have given you no affront, how have I "injured your honour? But doth not every thing, "cried Wild, of the wife belong to the huſband? "A married man therefore hath his wife's honour as "well as his own, and by injuring her's you injure his. "How cruelly you have hurt me in this tender part, "I need not repeat; the whole Gate knows it, and "the world ſhall. I will apply to Doctors Com-"mons for my redreſs againſt her, I will ſhake off as "much of my diſhonour as I can by parting with "her; and as for you, expect to hear of me in

* The beginning of this ſpeech is loſt.

" Weſtminſter-hall; the modern method of repair-
" ing theſe breaches, and of reſenting this affront.
" D—n your eyes, cried Fireblood, I fear you not,
" nor do I believe a word you ſay. Nay, if you affront
" me perſonally, ſays Wild, another ſort of reſent-
" ment is preſcribed. At which word, advancing
" to Fireblood, he preſented him with a box on the
" ear, which the youth immediately returned, and
" now our hero and his friend fell to boxing, tho'
" with ſome difficulty, both being incumbered with
" the chains which they wore between their legs: A
" few blows paſſed on both ſides, before the gentle-
" men, who ſtood by, ſtept in and parted the comba-
" tants; and now both parties having whiſper'd each
" other, that, if they out-lived the enſuing ſeſſions
" and eſcaped the tree, the one ſhould give, and the
" other ſhould receive ſatisfaction in ſingle combat,
" they ſeparated, and the Gate ſoon recovered its
" former tranquillity."

MRS. Heartfree was then deſired, by the juſtice and her huſband both, to conclude her ſtory, which ſhe did in the words of the next chapter.

CHAP. XI.

The concluſion of Mrs. Heartfree's adventures.

" IF I miſtake not, I was interrupted juſt as I was be-
" ginning to repeat ſome of the compliments made
" me by the hermit.—Juſt as you had finiſhed them,
" I believe, madam, ſaid the juſtice. Very well, Sir,
" ſaid ſhe, I am ſure I have no pleaſure in the repe-
" tition. He concluded then with telling me, though
" I was, in his eyes, the moſt charming woman in
" the world, and might tempt a ſaint to abandon the
" ways of holineſs, yet my beauty inſpired him with
" a much tenderer affection towards me, than to
" purchaſe any ſatisfaction of his own deſires with
" my miſery; if therefore I could be ſo cruel to him,
" to reject his honeſt and ſincere addreſs, nor could
" ſubmit to a ſolitary life with one, who would en-
" deavour, by all poſſible means, to make me happy,
" I had no force to dread; for that I was as much at
" *my liberty* as if I was in France, or England, or

" any

" any other free country. I repulſed him with the
" ſame civility with which he advanced; and told
" him, that as he profeſſed great regard to religion,
" I was convinced he would ceaſe from all farther
" ſolicitation, when I informed him, that if I had no
" other objection, my own innocence would not admit
" of my hearing him on this ſubject, for that I was
" married.—He ſtarted a little at that word, and was
" for ſome time ſilent; but at length recovering him-
" ſelf, he began to urge the uncertainty of my huſ-
" band's being alive, and the probability of the con-
" trary: he then ſpoke of marriage as of a civil po-
" licy only; on which head he urged many arguments
" not worth repeating, and was growing ſo very ea-
" ger and importunate, that I know not whither his
" paſſion might have hurried him, had not three of
" the ſailors well armed, appeared at that inſtant in
" ſight of the cave. I no ſooner ſaw them, than ex-
" ulting with the utmoſt inward joy, I told him my
" companions were come for me, and that I muſt
" now take my leave of him; aſſuring him that I
" would always remember, with the moſt grateful
" acknowledgment, the favours I had received at his
" hands. He fetched a very heavy ſigh, and ſqueez-
" ing me tenderly by the hand, he ſaluted my
" lips with a little more eagerneſs than the European
" ſalutations admit of; and told me, he ſhould
" likewiſe remember my arrival at his cave to the laſt
" day of his life; adding—; O that he could there
" ſpend the whole in the company of one, whoſe
" bright eyes had kindled;—but I know you will
" think, Sir, that we woman love to repeat the
" compliments made us, I will therefore omit them.
" In a word, the ſailors being now arrived, I quitted
" him, with ſome compaſſion for the reluctance with
" which he parted from me, and went forward with
" my companions.

" We had proceeded but a very few paces before
" one of the ſailors ſaid to his comrades: D——n
" me, Jack, who knows whether yon fellow hath
" not ſome good ſlip in his cave? I innocently an-
" ſwered, the poor wretch had only one bottle of

" brandy.—Hath he ſo, cries the ſailor; 'Fore George " we will taſte it;—and, ſo ſaying, they immediately " returned back, and myſelf with them. We found " the poor man proſtrate on the ground, expreſſing " all the ſymptoms of miſery and lamentation. I " told him in French (for the ſailors could not ſpeak " that language) what they wanted.—He pointed to " the place where the bottle was depoſited, ſaying, " they were welcome to that, and whatever elſe he " had; and added, he cared not if they took " his life alſo. The ſailors ſearched the whole cave, " where finding nothing more which they deemed " worth their taking, they walked off with the bottle, " and immediately emptying it, without offering me " a drop, they proceeded with me towards the town.

" In our way I obſerved one whiſper another, while " he kept his eye ſteadfaſtly fixed on me. This gave " me ſome uneaſineſs; but the other anſwered: No " d—n me, the captain will never forgive us. Be- " ſides, we have enough of it among the black wo- " men, and, in my mind, one colour is as good as " another. This was enough to give me violent ap- " prehenſions; but I heard no more of that kind, " till we came to the town, where, in about ſix " hours, I arrived in ſafety.

" As ſoon as I came to the captain, he enquired " what was become of my friend, meaning the vil- " lainous Count. When he was informed by me of " what had happened, he wiſhed me heartily joy of " my delivery, and expreſſing the utmoſt abhorrence " of ſuch baſeneſs, ſwore, if ever he met him, he " would cut his throat; but indeed we both conclud- " ed, that he had died of the blow which the hermit " had given him.

" I was now introduced to the chief magiſtrate of " this country, who was deſirous of ſeeing me. I " will give you a ſhort deſcription of him: He was " choſen (as is the cuſtom there) for his ſuperior " bravery and wiſdom. His power is entirely ab- " ſolute during its continuance; but, on the firſt " deviation from equity and juſtice, he is liable to " be depoſed, and puniſhed by the people, the el-

" ders

" ders of whom, once a year, aſſemble, to examine
" into his conduct. Beſides the danger which theſe
" examinations, which are very ſtrict, expoſe him
" to, his office is of ſuch care and trouble, that no-
" thing but that reſtleſs love of power, ſo predomi-
" nant in the mind of man, could make it the object
" of deſire; for he is indeed the only ſlave of all the
" natives of this country. He is obliged in time of
" peace, to hear the complaint of every perſon in his
" dominions, and to render them juſtice. For which
" purpoſe every one may demand an audience of him,
" unleſs during the hour which he is allowed for din-
" ner, when he ſits alone at the table, and is attend-
" ed in the moſt public manner, with more than
" European ceremony. This is done to create an
" awe and reſpect towards him in the eye of the
" vulgar; but leſt it ſhould elevate him too much
" in his own opinion, in order to his humiliation, he
" receives every evening in private, from a kind of
" beadle, a gentle kick on his poſteriors, beſides
" which, he wears a ring in his noſe, ſomewhat re-
" ſembling that we ring our pigs with, and a chain
" round his neck, not unlike that worn by our al-
" dermen; both which, I ſuppoſe, to be emblematical,
" but heard not the reaſons of either aſſigned. There
" are many more particulars among theſe people,
" which, when I have an opportunity, I may relate
" to you. The ſecond day after my return from
" court, one of his officers, whom they call SCHACH
" PIMPACH, waited upon me, and, by a French in-
" terpreter who lives here, informed me, that the chief
" magiſtrate liked my perſon, and offered me an im-
" menſe preſent, if I would ſuffer him to enjoy it
" (this is, it ſeems, their common form of making
" love.) I rejected the preſent, and never heard any
" further ſolicitation; for, as it is no ſhame for
" women here to conſent at the firſt propoſal, ſo they
" never receive a ſecond.

" I HAD reſided in this town a week, when the
" captain informed me, that a number of ſlaves,
" who had been taken captives in war, were to be
" guarded to the ſea-ſide, where they were to be ſold

" to the merchants, who traded in them to America;
" that if I would embrace this opportunity, I might
" aſſure myſelf of finding a paſſage to America, and
" thence to England; acquainting me, at the ſame
" time, that he himſelf intended to go with them. I
" readily agreed to accompany him. The chief, being
" advertiſed of our deſigns, ſent for us both to court,
" and, without mentioning a word of love to me,
" having preſented me with a very rich jewel, of leſs
" value, he ſaid, than my chaſtity, took a very civil
" leave, recommanding me to the care of heaven,
" and ordering us a large ſupply of proviſions for our
" journey.

" We were provided with mules for ourſelves, and
" what we carried with us, and in nine days, reached
" the ſea-ſhore, where we found an Engliſh veſſel
" ready to receive both us and the ſlaves. We went
" aboard it, and ſailed the next day with a fair wind
" for New England, where I hope to get an imme-
" diate paſſage to the Old: But Providence was kinder
" than my expectation; for the third day after we
" were at ſea, we met an Engliſh man of war home-
" ward bound; the captain of it was a very good-
" natured man, and agreed to take me on board. I
" accordingly took my leave of my old friend the
" maſter of the ſhipwrecked veſſel, who went on to
" New England, whence he intended to paſs to Ja-
" maica, where his owners lived. I was now treated
" with great civility, had a little cabin aſſigned me,
" dined every day at the captain's table, who was in-
" deed a very gallant man, and, at firſt, made me
" a tender of his affections; but, when he found me
" reſolutely bent to preſerve myſelf pure and entire
" for the beſt of huſbands, he grew cooler in his ad-
" dreſſes, and ſoon behaved in a manner very pleaſing
" to me, regarding my ſex only ſo far as to pay me a
" deference which is very agreeable to us all.

" To conclude my ſtory; I met with no adven-
" ture in this paſſage at all worth relating, till my
" landing at Graveſend, whence the captain brought
" me in his own boat to the Tower. In a ſhort hour
" after my arrival we had that meeting, which,

" however

" however dreadful at firſt, will I now hope, by the " good offices, of the beſt of men, whom heaven for " ever bleſs, end in our perfect happineſs, and be " a ſtrong inſtance of what I am perſuaded is the " ſureſt truth, THAT PROVIDENCE WILL, SOONER " OR LATER, PROCURE THE FELICITY OF THE " VIRTUOUS AND INNOCENT."

MRS. Heartfree thus ended her ſpeech, having before delivered to her huſband the jewels which the Count had robbed him of, and that preſented her by the African chief, which laſt was of immenſe value. The good magiſtrate was ſenſibly touched at her narrative, as well on the conſideration of the ſufferings ſhe had herſelf undergone, as for thoſe of her huſband, which he had himſelf been innocently the inſtrument of bringing upon him. That worthy man, however, much rejoiced in what he had already done for his preſervation, and promiſed to labour, with his utmoſt intereſt and induſtry, to procure the abſolute pardon, rather of his ſentence, than of his guilt, which he now plainly diſcovered was a barbarous and falſe imputation.

CHAP. XII.

The hiſtory returns to the contemplation of GREATNESS.

BUT we have already perhaps detained our reader too long in this relation, from the conſideration of our hero, who daily gave the moſt exalted proofs of greatneſs, in cajoling the *Prigs*, and in exactions on the debtors; which latter grew now ſo great, i. e. corrupted in their morals, that they ſpoke with the utmoſt contempt of what the vulgar call Honeſty. The greateſt character among them was that of a pick-pocket, or, in truer language, a File; and the only cenſure was want of dexterity. As to virtue, goodneſs, and ſuch like, they were the objects of mirth and deriſion, and all Newgate was a complete collection of *Prigs*, every man being deſirous to pick his neighbour's pocket, and every one was as ſenſible that his neighbour was as ready to pick

his; ſo that (which is almoſt incredible) as great roguery was daily committed within the walls of Newgate as without.

THE glory reſulting from theſe actions of Wild probably animated the envy of his enemies againſt him. The day of his trial now approached; for which, as Socrates did, he prepared himſelf; but not weakly and fooliſhly, like that philoſopher, with patience and reſignation, but with a good number of falſe witneſſes. However, as ſucceſs is not always proportioned to the wiſdom of him who endeavours to attain it; ſo are we more ſorry than aſhamed to relate, that our hero was, notwithſtanding his utmoſt caution and prudence, convicted, and ſentenced to a death, which, when we conſider not only the great men who have ſuffered it, but the much larger number of thoſe whoſe higheſt honour it hath been to merit it, we cannot call otherwiſe than Honourable. Indeed thoſe who have unluckily miſſed it, ſeem all their days to have laboured in vain to attain an end, which fortune, for reaſons only known to herſelf, hath thought proper to deny them. Without any farther preface then, our hero was ſentenced to be hanged by the neck: But whatever was to be now his fate, he might conſole himſelf that he had perpetrated what

——nec Judicis ira, nec ignis,
Nec poterit ferrum, nec edax abolere vetuſtas.

For my own part, I confeſs, I look on this death of Hanging to be as proper for a Hero as any other; and I ſolemnly declare, that had Alexander the Great been hanged, it would not in the leaſt have diminiſhed my reſpect to his memory. Provided a hero in his life doth but execute a ſufficient quantity of miſchief; provided he be but well and heartily curſed by the widow, the orphan, the poor, and the oppreſſed (the ſole rewards, as many authors have bitterly lamented both in proſe and verſe, of greatneſs, i. e. *Priggiſm*) I think it avails little of what nature his death be, whether it be by the axe, the halter, or the

the ſword. Such names will be always ſure of living to poſterity, and of enjoying that fame which they ſo glorioufly and eagerly coveted; for, according to a GREAT Dramatic poet,

——Fame
Not more ſurvives from good than evil deeds.
Th' aſpiring youth that fired th' Epheſian dome,
Outlives in fame the pious fool who rais'd it.

OUR hero now ſuſpected that the malice of his enemies would overpower him. He, therefore, betook himſelf to that true ſupport of greatneſs in affliction, a bottle; by means of which he was enabled to curſe, and ſwear, and bully, and brave his fate. Other comfort indeed he had not much; for not a ſingle friend ever came near him. His wife, whoſe trial was deferred to the next ſeſſions, viſited him but once, when ſhe plagued tormented, and upbraided him ſo cruelly, that he forbad the keeper ever to admit her again. The Ordinary of Newgate had frequent conferences with him, and greatly would it embelliſh our hiſtory, could we record all which that good man delivered on theſe occaſions; but unhappily we could procure only the ſubſtance of a ſingle conference, which was taken down in ſhort-hand by one who overheard it. We ſhall tranſcribe it, therefore, exactly in the ſame form and words we received it; nor can we help regarding it as one of the moſt curious pieces, which either ancient or modern hiſtory hath recorded.

CHAP. XIII.

A dialogue between the Ordinary of Newgate and Mr. Jonathan Wild *the Great: In which the ſubjects of death, immortality, and other grave matters, are very learnedly handled by the former.*

ORDINARY. GOOD morrow to you, Sir; I hope you reſted well laſt night.

JONATHAN. D——n'd ill, Sir. I dreamt ſo confoundedly of hanging, that it diſturbed my ſleep.

ORDINARY.

ORDINARY. Fie upon it. You ſhould be more reſigned. I wiſh you would make a little better uſe of thoſe inſtructions which I have endeavoured to inculcate into you, and particularly laſt Sunday, and from theſe words: *Thoſe who do evil ſhall go into everlaſting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels.* I undertook to ſhew you, firſt, what is meant by EVERLASTING FIRE; and, ſecondly, who were THE DEVIL AND HIS ANGELS. I then proceeded to draw ſome inferences from the whole *; in which I am mightily deceived, if I did not convince you, that you yourſelf was one of thoſe ANGELS; and, conſequently, muſt expect EVERLASTING FIRE to be your portion in the other world.

JONATHAN. Faith, Doctor, I remember very little of your inferences; for I fell aſleep ſoon after your naming your text: but did you preach this doctrine then, or do you repeat it now, in order to comfort me?

ORDINARY. I do it, in order to bring you to a true ſenſe of your manifold ſins, and by that means, to induce you to repentance. Indeed, had I the eloquence of Cicero, or of Tully, it would not be ſufficient to deſcribe the pains of hell, or the joys of heaven. The utmoſt that we are taught is, *that ear hath not heard, nor can heart conceive.* Who then would, for the pitiful conſideration of the riches and pleaſures of this world, forfeit ſuch ineſtimable happineſs! Such joys! Such pleaſures! Such delights! Or who would run the venture of ſuch miſery, which but to think on, ſhocks the human underſtanding! Who, in his ſenſes, then would prefer the latter to the former?

JONATHAN. Ay, who indeed! I aſſure you, Doctor, I had much rather be happy than miſerable. But† * * *

ORDINARY. Nothing can be plainer. St. * * *

* * * * * * * * * * *
* * * * *

ORDINARY. Ay, all this is very true; but life is ſweet for all that, and I had rather live to eternity, than go into the company of any ſuch heathens, who are, I doubt not, in hell with the devil and his angels; and, as little as you ſeem to apprehend it, you may find yourſelf there before you expect it. Where then will be your tauntings and your vauntings, your boaſtings and your braggings? You will then be ready to give more for a drop of water than you ever gave for a bottle of wine.

JONATHAN. Faith, Doctor, well minded. What ſay you to a bottle of wine?

ORDINARY. I will drink no wine with an atheiſt. I ſhould expect the devil to make a third in ſuch company; for, ſince he knows you are his, he may be impatient to have his due.

JONATHAN. It is your buſineſs to drink with the wicked, in order to amend them.

ORDINARY. I deſpair of it; and ſo I conſign you over to the devil, who is ready to receive you.

JONATHAN. You are more unmerciful to me than the judge, Doctor. He recommended my ſoul to heaven; and it is your office to ſhew me the way thither.

ORDINARY. No: The gates are barred againſt all revilers of the clergy.

JONATHAN. I revile only the wicked ones, if any ſuch are, which cannot affect you, who, if men were preferred in the church by merit only, would have long ſince been a biſhop. Indeed, it might raiſe any good man's indignation to obſerve one of your vaſt learning and abilities obliged to exert them in ſo low a ſphere, when ſo many of your inferiors wallow in wealth and preferment.

ORDINARY. Why, it muſt be confeſſed, that there are bad men in all orders; but you ſhould not cenſure too generally. I muſt own I might have expected higher promotion; but I have learnt patience and reſignation; and I would adviſe you to the ſame temper of mind, which if you can attain, I know you

will

will find mercy; nay, I do now promiſe you, you will. It is true, you are a ſinner; but your crimes are not of the blackeſt dye: You are no murderer, nor guilty of ſacrilege. And if you are guilty of theft, you make ſome atonement by ſuffering for it, which many others do not. Happy it is, indeed, for thoſe few who are detected in their ſins, and brought to exemplary puniſhment for them in this world. So far, therefore, from repining at your fate when you come to the tree, you ſhould exult and rejoice in it; and, to ſay the truth, I queſtion, whether to a wiſe man, the cataſtrophe of many of thoſe who die by a halter, is not more to be envied than pitied. Nothing is ſo ſinful as ſin, and murder is the greateſt of all ſins; it follows, that whoever commits murder is happy in ſuffering for it; if therefore a man who commits murder is ſo happy in dying for it, how much better muſt it be for you, who have committed a leſs crime?

JONATHAN. All this is very true; but let us take a bottle of wine to chear our ſpirits.

ORDINARY. Why wine? Let me tell you, Mr. Wild, there is nothing ſo deceitful as the ſpirits given us by wine. If you muſt drink, let us have a bowl of punch; a liquor I the rather prefer, as it is no where ſpoken againſt in ſcripture, and as it is more wholeſome for the gravel; a diſtemper with which I am grievouſly afflicted.

JONATHAN. (Having called for a bowl.) I aſk your pardon, Doctor, I ſhould have remembered, that punch was your favourite liquor. I think you never taſte wine while there is any punch remaining on the table.

ORDINARY. I confeſs, I look on punch to be the more eligible liquor, as well for the reaſons I have before mentioned, as likewiſe for one other cauſe, viz. it is the propereſt for a GRAUGHT. I own I took it a little unkind of you to mention wine, thinking you knew my palate.

JONATHAN. You are in the right; and I will take a ſwinging cup to your being made a biſhop.

ORDINARY. And I will wiſh you a reprieve in as large a *draught*. Come, don't deſpair: it is yet time enough

enough to think of dying, you have good friends, who very probably may prevail for you. I have known many a man reprieved, who had leſs reaſon to expect it.

JONATHAN. But if I ſhould flatter myſelf with ſuch hopes, and be deceived, what then would become of my ſoul?

ORDINARY. Pugh! Never mind your ſoul, leave that to me; I will render a good account of it, I warrant you. I have a ſermon in my pocket, which may be of ſome uſe to you to hear. I do not value myſelf on the talent of preaching, ſince no man ought to value himſelf for any gift in this world:——But, perhaps, there are not many ſuch ſermons.——But to proceed, ſince we have nothing elſe to do till the punch comes.—My text is the latter part of a verſe only.

——— *To the Greeks* FOOLISHNESS.

THE occaſion of theſe words was principally that philoſophy of the Greeks, which, at that time, had over-run great part of the heathen world, had poiſoned, and as it were puffed up their minds with pride, ſo that they diſregarded all kinds of doctrine in compariſon of their own; and however ſafe, and however ſound the learning of others might be, yet, if it any wiſe contradicted their own laws, cuſtoms, and received opinions, *away with it, it is not for us.* It was to the Greeks FOOLISHNESS.

IN the former part therefore of my diſcourſe on theſe words, I ſhall principally confine myſelf to the laying open and demonſtrating the great emptineſs and vanity of this philoſophy, and which theſe idle and abſurd ſophiſts were ſo proudly blown up and elevated:

AND here I ſhall do two things: Firſt, I ſhall expoſe the matter; and ſecondly, the manner of this abſurd philoſophy.

AND firſt, for the firſt of theſe, namely the matter. Now here we may retort the unmannerly word, which our adverſaries have audaciouſly thrown in our faces; for what was all this mighty matter of philoſophy, this heap of knowledge, which was to bring

ſuch

ſuch large harveſts of honour to thoſe who ſowed it, and ſo greatly and nobly to enrich the ground on which it fell; what was it but FOOLISHNESS? an inconſiſtent heap of nonſenſe, of abſurdities and contradictions, bringing no ornament to the mind in its theory, nor exhibiting any uſefulneſs to the body in its practice. What were all the ſermons and the ſayings, the fables and the morals of all theſe wiſe men, but to uſe the word mentioned in my text once more, FOOLISHNESS? What was their great maſter Plato, or their other great light Ariſtotle? But fools, mere quibblers and ſophiſts, idly and vainly attached to certain ridiculous notions of their own, founded neither on truth nor on reaſon. Their whole works are a ſtrange medley of the greateſt falſhoods, ſcarce covered over with the colour of truth: Their precepts are neither borrowed from nature, nor guided by reaſon: Mere fictions, only to evince the dreadful height of human pride; in one word, FOOLISHNESS. It may be, perhaps, expected of me, that I ſhould give ſome inſtances from their works to prove this charge; but as to tranſcribe every paſſage to my purpoſe, would be to tranſcribe their whole works, and as in ſuch a plentiful crop, it is difficult to chuſe; inſtead of treſpaſſing on your patience, I ſhall conclude this firſt head with aſſerting what I have ſo fully proved, and what may, indeed, be inferred from the text, that the philoſophy of the Greeks was FOOLISHNESS.

PROCEED we now in the ſecond place, to conſider the manner in which this inane and ſimple doctrine was propagated. And here——But here, the punch by entering waked Mr. Wild, who was faſt aſleep, and put an end to the ſermon; nor could we obtain any further account of the converſation which paſſed at this interview.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIV.

Wild *proceeds to the higheſt conſummation of human* GREATNESS.

THE day now drew nigh, when our great man was to exemplify the laſt and nobleſt act of greatneſs, by which any hero can ſignalize himſelf. This was the day of execution, or conſummation, or apotheoſis (for it is called by different names) which was to give our hero an opportunity of facing death and damnation, without any fear in his heart, or at leaſt without betraying any ſymptoms of it in his countenance. A completion of greatneſs which is heartily to be wiſhed to every great man; nothing being more worthy of lamentation than when fortune, like a lazy poet, winds up her cataſtrophe aukwardly, and beſtowing too little care on her fifth act, diſmiſſes the hero with a ſneaking and private exit, who had in the former part of the drama performed ſuch notable exploits, as muſt promiſe to every good judge among the ſpectators, a noble, public, and exalted end.

BUT ſhe was reſolved to commit no ſuch error in this inſtance. Our hero was too much and too deſervedly her favourite, to be neglected by her in his laſt moments: Accordingly all efforts for a reprieve were vain, and the name of Wild ſtood at the head of thoſe who were ordered for execution.

FROM the time he gave over all hopes of life, his conduct was truly great and admirable. Inſtead of ſhewing any marks of dejection or contrition, he rather infuſed more confidence and aſſuarance into his looks. He ſpent moſt of his hours in drinking with his friends, and with the good man above commemorated. In one of theſe compotations, being aſked, whether he was afraid to die, he anſwered, d—n me, it is only a dance without muſic. Another time, when one expreſſed ſome ſorrow for his misfortune, as he termed it, he ſaid, with great fierceneſs, a man can die but once. Again, when one of his intimate acquaintance hinted his hopes, that he would die like

a man,

a man, he cocked his hat in defiance, and cried out greatly, Zounds! who's afraid?

HAPPY would it have been for poſterity, could we have retrieved any entire converſation which paſſed at this ſeaſon, eſpecially between our hero and his learned comforter; but we have ſearched many paſteboard records in vain.

ON the eve of his apotheoſis, Wild's lady deſired to ſee him, to which he conſented. This meeting was at firſt very tender on both ſides: but it could not continue ſo: For unluckily ſome hints of former miſcarriages intervening, as particularly when ſhe aſked him, how he could have uſed her ſo barbarouſly once, as calling her B——; and whether ſuch language became a man, much leſs a gentleman, Wild flew into a violent paſſion, and ſwore ſhe was the vileſt of B——s, to upbraid him at ſuch a ſeaſon with an unguarded word ſpoke long ago. She replied, with many tears, ſhe was well enough ſerved for her folly in viſiting ſuch a brute; but ſhe had one comfort however, that it would be the laſt time he could ever treat her ſo; that indeed ſhe had ſome obligation to him, for that his cruelty to her would reconcile her to the fate he was to-morrow to ſuffer; and indeed, nothing but ſuch brutality could have made the conſideration of his ſhameful death (ſo this weak woman called hanging) which was now inevitable, to be borne even without madneſs. She then proceeded to a recapitulation of his faults in an exact order, and with more perfect memory than one would have imagined her capable of; and, it is probable, would have rehearſed a complete catalogue, had not our hero's patience failed him, ſo that with the utmoſt fury and violence he caught her by the hair, and kicked her, as heartily at his chains would ſuffer him, out of the room.

AT length the morning came, which fortune at his birth had reſolutely ordained for the conſummation of our hero's GREATNESS: He had himſelf indeed modeſtly declined the public honours ſhe intended him, and had taken a quantity of laudanum, in order to retire quietly off the ſtage; but we have

already obſerved, in the courſe of our wonderful hiſtory, that to ſtruggle againſt this lady's decrees is vain and impotent: And whether ſhe hath determined you ſhall be hanged or be a prime miniſter, it is in either caſe loſt labour to reſiſt. Laudanum, therefore, being unable to ſtop the breath of our hero, which the fruit of hemp-ſeed, and not the ſpirit of poppy-ſeed, was to overcome, he was at the uſual hour attended by the proper gentlemen appointed for that purpoſe, and acquainted that the cart was ready. On this occaſion he exerted that greatneſs of courage, which hath been ſo much celebrated in other heroes; and knowing it was impoſſible to reſiſt, he gravely declared, he would attend them. He then deſcended to that room where the fetters of great men are knocked off, in a moſt ſolemn and ceremonious manner. Then ſhaking hands with his friends (to wit, thoſe who were conducting him to the tree) and drinking their healths in a bumper of brandy, he aſcended the cart, where he was no ſooner ſeated, than he received the acclamations of the multitude, who were highly raviſhed with his GREATNESS.

THE cart now moved ſlowly on, being preceded by a troop of horſe guards bearing javelins in their hands, through ſtreets lined with crowds all admiring the great behaviour of our hero, who rode on, ſometimes ſighing, ſometimes ſwearing, ſometimes ſinging or whiſtling, as his humour varied.

WHEN he came to the tree of glory, he was welcomed with an univerſal ſhout of the people, who were there aſſembled in prodigious numbers, to behold a ſight much more rare in populous cities than one would reaſonably imagine it ſhould be, viz. the proper cataſtrophe of a great man.

BUT tho' envy was, through fear, obliged to join the general voice in applauſe on this occaſion, there were not wanting ſome who maligned this completion of glory, which was now about to be fulfilled to our hero, and endeavoured to prevent it by knocking him on the head as he ſtood under the tree, while the ordinary was performing his laſt office. They therefore began to batter the cart with ſtones, brick-bats, dirt,

dirt, and all manner of miſchievous weapons, ſome of which erroneouſly playing on the robes of the eccleſiaſtic, made him ſo expeditious in his repetition, that with wonderful alacrity he had ended almoſt in an inſtant, and conveyed himſelf into a place of ſafety in an hackney coach, where he waited the concluſion with the temper of mind deſcribed in theſe verſes,

Suave mari magno, turbantibus æquora ventis,
E terra alterius magnum ſpectare laborem.

We muſt not however omit one circumſtance, as it ſerves to ſhew the moſt admirable converſation of character in our hero to his laſt moment, which was, that whilſt the ordinary was buſy in his ejaculations, Wild, in the midſt of the ſhower of ſtones, &c. which played upon him, applied his hands to the parſon's pocket, and emptied it of his bottle-ſcrew, which he carried out of the world in his hand.

The ordinary being now deſcended from the cart, Wild had juſt opportunity to caſt his eyes around the crowd, and to give them a hearty curſe, when immediately the horſes moved on, and with univerſal applauſe our hero ſwung out of this world.

Thus fell Jonathan Wild the Great, by a death as glorious as his life had been, and which was ſo truly agreeable to it, that the latter muſt have been deplorably maimed and imperfect without the former; a death which hath been alone wanting to complete the characters of ſeveral ancient and modern heroes, whoſe hiſtories would have been read with much greater pleaſure by the wiſeſt in all ages. Indeed we could almoſt wiſh, that whenever fortune ſeems wantonly to deviate from her purpoſe, and leaves her work imperfect in this particular, the hiſtorian would indulge himſelf in the licence of poetry and romance, and even do a violence to truth, to oblige his reader with a page, which muſt be the moſt delightful in all his hiſtory, and which could never fail of producing an inſtructive moral.

Narrow minds may poſſibly have ſome reaſon to be aſhamed of going this way out of the world, if their conſciences can fly in their faces, and aſſure

them they have not merited ſuch an honour; but he muſt be a fool who is aſhamed of being hanged, who is not weak enough to be aſhamed of having deſerved it.

CHAP. XV.

The character of our hero, and the concluſion of this hiſtory.

WE will now endeavour to draw the character of this Great man, and by bringing together thoſe ſeveral features as it were of his mind, which lie ſcattered up and down in this hiſtory, to preſent our readers with a perfect picture of greatneſs.

JONATHAN WILD had every qualification neceſſary to form a great man. As his moſt powerful and predominant paſſion was ambition, ſo nature had, with conſummate propriety, adapted all his faculties to the attaining thoſe glorious ends to which this paſſion directed him. He was extremely ingenious in inventing deſigns, artful in contriving the means to accompliſh his purpoſes, and reſolute in executing them: For, as the moſt exquiſite cunning and moſt undaunted boldneſs qualified him for any undertaking, ſo was he not reſtrained by any of thoſe weakneſſes which diſappoint the views of mean and vulgar ſouls, and which are comprehended in one general term of honeſty, which is a corruption of HONOSTY, a word derived from what the Greeks call an Aſs. He was entirely free from thoſe low vices of modeſty and goodnature, which, as he ſaid, implied a total negation of human greatneſs, and were the only qualities which abſolutely rendered a man incapable of making a conſiderable figure in the world. His luſt was inferior only to his ambition; but, as for what ſimple people call love, he knew not what it was. His avarice was immenſe; but it was of the rapacious not of the tenacious kind; his rapaciouſneſs was indeed ſo violent, that nothing ever contented him but the whole; for, however conſiderable the ſhare was, which his coadjutors allowed him of a booty, he was reſtleſs in inventing means to make himſelf maſter of the ſmalleſt pit-

tance reſerved by them. He ſaid, laws were made for the uſe of *Prigs* only, and to ſecure their property; they were never therefore more perverted, than when their edge was turned againſt theſe, but that this generally happened through their want of ſufficient dexterity. The character which he moſt valued himſelf upon, and which he principally honoured in others, was that of hypocriſy. His opinion was, that no one could carry *Priggiſm* very far without it; for which reaſon, he ſaid, there was little greatneſs to be expected in a man who acknowledged his vices; but always much to be hoped from him, who profeſſed great virtues; wherefore, though he would always ſhun the perſon whom he diſcovered guilty of a good action, yet he was never deterred by a good character, which was more commonly the effect of profeſſion than of action: for which reaſon, he himſelf was always very liberal of honeſt profeſſions, and had as much virtue and goodneſs in his mouth as a ſaint; never in the leaſt ſcrupling to ſwear by his honour, even to thoſe who knew him the beſt; nay, tho' he held good-nature and modeſty in the higheſt contempt, he conſtantly practiſed the affectation of both, and recommended this to others, whoſe welfare, on his own account, he wiſhed well to. He laid down ſeveral maxims, as the certain methods of attaining greatneſs, to which in his own purſuit of it, he conſtantly adhered. As

1. NEVER to do more miſchief to another, than was neceſſary to the effecting his purpoſe; for that miſchief was too precious a thing to be thrown away.
2. To know no diſtinction of men from affection; but to ſacrifice all with equal readineſs to his intereſt.
3. NEVER to communicate more of an affair than was neceſſary, to the perſon who was to execute it.
4. NOT to truſt him, who hath deceived you, nor who knows he hath been deceived by you,
5. To forgive no enemy; but to be cautious and often dilatory in revenge.

6. To ſhun poverty and diſtreſs, and to ally himſelf as cloſe as poſſible to power and riches.
7. To maintain a conſtant gravity in his countenance and behaviour, and to affect wiſdom on all occaſions.
8. To foment eternal jealouſies in his gang, one of another.
9. NEVER to reward any one equal to his merit; but always to inſinuate, that the reward was above it.
10. THAT all men were knaves or fools, and much the greater number a compoſition of both.
11. THAT a good name, like money, muſt be parted with, or at leaſt greatly riſqued, in order to bring the owner any advantage.
12. THAT virtues, like precious ſtones, were eaſily counterfeited; that the counterfeits in both caſes adorned the wearer equally, and that very few had knowledge or diſcernment ſufficient to diſtinguiſh the counterfeit jewel from the real.
13. THAT many men were undone by not going deep enough in roguery; as in gaming any man may be a loſer who doth not play the whole game.
14. THAT men proclaim their own virtues, as ſhopkeepers expoſe their goods, in order to profit by them.
15. THAT the heart was the proper ſeat of hatred, and the countenance of affection and friendſhip.

HE had many more of the ſame kind, all equally good with theſe, and which were after his deceaſe found in his ſtudy, as the twelve excellent and celebrated rules were in that of king Charles the firſt; for he never promulgated them in his life-time, not having them conſtantly in his mouth, as ſome grave perſons have the rules of virtue and morality, without paying the leaſt regard to them in their actions: whereas our hero, by a conſtant and ſteady adherence to his rules in conforming every thing he did to them, acquired at length a ſettled habit of walking by them, till at laſt he was in no danger of inadvertently going out of the way; and by theſe means he arrived at

that degree of greatneſs, which few have equalled; none, we may ſay, have exceeded: For tho' it muſt be allowed that there have been ſome few heroes, who have done greater miſchiefs to mankind, ſuch as thoſe who have betrayed the liberty of their country to others, or have undermined and over-powered it themſelves; or conquerors who have impoveriſhed, pillaged, ſacked, burnt, and deſtroyed the countries and cities of their fellow-creatures, from no other provocation than that of glory; i. e. as the tragic poet calls it,

——*a privilege to kill,*
A ſtrong temptation to do bravely ill.

yet, if we conſider it in the light wherein actions are placed in this line,

Lætius eſt, quoties magno tibi conſtat honeſtum,

when we ſee our hero, without the leaſt aſſiſtance or pretence, ſetting himſelf at the head of a gang, which he had not any ſhadow of right to govern; if we view him maintaining abſolute power, and exerciſing tyranny over a lawleſs crew, contrary to all law, but that of his own will; if we conſider him ſetting up an open trade publickly, in defiance, not only of the laws of his country, but of the common ſenſe of his countrymen; if we ſee him firſt contriving the robbery of others, and again the defrauding the very robbers of that booty, which they had ventured their necks to acquire, and which without any hazard they might have retained: here ſure he muſt appear admirable, and we may challenge not only the truth of hiſtory, but almoſt the latitude of fiction to equal his glory.

Nor had he any of thoſe flaws in his character, which, though they have been commended by weak writers, have (as I hinted in the beginning of this hiſtory) by the judicious reader been cenſured and deſpiſed. Such was the clemency of Alexander and Cæſar, which nature hath as groſſly erred in giving them, as a painter would, who ſhould dreſs a peaſant in robes of ſtate, or give the noſe, or any other feature of a Venus, to a ſatyr. What had the deſtroyers of mankind, that glorious pair, one of whom came

came into the world to uſurp the dominion, and aboliſh the conſtitution of his own country; the other to conquer, enſlave, and rule over the whole world, at leaſt as much as was well known to him, and the ſhortneſs of his life would give him leave to viſit; what had, I ſay, ſuch as theſe to do with clemency? Who cannot ſee the abſurdity and contradiction of mixing ſuch an ingredient with thoſe noble and great qualities I have before mentioned. Now in Wild, every thing was truly great, almoſt without alloy, as his imperfections (for ſurely ſome ſmall ones he had) were only ſuch as ſerved to denominate him a human creature, of which kind none ever arrived at conſummate excellence: but ſurely his whole behaviour to his friend Heartfree is a convincing proof, that the true iron or ſteel greatneſs of his heart was not debaſed by any ſofter metal. Indeed while greatneſs conſiſts in power, pride, inſolence, and doing miſchief to mankind;—to ſpeak out—while a great man and a great rogue are ſynonymous terms, ſo long ſhall Wild ſtand unrivalled on the pinnacle of GREATNESS. Nor muſt we omit here, as the finiſhing of his character, what indeed ought to be remembered on his tomb or his ſtatue, the conformity above-mentioned of his death to his life; and that Jonathan Wild the Great, after all his mighty exploits, was, what ſo few GREAT men can accompliſh—hanged by the neck till he was dead.

HAVING thus brought our hero to his concluſion, it may be ſatisfactory to ſome readers (for many, I doubt not, carry their concern no farther than his fate) to know what became of Heartfree. We ſhall acquaint them, therefore, that his ſufferings were now at an end; that the good magiſtrate eaſily prevailed for his pardon, nor was contented till he had made him all the reparation he could for his troubles, tho' the ſhare he had in bringing theſe upon him, was not only innocent, but, from its motive, laudable. He procured the reſtoration of the jewels from the man of war, at her return to England, and, above all, omitted no labour to reſtore Heartfree to his reputation, and to perſuade his neighbours, acquaint-

ance,

ance, and cuſtomers of his innocence. When the commiſſion of bankruptcy was ſatisfied, Heartfree had a conſiderable ſum remaining; for the diamond preſented to his wife was of prodigious value, and infinitely recompenſed the loſs of thoſe jewels which Miſs Straddle had diſpoſed of. He now ſet up again in his trade; compaſſion for his unmerited misfortunes brought him many cuſtomers among thoſe who had any regard to humanity; and he hath, by induſtry, joined with parſimony, amaſſed a conſiderable fortune. His wife and he are now grown old in the pureſt love and friendſhip; but never had another child. Friendly married his elder daughter at the age of nineteen, and became his partner in trade. As to the younger, ſhe never would liſten to the addreſſes of any lover, not even of a young nobleman, who offered to take her with two thouſand pounds, which her father would have willingly produced, and indeed did his utmoſt to perſuade her to the match: But ſhe refuſed abſolutely, nor would give any other reaſon when Heartfree preſſed her, than that ſhe had dedicated her days to his ſervice, and was reſolved, no other duty ſhould interfere with that which ſhe owed the beſt of fathers, nor prevent her from being the nurſe of his old age.

THUS Heartfree, his wife, his two daughters, his ſon-in-law, and his grand children, of which he hath ſeveral, live all together in one houſe; and that with ſuch amity and affection towards each other, that they are in the neighbourhood called the family of love.

As to all the other perſons mentioned in this hiſtory, in the light of greatneſs, they had all the fate adapted to it, being every one hanged by the neck, ſave two, viz. Miſs Theodoſia Snap, who was tranſported to America, where ſhe was pretty well married, reformed, and made a good wife; and the Count, who recovered of the wound he had received from the hermit, and made his eſcape into France, where he committed a robbery, was taken, and broke on the wheel.

INDEED, whoever conſiders the common fate of great men muſt allow, they well deſerve and hardly earn

earn that applauſe which is given them by the world; for, when we reflect on the labours and pains, the cares, diſquietudes, and dangers, which attend their road to greatneſs, we may ſay with the divine *that a man may go to heaven with half the pains which it coſts him to purchaſe hell.* To ſay the truth, the world have this reaſon at leaſt to honour ſuch characters as that of Wild; that while it is in the power of every man to be perfectly honeſt, not one in a thouſand is capable of being a complete rogue; and few indeed there are who, if they were inſpired with the vanity of imitating our hero, would not after much fruitleſs pains be obliged to own themſelves inferior to Mr. JONATHAN WILD the GREAT.

A JOUR-

A

JOURNEY

FROM

This WORLD to the Next, &c.

THE

INTRODUCTION.

WHETHER the enſuing pages were really the dream or viſion of ſome very pious and holy perſon; or whether they were really written in the other world, and ſent back to this, which is the opinion of many, (though I think, too much inclining to ſuperſtition;) or laſtly, whether, as infinitely the greateſt part imagine, they were really the production of ſome choice inhabitant of New-Bethlehem, is not neceſſary nor eaſy to determine. It will be abundantly ſufficient, if I give the reader an account by what means they came into my poſſeſſion.

MR. Robert Powney, ſtationer, who dwells oppoſite to Catherine-Street in the ſtrand, a very honeſt man, and of great gravity of countenance; who, among other excellent ſtationary commodities, is particularly eminent for his pens, which I am abundantly bound to acknowledge, as I owe to their peculiar goodneſs, that my manuſcripts have by any means been legible: this gentleman, I ſay, furniſhed me ſome time ſince with a bundle of thoſe pens, wrapt up with great care and caution, in a very large ſheet of paper full of characters, written as it ſeemed in a very bad hand. Now, I have a ſurpriſing curioſity to read every thing which is almoſt illegible; partly, perhaps, from the ſweet remembrance of the dear Scrawls. Skrawls, or Skrales, (for the word is variouſly ſpelt) which I have in my youth received from that lovely part of the creation for which I have the tendereſt regard; and partly from that temper of mind which makes men ſet an immenſe value on old manuſcripts.

ſo effaced, buſtos ſo maimed, and pictures ſo black, that no one can tell what to make of them. I therefore peruſed this ſheet with wonderful application, and in about a day's time diſcovered that I could not underſtand it. I immediately repaired to Mr. Powney, and inquired very eagerly, whether he had not more of the ſame manuſcript. He produced about one hundred pages, acquainting me that he had ſaved no more; but that the book was originally a huge folio, had been left in his garret by a gentleman who lodged there, and who had left him no other ſatisfaction for nine months lodging. He proceeded to inform me, that the manuſcript had been hawked about (as he phraſed it) among all the bookſellers, who refuſed to meddle; ſome alledged that they could not read, others that they could not underſtand it. Seme would have it to be an atheiſtical book, and ſome that it was a libel on the government; for one or other of which reaſons, they all refuſed to print it. That it had been likewiſe ſhewn to the R— Society, but they ſhook their heads, ſaying, there was nothing in it wonderful enough for them. That hearing the gentleman was gone to the Weſt-Indies, and believing it to be good for nothing elſe, he had uſed it as waſte paper. He ſaid, I was welcome to what remained, and he was heartily ſorry for what was miſſing, as I ſeemed to ſet ſome value on it.

I DESIRED him much to name a price: but he would receive no conſideration farther than the payment of a ſmall bill I owed him, which at that time he ſaid he looked on as ſo much money given him.

I PRESENTLY communicated this manuſcript to my friend parſon Abraham Adams, who, after a long and careful peruſal, returned it me with his opinion, that there was more in it than at firſt appeared; that the author ſeemed not entirely unacquainted with the writings of Plato; but he wiſhed he had quoted him ſometimes in his margin, that I might be ſure (ſaid he) he had read him in the original: for nothing, continued the parſon, is commoner than for men now a-days to pretend to have read Greek authors, who have met with them only in tranſlations, and cannot conjugate a *verb in mi*.

To deliver my own ſentiments on the occaſion, I think the author diſcovers a philoſophical turn of thinking, with ſome little knowledge of the world, and no very inadequate value of it. There are ſome indeed, who, from the vivacity of their temper, and the happineſs of their ſtation, are willing to conſider its bleſſings as more ſubſtantial, and the whole to be a ſcene of more conſequence that it is here repreſented; but without controverting their opinions at preſent, the number of wiſe and good men, who have thought with our author, are ſufficient to keep him in countenance; nor can this be attended with any ill inference, ſince he every where teaches this moral, That the greateſt and trueſt happineſs which this world affords, is to be found only in the poſſeſſion of goodneſs and virtue; a doctrine, which as it is undoubtedly true, ſo hath it ſo noble and practical a tendency, that it can never be too often or too ſtrongly inculcated on the minds of men.

JOURNEY

FROM

This WORLD to the Next, &c.

BOOK I.

CHAP. I.

The author dies, meets with Mercury, *and is by him conducted to the ſtage which ſets out for the other world.*

ON the firſt day of December, 1741 †, I departed this life, at my lodgings in Cheapſide. My body had been ſome time dead before I was at liberty to quit it, leſt it ſhould by any accident return to life: this is an injunction impoſed on all ſouls by the eternal law of fate, to prevent the inconveniencies which would follow. As ſoon as the deſtined period was expired (being no longer than till the body is become perfectly cold and ſtiff) I began to move; but found myſelf under a difficulty of making my eſcape, for the mouth, or door, was ſhut; ſo that it was impoſſible for me to go out at it, and the windows, vulgarly called the eyes, were ſo cloſely pulled down by the fingers of a nurſe, that I could by no means open them. At laſt, I perceived a beam of light glimmering at the top of the houſe, (for ſuch I may call the body I had been incloſed in); whither aſcending, I gently let myſelf down through a kind of chimney, and iſſued out of the noſtrils.

† Some doubt whether this ſhould not be rather 1641, which is a date more agreeable to the account given of it in the introduction: but then there are ſome paſſages which ſeem to relate to tranſactions infinitely later, even within this year or two.—To ſay the truth, there are difficulties attend either conjecture; ſo the reader may take which he pleaſes.

No priſoner diſcharged from a long confinement, ever taſted the ſweets of liberty with a more exquiſite reliſh, than I enjoyed in this delivery from a dungeon wherein I have been detained upwards of forty years, and with much the ſame kind of regard I caſt † my eyes backwards upon it.

My friends and relations had all quitted the room, being all (as I plainly overheard) very loudly quarrelling below-ſtairs about my will; there was only an old woman left above to guard the body, as I apprehend. She was in a faſt ſleep, occaſioned, as from her ſavour it ſeemed, by a comfortable doſe of gin. I had no pleaſure in this company, and therefore as the window was wide open, I ſallied forth into the open air: but to my great aſtoniſhment found myſelf unable to fly, which I had always during my habitation in the body conceived of ſpirits; however, I came ſo lightly to the ground, that I did not hurt myſelf; and though I had not the gift of flying (owing probably to my having neither feathers nor wings) I was capable of hopping ſuch a prodigious way at once, that it ſerved my turn almoſt as well.

I HAD not hopped far, before I perceived a tall young gentleman in a ſilk waiſtcoat, with a wing on his left heel, a garland on his head, and a caduceus in his right hand ‡. I thought I had ſeen this perſon before, but had not time to recollect where, when he called out to me, and aſked me how long I had been departed. I anſwered, I was juſt come forth. You muſt not ſtay here, replied he, unleſs you had been murdered; in which caſe, indeed, you might have been ſuffered to walk ſome time; but if you died a natural death, you muſt ſet out for the other world immediately. I deſired to know the way. O, cried the gentleman, I will ſhew you to the inn whence the

† Eyes are not perhaps ſo properly adapted to a ſpiritual ſubſtance: but we are here, as in many other places, obliged to uſe corporeal terms to make ourſelves the better underſtood.

‡ This is the dreſs in which the god appears to mortals at the theatres. One of the offices attributed to the god by the ancients, was to collect the ghoſts as a ſhepherd doth a flock of ſheep, and *drive them with his* wand into the other world.

the ſtage proceeds; for I am the porter. Perhaps you never heard of me, my name is Mercury. Sure, Sir, ſaid I, I have ſeen you at the playhouſe. Upon which he ſmiled, and without ſatisfying me, as to that point, walked directly forward, bidding me hop after him. I obeyed him, and ſoon found myſelf in Warwick-Lane; where Mercury, making a full ſtop, pointed at a particular houſe, where he bade me enquire for the ſtage, and wiſhing me a good journey, took his leave, ſaying, he muſt go ſeek after other cuſtomers.

I ARRIVED juſt as the coach was ſetting out, and found I had no occaſion for enquiry: for every perſon ſeemed to know my buſineſs, the moment I appeared at the door: the coachman told me, his horſes were to, but that he had no place left; however, though there were already ſix, the paſſengers offered to make room for me. I thanked them, and aſcended without much ceremony. We immediately began our journey, being ſeven in number; for as the women wore no hoops, three of them were but equal to two men.

PERHAPS, reader, thou may'ſt be pleaſed with an account of this whole equipage, as peradventure thou wilt not, while alive, ſee any ſuch. The coach was made by an eminent toyman, who is well known to deal in immaterial ſubſtance, that being the matter of which it was compounded. The work was ſo extremely fine, that it was entirely inviſible to the human eye. The horſes which drew this extraordinary vehicle were all ſpiritual, as well as the paſſengers. They had, indeed, all died in the ſervice of a certain poſt-maſter; and as for the coachman, who was a very thin piece of immaterial ſubſtance, he had the honour, while alive, of driving the Great Peter, or Peter the Great, in whoſe ſervice his ſoul, as well as body was almoſt ſtarved to death.

SUCH was the vehicle in which I ſet out, and now, thoſe who are not willing to travel on with me, may, if they pleaſe, ſtop here; thoſe who are, muſt proceed to the ſubſequent chapters, in which this journey is continued.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

In which the author firſt refutes ſome idle opinions concerning ſpirits, and then the paſſengers relate their ſeveral deaths.

IT is the common opinion, that ſpirits, like owls, can ſee in the dark; nay, and can then moſt eaſily be perceived by others. For which reaſon, many perſons of good underſtanding, to prevent being terrified with ſuch objects, uſually keep a candle burning by them, that the light may prevent their ſeeing. Mr. Locke, in direct oppoſition to this, hath not doubted to aſſert that you may ſee a ſpirit in open day-light full as well as in the darkeſt night.

IT was very dark when we ſet out from the inn, nor could we ſee any more than if every ſoul of us had been alive. We had travelled a good way, before any one offered to open his mouth: indeed, moſt of the company were faſt aſleep ‡: but as I could not cloſe my own eyes, and perceived the ſpirit, who ſat oppoſite to me, to be likewiſe awake, I began to make overtures of converſation, by complaining *how dark it was*. 'And extremely cold too, anſwered my fellow-traveller, tho' I thank God, as I have no body, 'I feel no inconvenience from it: But you will believe, Sir, that this froſty air muſt ſeem very ſharp 'to one juſt iſſued forth out of an oven: for ſuch was 'the inflamed habitation I am lately departed from. 'How did you come to your end, Sir? ſaid I. 'I was murdered, Sir, anſwered the gentleman. I am 'ſurprized then, replied I, that you did not divert 'yourſelf by walking up and down, and playing ſome 'merry tricks with the murderer. Oh, Sir, returned 'he, I had not that privilege, I was lawfully put to 'death. In ſhort, a phyſician ſet me on fire, by 'giving me medicines to throw out my diſtemper. 'I died of a hot regimen, as they call it, in the ſmall-'pox.'

ONE of the ſpirits at that word ſtarted up, and cried out, 'The ſmall-pox! bleſs me! I hope I am not in 'company

‡ Thoſe who have read of the gods ſleeping in Homer, will not be ſurprized at this happening to ſpirits.

'company with that diſtemper, which I have all my life 'with ſuch caution avoided, and have ſo happily 'eſcaped hitherto!' This fright ſet all the paſſengers who were awake into a loud laughter; and the gentleman recollectiug himſelf with ſome confuſion, and not without bluſhing, aſked pardon, crying, 'I proteſt 'I dreamt that I was alive. Perhaps, Sir, ſaid I, 'you died of that diſtemper, which therefore made 'ſo ſtrong an impreſſion on you. No, Sir, anſwered 'he, I never had it in my life; but the continual 'dreadful apprehenſion it kept me ſo long under, 'cannot I ſee be ſo immediately eradicated. You 'muſt know, Sir, I avoided coming to London for 'thirty years together, for fear of the ſmall-pox, till 'the moſt urgent buſineſs brought me thither about 'five days ago. I was ſo dreadfully afraid of this 'diſeaſe, that I refuſed the ſecond night of my ar-'rival to ſup with a friend, whoſe wife had recovered 'of it ſeveral months before, and the ſame evening 'got a ſurfeit by eating too many muſcles, which 'brought me into this good company.'

'I WILL lay a wager, cried the ſpirit who ſat next 'him, there is not one in the coach able to gueſs my 'diſtemper.' I deſired the favour of him, to acquaint us with it, if it was ſo uncommon. 'Why, Sir, '(ſaid he) I died of honour.—Of honour, Sir! re-'peated I with ſome ſurprize. Yes, Sir, anſwered 'the ſpirit, of honour, for I was killed in a duel.'

'FOR my part, ſaid a fair ſpirit I was inoculated 'laſt ſummer, and had the good fortune to eſcape 'with a very few marks in my face. I eſteemed my-'ſelf now perfectly happy, as I imagined I had no 'reſtraint to a full enjoyment of the diverſions of the 'town; but within a few days after my coming up, 'I caught cold by over-dancing myſelf at a ball, and 'laſt night died of a violent fever'.

AFTER a ſhort ſilence, which now enſued, the fair ſpirit who ſpoke laſt, it being now day-light, addreſſed herſelf to a female, who ſat next her, and aſked her to what chance they owed the happineſs of her company. She anſwered, ſhe apprehended to a conſumption: but the phyſicians were not agreed con-

cerning

cerning her diſtemper, for ſhe left two of them in a very hot diſpute about it, when ſhe came out of her body. And pray, madam, ſaid the ſame ſpirit to the ſixth paſſenger, 'How came you to leave the 'other world?' But that female ſpirit ſcrewing up her mouth, anſwered, ſhe wondered at the curioſity of ſome people; that perhaps perſons had already heard ſome reports of her death, which were far from being true: that whatever was the occaſion of it, ſhe was glad at being delivered from a world, in which ſhe had no pleaſure, and where there was nothing but nonſenſe and impertinence; particularly among her own ſex, whoſe looſe conduct ſhe had long been entirely aſhamed of.

THE beauteous ſpirit perceiving her queſtion gave offence, purſued it no farther. She had indeed all the ſweetneſs and good-humour, which are ſo extremely amiable (when found) in that ſex, which tenderneſs moſt exquiſitely becomes. Her countenance diſplayed all the chearfulneſs, the good-nature, and the modeſty, which diffuſe ſuch brightneſs round the beauty of Seraphina *, awing every beholder with reſpect, and, at the ſame time, raviſhing him with admiration. Had it not been indeed for our converſation on the ſmall-pox, I ſhould have imagined we had been honoured with her identical preſence. This opinion might have been heightened by the good ſenſe ſhe uttered, whenever ſhe ſpoke; by the delicacy of her ſentiments, and the complacence of her behaviour, together with a certain dignity, which attended every look, word, and geſture; qualities, which could not fail making an impreſſion on a heart † ſo capable of receiving it as mine, nor was ſhe long in raiſing in me a very violent degree of ſeraphic love. I do not intend by this, that ſort of love which men are very properly ſaid to make to women in the lower world, and

* A particular lady of quality is meant here; but every lady of quality, or no quality, are welcome to apply the character to themſelves.

† We have before made an apology for this language, which we here repeat for the laſt time: tho' the heart may, we hope, be metaphorically uſed here with more propriety, than when we apply *thoſe paſſions to the body* which belong to the ſoul.

and which ſeldom laſts any longer than while it is making. I mean by ſeraphic love, an extreme delicacy and tenderneſs of friendſhip, of which, my worthy reader, if thou haſt no conception, as it is probable thou mayſt not, my endeavour to inſtruct thee would be as fruitleſs, as it would be to explain the moſt difficult problems of Sir Iſaac Newton, to one ignorant of vulgar arithmetic.

To return therefore to matters comprehenſible by all underſtandings: the diſcourſe now turned on the vanity, folly, and miſery of the lower world, from which every paſſenger in the coach expreſſed the higheſt ſatisfaction in being delivered; tho' it was very remarkable, that notwithſtanding the joy we declared at our death, there was not one of us, who did not mention the accident which occaſioned it, as a thing we would have avoided if we could. Nay, the very grave lady herſelf, who was the forwardeſt in teſtifying her delight, confeſs'd inadvertenly, that ſhe left a phyſician by her bed-ſide. And the gentleman, who died of honour, very liberally curſed both his folly, and his fencing. While we were entertaining ourſelves with theſe matters, on a ſudden a moſt offenſive ſmell began to invade our noſtrils. This very much reſembled the ſavour, which travellers, in ſummer, perceive at their approach to that beautiful village of the Hague, ariſing from thoſe delicious canals, which, as they conſiſt of ſtanding water, do at that time emit odours greatly agreeable to a Dutch taſte, but not ſo pleaſant to any other. Thoſe perfumes, with the aſſiſtance of a fair wind, begin to affect perſons of quick olfactory nerves at a league's diſtance, and increaſe gradually as you approach. In the ſame manner, did the ſmell I have juſt mentioned, more and more invade us, till one of the ſpirits, looking out of the coach-window, declared we were juſt arrived at a very large city; and indeed he had ſcarce ſaid ſo, before we found ourſelves in the ſuburbs, and at the ſame time, the coachman being aſked by another, informed us, that the name of this place was the City of Diſeaſes. The road to it was extremely ſmooth, and, excepting the above-mentioned ſavour,

delight-

delightfully pleaſant. The ſtreets of the ſuburbs were lined with bagnios, taverns and cooks ſhops; in the firſt we ſaw many beautiful women, but in tawdry dreſſes, looking out of the windows; and in the latter, were viſibly expoſed all kinds of the richeſt dainties: but on our entering the city, we found, contrary to all we had ſeen in the other world, that the ſuburbs were infinitely pleaſanter than the city itſelf. It was indeed, a very dull, dark, and melancholy place. Few people appeared in the ſtreets, and theſe, for the moſt part, were old women, and here and there a formal grave gentleman, who ſeemed to be thinking, with large tie-wigs on, and amber-headed canes in their hands. We were all in hopes, that our vehicle would not ſtop here; but, to our ſorrow, the coach ſoon drove into an inn, and we were obliged to alight.

CHAP. III.

The adventures we met with in the City of Diſeaſes.

WE had not been long arrived in our inn, where it ſeems we were to ſpend the remainder of the day, before our hoſt acquainted us, that it was cuſtomary for all ſpirits, in their paſſage through that city, to pay their reſpects to that lady Diſeaſe, to whoſe aſſiſtance they had owed their deliverance from the lower world. We anſwered, we ſhould not fail in any complaiſance, which was uſual to others; upon which our hoſt replied, he would immediately ſend porters to conduct us. He had not long quitted the room, before we were attended by ſome of thoſe grave perſons, whom I have before deſcribed in large tie-wigs, with amber-headed canes. Theſe gentlemen are the ticket-porters in this city, and their canes are the *inſignia*, or tickets denoting their office. We informed them of the ſeveral ladies, to whom we were obliged, and were preparing to follow them, when on a ſudden they all ſtarted at one another, and left us in a hurry, with a frown on every countenance. We were ſurprized at this behaviour, and preſently ſummoned the hoſt, who was no ſooner acquainted with it,

it, than he burſt into a hearty laugh, and told us the reaſon was, becauſe we did not ſee the gentlemen the moment they came in, according to the cuſtom of the place. We anſwered with ſome confuſion, we had brought nothing with us from the other world, which we had been all our lives informed was not lawful to do. 'No, no, maſter, replied the hoſt, I am apprized of that, and indeed it was my fault. I ſhould have firſt ſent you to my lord * Scrape; who would have ſupplied you with what you want. My lord Scrape ſupply us! ſaid I with aſtoniſhment: Sure you muſt know we cannot give him ſecurity; and I am convinced he never lent a ſhilling without it in his life. No, Sir, anſwered the hoſt, and for that reaſon he is obliged to do it here, where he is ſentenced to keep a bank, and to diſtribute money *gratis* to all paſſengers. This bank originally conſiſted of juſt that ſum, which he had miſerably hoarded up in the other world, and he is to perceive it decreaſe viſibly one ſhilling a day, till it is totally exhauſted: after which he is to return to the other world, and perform the part of a miſer for ſeventy years; then being purified in the body of a Hog, he is to enter the human ſpecies again, and take a ſecond trial. Sir, ſaid I, you tell me wonders: but if his bank be to decreaſe only a ſhilling a day, how can he furniſh all paſſengers? The reſt, anſwered the hoſt, is ſupplied again; but in a manner, which I cannot eaſily explain to you. I apprehend, ſaid I, this diſtribution of his money is inflicted on him as a puniſhment; but I do not ſee how it can anſwer that end, when he knows it to be reſtored to him again. Would it not ſerve the purpoſe as well, if he parted only with the ſingle ſhilling, which it ſeems is all he is really to loſe? Sir, cried the hoſt, When you obſerve the agonies with which he parts with every guinea, you will be of another opinion. No priſoner condemned to death ever begged ſo heartily for tranſportation, as he,

* That we may mention it once for all, in the panegyrical part *of this work*, ſome particular perſon is always meant, but in the *ſatirical* no body.

'he, when he received his ſentence, did go to hell, 'provided he might carry his money with him. But 'you will know more of theſe things, when you ar- 'rive at the upper world; and now, if you pleaſe, 'I will attend you to my lord's, who is obliged to 'ſupply you with whatever you deſire.'

We found his lordſhip ſitting at the upper end of a table, on which was an immenſe ſum of money, diſpoſed in ſeveral heaps, every one of which would have purchaſed the honour of ſome patriots, and the chaſtity of ſome prudes. The moment he ſaw us, he turned pale, and ſighed, as well apprehending our buſineſs. Mine hoſt accoſted him with a familiar air, which at firſt ſurprized me, who ſo well remembered the reſpect I had formerly ſeen paid this lord, by men infinitely ſuperior in quality to the perſon who now ſaluted him in the following manner: 'Here, 'you lord, and be dam—d to your little ſneaking 'ſoul, tell out your money, and ſupply your betters 'with what they want. Be quick, ſirrah, or I'll fetch 'the beadle to you. Don't fancy yourſelf in the 'lower world again, with your privilege at your 'a—.' He then ſhook a cane at his lordſhip, who immediately began to tell out his money with the ſame miſerable air and face, which the miſer on our ſtage wears while he delivers his bank-bills. This affected ſome of us ſo much, that we had certainly returned with no more than what would have been ſufficient to ſee the porters, had not our hoſt, perceiving our compaſſion, begged us not to ſpare a fellow, who in the midſt of immenſe wealth had always refuſed the leaſt contribution to charity. Our hearts were hardened with the reflection, and we all filled our pockets with his money. I remarked a poetical ſpirit in particular, who ſwore he would have a hearty gripe at him: 'For, ſays he, the raſcal not only re- 'fuſed to ſubſcribe to my works; but ſent back my 'letter unanſwered, tho' I'm a better gentleman than 'himſelf.'

We now returned from this miſerable object, greatly admiring the propriety as well as juſtice of his puniſhment, which conſiſted, as our hoſt informed

us, merely in the delivering forth his money; and he obſerved, we could not wonder at the pain this gave him, ſince it was as reaſonable that the bare parting with money ſhould make him miſerable, as that the bare having money without uſing it ſhould have made him happy.

OTHER tie-wig porters (for thoſe we had ſummoned before refuſed to viſit us again) now attended us; and we having feed them the inſtant they entered the room, according to the inſtructions of our hoſt, they bowed and ſmiled, and offered to introduce us to whatever diſeaſe we pleaſed.

WE ſet out ſeveral ways, as we were all to pay our reſpects to different ladies. I directed my porter to ſhew me to the Fever on the Spirits, being the diſeaſe which had delivered me from the fleſh. My guide and I traverſed many ſtreets, and knocked at ſeveral doors, but to no purpoſe. At one we were told, lived the Conſumption; at another, the Maladie Alamode, a French lady; at the third, the Dropſy; at the fourth, the Rheumatiſm; at the fifth, Intemperance; at the ſixth, Misfortune. I was tired, and had exhauſted my patience, and almoſt my purſe; for I gave my porter a new fee at every blunder he made; when my guide, with a ſolemn countenance, told me, he could do no more; and marched off without any further ceremony.

HE was no ſooner gone, than I met another gentleman with a ticket, i. e. an amber-headed cane in his hand. I firſt feed him, and then acquainted him with the name of the diſeaſe. He caſt himſelf for two or three minutes into a thoughtful poſture, then pulled a piece of paper out of his pocket, on which he writ ſomething in one of the oriental languages, I believe; for I could not read a ſyllable: he bade me carry it to ſuch a particular ſhop, and telling me it would do my buſineſs, he took his leave.

SECURE, as I now thought myſelf of my direction, I went to the ſhop, which very much reſembled an apothecary's. The perſon who officiated, having read the paper, took down about twenty different jars, and *pouring* ſomething out of every one of them, made

a mix-

a mixture, which he delivered to me in a bottle, having first tied a paper round the neck of it, on which were written three or four words, the last containing eleven syllables. I mentioned the name of the disease I wanted to find out; but received no other answer, than that he had done as he was ordered, and the drugs were excellent.

I BEGAN now to be enraged, and quitting the shop with some anger in my countenance, I intended to find out my inn: but meeting in the way a porter, whose countenance had in it something more pleasing than ordinary, I resolved to try once more, and clapt a fee into his hand. As soon as I mentioned the disease to him, he laughed heartily, and told me I had been imposed on: for in reality, no such disease was to be found in that city. He then enquired into the particulars of my case, and was no sooner acquainted with them, than he informed me that the Maladie Alamode was the lady to whom I was obliged. I thanked him, and immediately went to pay my respects to her.

THE house, or rather palace, of this lady, was one of the most beautiful and magnificent in the city. The avenue to it was planted with sycamore-trees, with beds of flowers on each side; it was extremely pleasant, but short. I was conducted through a magnificent hall, adorned with several statues and busts, most of them maimed, whence I concluded them all to be true antiquities; but was informed they were the figures of several modern heroes, who had died martyrs to her ladyship's cause. I next mounted through a large painted stair-case, where several persons were depictured in caricatura; and upon enquiry, was told they were the portraits of those who had distinguished themselves against the lady in the lower world. I suppose, I should have known the faces of many physicians and surgeons, had they not been so violently distorted by the painter. Indeed, he had exerted so much malice in his work, that I believe he had himself received some particular favours from the lady of this mansion: It is difficult to conceive a group of stranger figures. I then entered a

long room hung round with the pictures of women of ſuch exact ſhapes and features, that I ſhould have thought myſelf in a gallery of beauties, had not a certain ſallow paleneſs in their complexions given me a more diſtaſteful idea. Through this, I proceeded to a ſecond apartment, adorned, if I may ſo call it, with the figures of old ladies. Upon my ſeeming to admire at this furniture, the ſervant told me with a ſmile, that theſe had been very good friends of his lady, and had done her eminent ſervice in the lower world. I immediately recollected the faces of one or two of my acquaintance, who had formerly kept bagnio's: but was very much ſurprized to ſee the reſemblance of a lady of great diſtinction in ſuch company. The ſervant, upon my mentioning this, made no other anſwer than that his lady had pictures of all degrees.

I was now introduced into the preſence of the lady herſelf. She was a thin, or rather meagre perſon, very wan in the countenance, had no noſe, and many pimples in her face. She offered to riſe at my entrance, but could not ſtand. After many compliments, much congratulation on her ſide, and the moſt fervent expreſſions of gratitude on mine, ſhe aſked me many queſtions concerning the ſituation of her affairs in the lower world; moſt of which I anſwered to her entire ſatisfaction. At laſt with a kind of forced ſmile, ſhe ſaid, I ſuppoſe the Pill and Drop go on ſwimmingly. I told her, they were reported to have done great cures. She replied, ſhe could apprehend no danger from any perſon, who was not of regular practice; for however ſimple mankind are, ſaid ſhe, or however afraid they are of death, they prefer dying in a regular manner to being cured by a noſtrum. She then expreſs'd great pleaſure at the account I gave her of the beau-monde. She ſaid, ſhe had, herſelf, removed the hundreds of Drury to the hundreds of Charing-croſs, and was very much delighted to find they had ſpread into St. James's; that ſhe imputed this chiefly to ſeveral of her dear and worthy friends, who had lately publiſhed their excellent works, endeavouring to extirpate all notions of

religion

religion and virtue; and particularly to the deſerving author of the Batchelor's Eſtimate, to whom, ſaid ſhe, if I had not reaſon to think he was a ſurgeon, and had therefore written from mercenary views, I could never ſufficiently own my obligations. She ſpoke likewiſe greatly in approbation of the method ſo generally uſed by parents, of marrying children very young, and without the leaſt affection between the parties; and concluded by ſaying, that if theſe faſhions continued to ſpread, ſhe doubted not, but ſhe ſhould ſhortly be the only diſeaſe who would ever receive a viſit from any perſon of conſiderable rank.

While we were diſcourſing, her three daughters entered the room. They were all called by hard names; the eldeſt was named † Lepra, the ſecond Chæras, and the third Scorbutia. They were all genteel, but ugly. I could not help obſerving the little reſpect they paid their parent; which the old lady remarking in my countenance, as ſoon as they quitted the room, which ſoon happened, acquainted me with her unhappineſs in her offſpring, every one of which had the confidence to deny themſelves to be her children, though ſhe ſaid ſhe had been a very indulgent mother, and had plentifully provided for them all. As family complaints generally as much tire the hearer, as they relieve him who makes them, when I found her launching farther into this ſubject, I reſolved to put an end to my viſit; and taking my leave, with many thanks for the favour ſhe had done me, I returned to the inn, where I found my fellow-travellers juſt mounting into their vehicle. I ſhook hands with my hoſt, and accompanied them into the coach, which immediately after proceeded on its journey.

† Theſe ladies, I believe, by their names, preſided over the *leproſy*, *king's-evil*, and *ſcurvy*.

CHAP. IV.

Diſcourſes on the road, and a deſcription of the palace of Death.

WE were all ſilent for ſome minutes, till being well ſhaken into our ſeveral ſeats, I opened my mouth firſt, and related what had happened to me after our ſeparation in the city we had juſt left. The reſt of the company, except the grave female ſpirit, whom our reader may remember to have refuſed giving an account of the diſtemper which occaſioned her diſſolution, did the ſame. It might be tedious to relate theſe at large, we ſhall therefore only mention a very remarkable inveteracy which the Surfeit declared to all the other diſeaſes, eſpecially to the Fever, who ſhe ſaid, by the roguery of the porters, received acknowledgments from numberleſs paſſengers, which were due to herſelf. 'Indeed (ſays ſhe) thoſe cane-'headed fellows (for ſo ſhe called them, alluding, I 'ſuppoſe, to their ticket) are conſtantly making ſuch 'miſtakes; there's no gratitude in thoſe fellows; for I 'am ſure they have greater obligations to me than to 'any other diſeaſe, except the vapours.' Theſe relations were no ſooner over, than one of the company informed us, we were approaching to the moſt noble building he had ever beheld, and which we learnt from our coachman, was the palace of Death. Its outſide, indeed, appeared extremely magnificent. Its ſtructure was of the Gothic order: vaſt beyond imagination, the whole pile conſiſting of black marble. Rows of immenſe yews form an amphitheatre round it of ſuch height and thickneſs, that no ray of the ſun ever perforates this grove; where black eternal darkneſs would reign, was it not excluded by innumerable lamps, which are placed in pyramids round the grove. So that the diſtant reflection they caſt on the palace, which is plentifully gilt with gold on the outſide, is inconceivably ſolemn. To this I may add, the hollow murmur of winds conſtantly heard from the grove, and the very remote ſound of roaring waters.

Indeed,

Indeed, every circumſtance ſeems to conſpire to fill the mind with horror and conſternation as we approach to this palace; which we had ſcarce time to admire, before our vehicle ſtopped at the gate, and we were deſired to alight in order to pay our reſpects to his moſt mortal majeſty, (this being the title which it ſeems he aſſumes.) The outward court was full of ſoldiers, and, indeed, the whole very much reſembled the ſtate of an earthly monarch, only more magnificent. We paſſed through ſeveral courts, into a vaſt hall, which led to a ſpacious ſtair-caſe, at the bottom of which ſtood two pages, with very grave countenances; whom I recollected afterwards to have formerly been very eminent undertakers, and were in reality the only diſmal faces I ſaw here: for this palace, ſo awful and tremendous without, is all gay and ſprightly within, ſo that we ſoon loſt all thoſe diſmal and gloomy ideas we had contracted in approaching it. Indeed, the ſtill ſilence maintained among the guards and attendants reſembled rather the ſtately pomp of eaſtern courts; but there was on every face ſuch ſymptoms of content and happineſs, that diffuſed an air of chearfulneſs all round. We aſcended the ſtair-caſe, and paſſed through many noble apartments, whoſe walls were adorned with various battle-pieces in tapeſtry, and which we ſpent ſome time in obſerving. Theſe brought to my mind thoſe beautiful ones I had in my life-time ſeen at Blenheim, nor could I prevent my curioſity from enquiring where the duke of Marlborough's victories were placed; (for I think they were almoſt the only battles of any eminence I had read of, which I did not meet with:) when the ſkeleton of a beef-eater ſhaking his head, told me, a certain gentleman, one Lewis XIV. who had great intereſt with his moſt mortal majeſty, had prevented any ſuch from being hung up there; beſides, ſays he, his majeſty hath no great reſpect for that duke, for he never ſent him a ſubject he could keep from him, nor did he ever get a ſingle ſubject by his means, but he loſt 1000 others for him. We found the preſence chamber, at our entrance, very full, and a buz ran

through it, as in all aſſemblies, before the principal figure enters; for his majeſty was not yet come out. At the bottom of the room were two perſons in cloſe conference, one with a ſquare black cap on his head, and the other with a robe embroidered with flames of fire. Theſe, I was informed, were a judge long ſince dead, and an inquiſitor-general. I overheard them diſputing with great eagerneſs, whether the one had hanged, or the other burnt the moſt. While I was liſtening to this diſpute, which ſeemed to be in no likelihood of a ſpeedy deciſion, the emperor entered the room, and placed himſelf between two figures, one of which was remarkable for the roughneſs, and the other for the beauty of his appearance. Theſe were, it ſeems, Charles XII. of Sweden, and Alexander of Macedon. I was at too great a diſtance to hear any of the converſation, ſo could only ſatisfy my curioſity by contemplating the ſeveral perſonages preſent, of whoſe names I informed myſelf by a page, who looked as pale and meagre as any court page in the other world, but was ſomewhat more modeſt. He ſhewed me here two or three Turkiſh emperors, to whom his moſt mortal majeſty ſeemed to expreſs much civility. Here were likewiſe ſeveral of the Roman emperors, among whom none ſeemed ſo much careſſed as Caligula, on account, as the page told me, of his pious wiſh, that he could ſend all the Romans hither at one blow. The reader may be perhaps ſurprized that I ſaw no phyſicians here; as indeed was I myſelf, till informed that they were all departed to the city of diſeaſes, where they were buſy in an experiment to purge away the immortality of the ſoul.

It would be tedious to recollect the many individuals I ſaw here: but I cannot omit a fat figure well dreſt in the French faſhion, who was received with extraordinary complaiſance by the emperor, and whom I imagined to be Lewis XIV. himſelf; but the page acquainted me he was a celebrated French cook.

We were at length introduced to the royal preſence, and had the honour to kiſs hands. His majeſty aſked

aſked us a few queſtions, not very material to relate, and ſoon after retired.

When we returned into the yard, we found our caravan ready to ſet out, at which we all declared ourſelves well pleaſed; for we were ſufficiently tired with the formality of a court, notwithſtanding its outward ſplendor and magnificence.

CHAP V.

The travellers proceed on their journey, and meet ſeveral ſpirits, who are coming into the fleſh.

We now came to the banks of the great river Cocytus, where we quitted our vehicle, and paſſed the water in a boat, after which we were obliged to travel on foot the reſt of our journey; and now we met, for the firſt time, ſeveral paſſengers travelling to the world we had left, who informed us they were ſouls going into the fleſh.

The two firſt we met were walking arm in arm in very cloſe and friendly conference; they informed us, that one of them was intended for a duke, and the other for a hackney coachman. As we had not yet arrived at the place where we were to depoſit our paſſions, we were all ſurprized at the familiarity which ſubſiſted between perſons of ſuch different degrees, nor could the grave lady help expreſſing her aſtoniſhment at it. The future coachman then replied, with a laugh, that they had exchanged lots; for that the duke had with his dukedom drawn a ſhrew of wife, and the coachman only a ſingle ſtate.

As we proceeded on our journey, we met a ſolemn ſpirit walking alone with great gravity in his countenance: our curioſity invited us, notwithſtanding his reſerve, to aſk what lot he had drawn. He anſwered, with a ſmile, he was to have the reputation of a wiſe man with 100,000 *l.* in his pocket, and that he was practiſing the ſolemnity which he was to act in the other world.

A little farther we met a company of very merry ſpirits, whom we imagined by their mirth to have

drawn ſome mighty lot; but on enquiry, they informed us they were to be beggars.

THE farther we advanced, the greater numbers we met; and now we diſcovered two large roads leading different ways, and of very different appearance; the one all craggy with rocks, full as it ſeemed of boggy grounds, and every where beſet with briars, ſo that it was impoſſible to paſs through it without the utmoſt danger and difficulty; the other the moſt delightful imaginable, leading through the moſt verdant meadows, painted and perfumed with all kinds of beautiful flowers; in ſhort, the moſt wanton imagination could imagine nothing more lovely. Notwithſtanding which, we were ſurprized to ſee great numbers crowding into the former, and only one or two ſolitary ſpirits chuſing the latter. On enquiry we were acquainted that the bad road was the way to Greatneſs, and the other to Goodneſs. When we expreſſed our ſurprize at the preference given to the former, we were acquainted that it was choſen for the ſake of the muſic of drums and trumpets, and the perpetual acclamations of the mob, with which thoſe who travelled this way, were conſtantly ſaluted. We were told likewiſe, that there were ſeveral noble palaces to be ſeen, and lodged in on this road, by thoſe who had paſſed through the difficulties of it, (which indeed many were not able to ſurmount) and great quantities of all ſorts of treaſure to be found in it; whereas the other had little inviting more than the beauty of the way, ſcarce a handſome building, ſave one greatly reſembling a certain houſe by the Bath, to be ſeen during that whole journey; and laſtly, that it was thought very ſcandalous and mean-ſpiritied to travel through this, and as highly honourable and noble to paſs by the other.

WE now heard a violent noiſe, when caſting our eyes forwards, we perceived a vaſt number of ſpirits advancing in purſuit of one, whom they mocked and inſulted with all kinds of ſcorn. I cannot give my reader a more adequate idea of this ſcene, than by comparing it to an Engliſh mob conducting a pick-pocket to the water; or by ſuppoſing that an incenſed audience

audience at a play-house had unhappily possessed themselves of the miserable damned poet. Some laughed, some hissed, some squawled, some groaned, some bawled, some spit at him, some threw dirt at him. It was impossible not to ask who or what the wretched spirit was, whom they treated in this barbarous manner; when to our great surprize, we were informed that it was a king: we were likewise told, that this manner of behaviour was usual among the spirits to those who drew the lots of emperors, kings, and other great men, not from envy or anger, but mere derision and contempt of earthly grandeur: that nothing was more common, than for those who had drawn these great prizes, as to us they seemed, to exchange them with taylors and coblers; and that Alexander the Great and Diogenes had formerly done so; he that was afterwards Diogenes having originally fallen on the lot of Alexander.

And now on a sudden, the mockery ceased, and the king spirit having obtained a hearing, began to speak as follows: for we were now near enough to hear him distinctly.

'Gentlemen,

'I am justly surprized at your treating me in this 'manner; since whatever lot I have drawn, I did not 'chuse: if therefore it be worthy of derision, you 'should compassionate me, for it might have fallen 'to any of your shares. I know in how low a light 'the station to which fate hath assigned me is consi-'dered here, and that, when ambition doth not sup-'port it, it becomes generally so intolerable, that there 'is scarce any other condition for which it is not gl-'ly exchanged: for what portion in the world to which 'we are going, is so miserable as that of care? Shoul I 'I therefore consider myself as become by this lo: 'essentially your superior, and of a higher order of 'being than the rest of my fellow-creatures: should I 'foolishly imagine myself without wisdom superior t> 'the wise, without knowledge to the learned, with-

'out courage to the brave, and without goodneſs
'and virtue to the good and virtuous; ſurely ſo pre-
'poſterous, ſo abſurd a pride would juſtly render
'me the object of ridicule. But far be it from me
'to entertain it. And yet, gentlemen, I prize the
'lot I have drawn, nor would I exchange it with any
'of yours, ſeeing it is in my eye ſo much greater
'than the reſt. Ambition, which I own myſelf poſ-
'ſeſſed of, teaches me this. Ambition, which makes
'me covet praiſe, aſſures me, that I ſhall enjoy a
'much larger proportion of it than can fall within
'your power either to deſerve or obtain. I am then
'ſuperior to you all, when I am able to do more
'good, and when I execute that power. What
'the father is to the ſon, the guardian to the or-
'phan, or the patron to his client, that am I to you.
'You are my children, to whom I will be a father,
'a guardian, and a patron. Not one evening in my
'long reign (for ſo it is to be) will I repoſe myſelf
'to reſt, without the glorious, the heart-warming
'conſideration, that thouſands that night owe their
'ſweeteſt reſt to me. What a delicious fortune is it
'to him, whoſe ſtrongeſt appetite is doing good, to
'have every day the opportunity and the power of ſa-
'tisfying it! If ſuch a man hath ambition, how hap-
'py is it for him to be ſeated ſo on high, that every
'act blazes abroad, and attracts to him praiſes tainted
'with neither ſarcaſm nor adulation; but ſuch as
'the niceſt and moſt delicate mind may reliſh! Thus
'therefore, while you derive your good from me, I
'am your ſuperior. If to my ſtrict diſtribution of
'juſtice you owe the ſafety of your property from do-
'meſtic enemies: if by my vigilance and valour you
'are protected from foreign foes: if by my encourage-
'ment of genuine induſtry, every ſcience, every art
'which can embelliſh or ſweeten life is produced and
'flouriſhes among you; will any of you be ſo inſen-
'ſible or ungrateful, as to deny praiſe and reſpect to
'him, by whoſe care and conduct you enjoy theſe
'bleſſings? I wonder not at the cenſure which ſo fre-
'quently falls on thoſe in my ſtation; but I wonder
'*that* thoſe in my ſtation ſo frequently deſerve it.

'What

'What ſtrange perverſeneſs of nature! What wanton delight in miſchief muſt taint his compoſition, who prefers dangers, difficulty, and diſgrace, by doing evil, to ſafety, eaſe, and honour, by doing good? who refuſes happineſs in the other world, and heaven in this, for miſery there, and hell here? But be aſſured, my intentions are different. I ſhall always endeavour the eaſe, the happineſs, and the glory of my people, being confident that by ſo doing, I take the moſt certain method of procuring them all to myſelf.'—He then ſtruck directly into the road of Goodneſs, and received ſuch a ſhout of applauſe, as I never remember to have heard equalled.

He was gone a little way, when a ſpirit limped after him, ſwearing he would fetch him back. This ſpirit, I was preſently informed, was one who had drawn the lot of his prime miniſter.

CHAP. VI.

An account of the wheel of Fortune, with a method of preparing a ſpirit for this world.

WE now proceeded on our journey, without ſtaying to ſee whether he fulfilled his word or no; and, without encountering any thing worth mentioning, came to the place where the ſpirits on their paſſage to the other world were obliged to decide by lot the ſtation in which every one was to act there. Here was a monſtrous wheel, infinitely larger than thoſe in which I had formerly ſeen lottery tickets depoſited. This was called the Wheel of Fortune. The goddeſs herſelf was preſent. She was one of the moſt deformed females I ever beheld; nor could I help obſerving the frowns ſhe expreſſed when any beautiful ſpirit of her own ſex paſſed by her, nor the affability which ſmiled in her countenance on the approach of any handſome male ſpirits. Hence I accounted for the truth of an obſervation I had often made on earth, that nothing is more fortunate than handſome men, nor more unfortunate than handſome women. The reader may be perhaps pleaſed with an account of

the whole method of equipping a ſpirit for his entrance into the fleſh.

First then, he receives from a very ſage perſon, whoſe look much reſembled that of an apothecary, (his warehouſe likewiſe bearing an affinity to an apothecary's ſhop) a ſmall phial inſcribed, The Pathetic Potion, to be taken juſt before you are born. This potion is a mixture of all the paſſions, but in no exact proportion, ſo that ſometimes one predominates and ſometimes another; nay, often in the hurry of making up, one particular ingredient is as we were informed left out. The ſpirit receiveth at the ſame time another medicine called the Nousphoric Decoction, of which he is to drink *ad libitum*. This decoction is an extract from the faculties of the mind, ſometimes extremely ſtrong and ſpirituous, and ſometimes altogether as weak: for very little care is taken in the preparation. This decoction is ſo extremely bitter and unpleaſant, that notwithſtanding its wholeſomeneſs, ſeveral ſpirits will not be perſuaded to ſwallow a drop of it; but throw it away, or give it to any other who will receive it: by which means ſome who were not diſguſted by the nauſeouſneſs, drank double and treble portions. I obſerved a beautiful young female, who taſting it immediately from curioſity, ſcrewed up her face and caſt it from her with great diſdain, whence advancing preſently to the wheel, ſhe drew a coronet, which ſhe clapped up ſo eagerly, that I could not diſtinguiſh the degree; and indeed, I obſerved ſeveral of the ſame ſex, after a very ſmall ſip, throw the bottles away.

As ſoon as the ſpirit is diſmiſſed by the operator, or apothecary, he is at liberty to approach the wheel, where he hath a right to extract a ſingle lot: but thoſe whom fortune favours, ſhe permits ſometimes ſecretly to draw three or four. I obſerved a comical kind of figure who drew forth a handful, which, when he opened, were a biſhop, a general, a privy-counſellor, a player, and a poet laureat, and returning the three firſt, he walked off ſmiling with the two laſt.

Every

Every single lot contained two or more articles, which were generally disposed so as to render the lots as equal as possible to each other.

On one was written	*Earl,*
	Riches,
	Health,
	Disquietude.
On another,	*Cobler,*
	Sickness,
	Good-humour.
On a Third,	*Poet,*
	Contempt,
	Self-satisfaction.
On a Fourth,	*General,*
	Honour,
	Discontent.
On a Fifth,	*Cottage,*
	Happy-love.
On a Sixth,	*Coach and Six,*
	Impotent jealous husband.
On a Seventh,	*Prime-minister.*
	Disgrace.
On an Eighth,	*Patriot,*
	Glory.
On a Ninth,	*Philosopher,*
	Poverty,
	Ease.
On a Tenth,	*Merchant,*
	Riches,
	Care.

And indeed the whole seemed to contain such a mixture of good and evil, that it would have puzzled me which to chuse. I must not omit here, that in every lot was directed whether the drawer should marry or remain in celibacy, the married lots being all marked with a large pair of horns.

We were obliged, before we quitted this place, to take each of us an emetic from the apothecary, which immediately purged us of all our earthly passions, and presently the cloud forsook our eyes, as it doth those of Æneas in Virgil when removed by Venus, and we discerned things in a much clearer light than

than before. We began to compaſſionate thoſe ſpirits who were making their entry into the fleſh, whom we had till then ſecretly envied, and to long eagerly for thoſe delightful plains which now opened themſelves to our eyes, and to which we now haſtened with the utmoſt eagerneſs. On our way, we met with ſeveral ſpirits with very dejected countenances; but our expedition would not ſuffer us to aſk any queſtions.

At length, we arrived at the gate of Elyſium. Here was a prodigious croud of ſpirits waiting for admittance, ſome of whom were admitted, and ſome were rejected: for all were ſtrictly examined by the porter, whom I ſoon diſcovered to be the celebrated judge Minos.

CHAP. VII.

The proceedings of judge Minos, *at the gate of* Elyſium.

I NOW got near enough to the gate, to hear the ſeveral claims of thoſe who endeavoured to paſs. The firſt, among other pretenſions, ſet forth, that he had been very liberal to an hoſpital; but Minos anſwered, Oſtentation, and repulſed him. The ſecond exhibited, that he had conſtantly frequented his church, been a rigid obſerver of faſt-days. He likewiſe repreſented the great animoſity he had ſhewn to vice in others, which never eſcaped his ſevereſt cenſure; and, as to his own behaviour, he had never been once guilty of whoring, drinking, gluttony, or any other exceſs. He ſaid, he had diſinherited his ſon for getting a baſtard.———Have you ſo, ſaid Minos, then pray return into the other world and beget another; for ſuch an unnatural raſcal ſhall never paſs this gate. A dozen others, who had advanced with very confident countenances, ſeeing him rejected, turned about of their own accord, declaring, if he could not paſs, they had no expectation, and accordingly they followed him back to earth; which was the fate of all who were repulſed, they being obliged to take a farther purification, unleſs thoſe who were guilty of ſome *very heinous* crimes, who were huſtled in at a little

back-

back gate, whence they tumbled immediately into the bottomleſs pit.

THE next ſpirit that came up, declared, he had done neither good nor evil in the world; for that ſince his arrival at man's eſtate, he had ſpent his whole time in ſearch of curioſities; and particularly in the ſtudy of butterflies, of which he had collected an immenſe number. Minos made him no anſwer, but with great ſcorn puſhed him back.

THERE now advanced a very beautiful ſpirit indeed. She began to ogle Minos the moment ſhe ſaw him. She ſaid, ſhe hoped there was ſome merit in refuſing a great number of lovers, and dying a maid, though ſhe had had the choice of a hundred. Minos told her ſhe had not refuſed enow yet, and turned her back.

SHE was ſucceeded by a ſpirit, who told the judge, he believed his works would ſpeak for him. What works? anſwered Minos. My dramatic works, replied the other, which have done ſo much good in recommending virtue and puniſhing vice.—Very well, ſaid the judge, if you pleaſe to ſtand by, the firſt perſon who paſſes the gate by your means, ſhall carry you in with him: but if you will take my advice, I think, for expedition ſake, you had better return and live another life upon earth. The bard grumbled at this, and replied, that beſides his poetical works, he had done ſome other good things: for that he had once lent the whole profits of a benefit night to a friend, and by that means had ſaved him and his family from deſtruction. Upon this, the gate flew open, and Minos deſired him to walk in, telling him, if he had mentioned this at firſt, he might have ſpared the remembrance of his plays. The poet anſwered, he believed, if Minos had read his works, he would ſet a higher value on them. He was then beginning to repeat, but Minos puſhed him forward, and turning his back to him, applied himſelf to the next paſſenger, a very genteel ſpirit, who made a very low bow to Minos, and then threw himſelf into an erect attitude, and imitated the motion of taking ſnuff with his

his right hand.—Minos aſked him, what he had to ſay for himſelf? He anſwered, he would dance a minuet with any ſpirit in Elyſium: that he could likewiſe perform all his other exerciſes very well, and hoped he had in his life deſerved the character of a perfect fine gentleman. Minos replied, it would be great pity to rob the world of ſo fine a gentleman, and therefore deſired him to take the other trip. The beau bowed, thanked the judge, and ſaid he deſired no better. Several ſpirits expreſſed much aſtoniſhment at this his ſatisfaction; but we were afterwards informed, he had not taken the emetic above-mentioned.

A MISERABLE old ſpirit now crawled forwards, whoſe face I thought I had formerly ſeen near Weſtminſter-Abbey. He entertained Minos with a long harangue of what he had done when in the HOUSE; and then proceeded to inform him how much he was worth, without attempting to produce a ſingle inſtance of any one good action. Minos ſtopt the career of his diſcourſe, and acquainted him, he muſt take a trip back again.—What, to S—— houſe, ſaid the ſpirit in an extaſy? But the judge, without making him any anſwer, turned to another, who with a very ſolemn air and great dignity, acquainted him, he was a duke.—To the right about, Mr. duke, cried Minos, you are infinitely too great a man for Elyſium; and then giving him a kick on the b—ch, he addreſſed himſelf to a ſpirit, who with fear and trembling begged he might not go to the bottomleſs pit: he ſaid, he hoped Minos would conſider, that though he had gone aſtray, he had ſuffered for it; that it was neceſſity which drove him to the robbery of eighteen pence, which he had committed, and for which he was hanged: that he had done ſome good actions in his life, that he had ſupported an aged parent with his labour, that he had been a very tender huſband and a kind father, and that he had ruined himſelf by being bail for his friend. At which words the gate opened, and Minos bid him enter, giving him a ſlap on the back as he paſs'd by him.

A GREAT

A GREAT number of ſpirits now came forwards, who all declared they had the ſame claim, and that the captain ſhould ſpeak for them. He acquainted the judge, that they had been all ſlain in the ſervice of their country. Minos was going to admit them, but had the curioſity to aſk who had been the invader, in order, as he ſaid, to prepare the back gate for him. The captain anſwered, they had been the invaders themſelves, that they had entered the enemies country, and burnt and plundered ſeveral cities.—And for what reaſon? ſaid Minos.—By the command of him who paid us, ſaid the captain, that is the reaſon of a ſoldier. We are to execute whatever we are commanded, or we ſhould be a diſgrace to the army, and very little deſerve our pay. You are brave fellows, indeed, ſaid Minos, but be pleaſed to face about, and obey my command for once, in returning back to the other world: for what ſhould ſuch fellows as you do, where there are no cities to be burnt, nor people to be deſtroyed? But let me adviſe you to have a ſtricter regard to truth for the future, and not call the depopulating other countries the ſervice of your own. The captain anſwered, in a rage, D—n me, do you give me the lye? and was going to take Minos by the noſe, had not his guards prevented him, and immediatly turned him and all his followers back the ſame road they came.

FOUR ſpirits informed the judge, that they had been ſtarved to death through poverty; being the father, mother, and two children. That they had been honeſt, and as induſtrious as poſſible, till ſickneſs had prevented the man from labour.—All that is very true, cried a grave ſpirit, who ſtood by: I know the fact; for theſe poor people were under my cure.—You was, I ſuppoſe, the parſon of the pariſh, cries Minos; I hope you had a good living, Sir. That was but a ſmall one, replied the ſpirit: but I had another a little better.—Very well, ſaid Minos, let the poor people paſs.— At which the parſon was ſtepping forwards with a ſtately gait before them; but Minos caught hold of him, and pulled him back, ſaying, Not ſo faſt, doctor; you muſt take one ſtep more into the

the other world firſt; for no man enters that gate without charity.

A VERY ſtately figure now preſented himſelf, and informing Minos he was a patriot, began a very florid harangue on public virtue, and the liberties of his country. Upon which, Minos ſhewed him the utmoſt reſpect, and ordered the gate to be opened. The patriot was not contented with this applauſe—he ſaid, he had behaved as well in place as he had in the oppoſition; and that though he was now obliged to embrace the court-meaſures, yet he had behaved very honeſtly to his friends, and brought as many in as was poſſible.—Hold a moment, ſays Minos, on ſecond conſideration, Mr. Patriot, I think a man of your great virtue and abilities will be ſo much miſs'd by your country, that if I might adviſe you, you ſhould take a journey back again. I am ſure you will not decline it, for I am certain you will with great readineſs ſacrifice your own happineſs to the public good. The patriot ſmiled, and told Minos, he believed he was in jeſt; and was offering to enter the gate, but the judge laid faſt hold of him, and inſiſted on his return, which the patriot ſtill declining, he at laſt ordered his guards to ſeize him, and conduct him back.

A SPIRIT now advanced, and the gate was immediately thrown open to him, before he had ſpoken a word. I heard ſome whiſper,—That is our laſt Lord Mayor.

IT now came to our company's turn. The fair ſpirit, which I mentioned with ſo much applauſe, in the beginning of my journey, paſs'd through very eaſily; but the grave lady was rejected on her firſt appearance, Minos declaring, there was not a ſingle prude in Elyſium.

THE judge then addreſs'd himſelf to me, who little expected to paſs this fiery trial. I confeſs'd I had indulged myſelf very freely with wine and women in my youth, but had never done an injury to any man living, nor avoided an opportunity of doing good; that I pretended to very little virtue more than gene*ral philan*thropy, and private friendſhip.—I was proceeding,

ceeding, when Minos bid me enter the gate, and not indulge myſelf with trumpeting forth my virtues. I accordingly paſs'd forward with my lovely companion, and embracing her with vaſt eagerneſs, but ſpiritual innocence, ſhe returned my embracing in the ſame manner, and we both congratulated ourſelves on our arrival in this happy region, whoſe beauty no painting of the imagination can deſcribe.

CHAP. VIII.

The adventures which the author met on his firſt entrance into Elyſium.

WE purſued our way through a delicious grove of orange-trees, where I ſaw infinite numbers of ſpirits, every one of whom I knew, and was known by them: (for ſpirits here know one another by intuition.) I preſently met a little daughter, whom I had loſt ſeveral years before. Good gods! what words can deſcribe the raptures, the melting paſſionate tenderneſs, with which we kiſs'd each other, continuing in our embrace, with the moſt extatic joy, a ſpace, which if time had been meaſured here as on earth, could not be leſs than half a year.

THE firſt ſpirit with whom I entered into diſcourſe, was the famous Leonidas of Sparta. I acquainted him with the honours which had been done him by a celebrated poet of our nation; to which he anſwered, he was very much obliged to him.

WE were preſently afterwards entertained with the moſt delicious voice I had ever heard, accompanied by a violin, equal to Signior Piantanida. I preſently diſcovered the muſician and ſongſter to be Orpheus and Sappho.

OLD Homer was preſently at this concert, (if I may ſo call it) and madam Dacier ſat in his lap. He aſked much after Mr. Pope, and ſaid he was very deſirous of ſeeing him; for that he had read his Iliad in his tranſlation with almoſt as much delight as he believed he had given others in the original. I had the curioſity to enquire whether he had really writ that poem in detached pieces, and ſung it about as ballads

all

all over Greece, according to the report which went of him? He ſmiled at my queſtion, and aſked me whether there appeared any connection in the poem; for if there did, he thought I might anſwer myſelf. I then importuned him to acquaint me in which of the cities which contended for the honour of his birth, he was really born? To which he anſwered—Upon my ſoul, I can't tell.

VIRGIL then came up to me, with Mr. Addiſon under his arm. Well, Sir, ſaid he, how many tranſlations have theſe few laſt years produced of my Æneid? I told him, I believed ſeveral, but I could not poſſibly remember; for that I had never read any but Dr. Trapp's.——Ay, ſaid he, that is a curious piece indeed! I then acquainted him with the diſcovery made by Mr. Warburton of the Eleuſinian myſteries couched in his ſixth book. What myſteries? ſaid Mr. Addiſon. The Eleuſinian, anſwered Virgil, which I have diſcloſed in my ſixth book. How! replied Addiſon. You never mentioned a word of any ſuch myſteries to me in all our acquaintance. I thought it was unneceſſary, cried the other, to a man of your infinite learning: beſides, you always told me, you perfectly underſtood my meaning. Upon this I thought the critic looked a little out of countenance, and turned aſide to a very merry ſpirit, one Dick Steele, who embraced him, and told him, He had been the greateſt man upon earth; that he readily reſigned up all the merit of his own works to him. Upon which, Addiſon gave him a gracious ſmile, and clapping him on the back with much ſolemnity, cried out, Well ſaid, Dick.

I THEN obſerved Shakeſpeare ſtanding between Betterton and Booth, and deciding a difference between thoſe two great actors, concerning the placing an accent in one of his lines: this was diſputed on both ſides with a warmth which ſurprized me in Elyſium, till I diſcovered by intuition, that every ſoul retained its principal characteriſtic, being, indeed, its very eſſence. The line was that celebrated one in Othello;

Put out the light, and then put out the light,

according to Betterton. Mr. Booth contended to have *it thus;*

Put

Put out the light, and then put out THE *light.*
could not help offering my conjecture on this occa-
on, and ſuggeſted it might perhaps be,

Put out the light, and then put out THY *light.*
nother hinted a reading very ſophiſticated in my
inion,

Put out the light, and then put out THEE, *light;*
aking light to be the vocative caſe. Another would
ve altered the laſt word, and read,

Put out thy light, and then put out thy ſight.
it Betterton ſaid, if the text was to be diſturbed, he
w no reaſon why a word might not be changed as
ell as a letter, and inſtead of 'put out thy light,'
u might read 'put out thy eyes.' At laſt it was
reed on all ſides, to refer the matter to the deciſion
Shakeſpeare himſelf, who delivered his ſentiments
follows: 'Faith, gentlemen, it is ſo long ſince I
wrote the line, I have forgot my meaning. This I
know, could I have dreamt ſo much nonſenſe would
have been talked, and writ about it, I would have
blotted it out of my works: for I am ſure, if any
of theſe be my meaning, it doth me very little ho-
nour.'

HE was then interrogated concerning ſome other
nbiguous paſſages in his works; but he declined
ıy ſatisfactory anſwer: Saying, if Mr. Theobald
ıd not writ about it ſufficiently, there were three or
ur more new editions of his plays coming out, which
: hoped would ſatisfy every one: Concluding,
I marvel nothing ſo much as that men will gird
themſelves at diſcovering obſcure beauties in an au-
thor. Certes the greateſt and moſt pregnant beau-
ties are ever the plaineſt and moſt evidently ſtrik-
ing; and when two meanings of a paſſage can in
the leaſt balance our judgments which to prefer, I
hold it matter of unqueſtionable certainty, that nei-
ther of them is worth a farthing.'

FROM his works our converſation turned on his
ıonument; upon which Shakeſpeare, ſhaking his
ıds, and addreſſing himſelf to Milton, cried out;
On my word, brother Milton, they have brought a
noble ſet of poets together, they would have been

'hanged

'hanged erſt have convened ſuch a company at their 'table, when alive.' 'True, brother, anſwered Mil-'ton, unleſs we had been as incapable of eating then 'as we are now.'

CHAP. IX.

More adventures in Elyſium.

A CROUD of ſpirits now joined us, whom I ſoon perceived to be the heroes, who here frequently pay their reſpects to the ſeveral bards, the recorders of their actions. I now ſaw Achilles and Ulyſſes addreſſing themſelves to Homer, and Æneas and Julius Cæſar to Virgil: Adam went up to Milton, upon which I whiſpered Mr. Dryden, that I thought the devil ſhould have paid his compliments there, according to his opinion. Dryden only anſwered, I believe the devil was in me, when I ſaid ſo. Several applied themſelves to Shakeſpeare, amongſt whom Henry V. made a very diſtinguiſhing appearance. While my eyes were fixed on that monarch, a very ſmall ſpirit came up to me, ſhook me heartily by the hand, and told me his name was THOMAS THUMB. I expreſſed great ſatisfaction in ſeeing him, nor could I help ſpeaking my reſentment againſt the hiſtorian, who had done ſuch injuſtice to the ſtature of this great little man; which he repreſented to be no bigger than a ſpan; whereas I plainly perceived at firſt ſight, he was full a foot and a half, (and the 37th part of an inch more, as he himſelf informed me) being indeed little ſhorter than ſome conſiderable beaus of the preſent age.

I ASKED this litle hero concerning the truth of thoſe ſtories related of him, viz. of the pudding, and the cow's belly. As to the former, he ſaid, it was a ridiculous legend, worthy to be laughed at; but as to the latter, he could not help owning there was ſome truth in it: nor had he any reaſon to be aſhamed of it, as he was ſwallowed by ſurprize; adding with great fierceneſs, that if he had had any weapon in his hand, the cow ſhould have as ſoon ſwallowed the devil.

He ſpoke the laſt word with ſo much fury, and ſeemed ſo confounded, that perceiving the effect it had on him, I immediately waved the ſtory, and paſſing to other matters, we had much converſation touching giants. He ſaid, ſo far from killing any, he had never ſeen one alive; that he believed thoſe actions were by miſtake recorded of him, inſtead of Jack the giant-killer, whom he knew very well, and who had, he fancied, extirpated the race. I aſſured him to the contrary, and told him I had myſelf ſeen a huge tame giant, who very complaiſantly ſtaid in London a whole winter, at the ſpecial requeſt of ſeveral gentlemen and ladies; though the affairs of his family called him home to Sweden.

I now beheld a ſtern-looking ſpirit leaning on the boulder of another ſpirit, and preſently diſcerned the former to be Oliver Cromwell, and the latter Charles Martel. I own I was a little ſurprized at ſeeing Cromwell here; for I had been taught by my grandmother, that he was carried away by the devil himſelf in a tempeſt: but he aſſured me on his honour, there was not the leaſt truth in that ſtory. However, he confeſſed he had narrowly eſcaped the bottomleſs pit; and if the former part of his conduct had not been more to his honour than the latter, he had been certainly ſouſed into it. He was nevertheleſs ſent back to the upper world with his lot,

Army,
Cavalier,
Diſtreſs.

He was born for the ſecond time, the day of Charles IId's reſtoration, into a family which had loſt a very conſiderable fortune in the ſervice of that prince and his father, for which they received the reward very often conferred by princes on real merit, viz. —ooo. At ſixteen, his father bought a ſmall commiſſion for him in the army, in which he ſerved without any promotion all the reigns of Charles II. and of his brother. At the Revolution he quitted his regiment, and followed the fortunes of his former maſter, and was in his ſervice dangerouſly wounded at the famous battle of the Boyne, where he fought in the capacity

of

of a private ſoldier. He recovered of this wound, and retired after the unfortunate king to Paris, where he was reduced to ſupport a wife, and ſeven children, (for his lot had horns in it) by cleaning ſhoes, and ſnuffing candles at the opera; in which ſituation after he had ſpent a few miſerable years, he died half-ſtarved and broken-hearted. He then reviſited Minos, who compaſſionating his ſufferings, by means of that family to whom he had been in his former capacity ſo bitter an enemy, ſuffered him to enter here.

My curioſity could not refrain aſking him one queſtion, i. e. Whether in reality he had any deſire to obtain the crown? He ſmiled and ſaid, No more than an eccleſiaſtic hath to the mitre, when he cries *Nolo Epiſcopari*. Indeed, he ſeemed to expreſs ſome contempt at the queſtion, and preſently turned away.

A VENERABLE ſpirit appeared next, whom I found to be the great hiſtorian Livy. Alexander the Great who was juſt arrived from the palace of Death, paſs'd by him with a frown. The hiſtorian obſerving it ſaid, 'Ay, you may frown: but thoſe troops which conquered the baſe Aſiatic ſlaves, would have made no figure againſt the Romans.' We then privately lamented the loſs of the moſt valuable part of his hiſtory, after which he took occaſion to commend the judicious collection made by Mr. Hooke, which he ſaid was infinitely preferable to all others; and at my mentioning Echard's, he gave a bounce, not unlike the going off of a ſquib, and was departing from me, when I begged him to ſatisfy my curioſity in one point, Whether he was really ſuperſtitious or no? for I had alway believed he was, till Mr. Leibnitz had aſſured me to the contrary. He anſwered ſullenly,—'Doth Mr. Leibnitz know my mind better than myſelf?' and then walked away.

CHAR.

CHAP. X.

The author is ſurprized at meeting Julian *the apoſtate in* Elyſium: *but is ſatisfied by him, by what means he procured his entrance there.* Julian *relates his adventures in the character of a ſlave.*

AS he was departing, I heard him ſalute a ſpirit by the name of Mr. Julian the apoſtate. This exceedingly amazed me: for I had concluded, that no man ever had a better title to the bottomleſs pit than he. But I ſoon found, that this ſame Julian the apoſtate, was alſo the very individual archbiſhop Latimer. He told me, that ſeveral lies had been raiſed on him in his former capacity, nor was he ſo bad a man as he had been repreſented. However, he had been denied admittance, and forced to undergo ſeveral ſubſequent pilgrimages on earth, and to act in the different characters of a ſlave, a Jew, a general, an heir, a carpenter, a beau, a monk, a fiddler, a wiſe man, a king, a fool, a beggar, a prince, a ſtateſman, a ſoldier, a taylor, an alderman, a poet, a knight, a dancing-maſter, and three times a biſhop before his martyrdom, which, together with his other behaviour in this laſt character, ſatisfied the judge, and procured him a paſſage to the bleſſed regions.

I TOLD him, ſuch various characters muſt have produced incidents extremely entertaining; and if he remembered all, as I ſuppoſed he did, and had leiſure, I ſhould be obliged to him for the recital. He anſwered, he perfectly recollected every circumſtance; and as to leiſure, the only buſineſs of that happy place was to contribute to the happineſs of each other. He therefore thanked me for adding to his, in propoſing to him a method of increaſing mine. I then took my little darling in one hand, and my favourite fellow-traveller in the other, and going with him to a ſunny bank of flowers, we all ſat down, and he began as follows:

'I SUPPOSE, you are ſufficiently acquainted with 'my ſtory, during the time I acted the part of the 'emperor *Julian*, tho' I aſſure you, all which hath

'been related of me is not true, particularly with re-
'gard to the many progedies forerunning my death.
'However, they are now very little worth diſputing;
'and if they can ſerve any purpoſe of the hiſtorian,
'they are extremely at his ſervice.

'My next entrance into the world, was at Laodi-
'cea in Syria, in a Roman family of no great note;
'and being of a roving diſpoſition, I came at the
'age of ſeventeen to Conſtantinople, where, after
'about a year's ſtay, I ſet out for Thrace at the
'time when the emperor Valens admitted the *Goths*
'into that country. I was there ſo captivated with
'the beauty of a Gothic lady, the wife of one Ro-
'doric a captain, whoſe name out of the moſt de-
'licate tenderneſs for her lovely ſex, I ſhall even at
'this diſtance conceal; ſince her behaviour to me
'was more conſiſtent with good-nature, than with
'that virtue which women are obliged to preſerve
'againſt every aſſailant. In order to procure an
'intimacy with this woman, I ſold myſelf a ſlave to
'her huſband, who being of a nation not over-in-
'clined to jealouſy, preſented me to his wife, for
'thoſe very reaſons, which would have induced one
'of a jealous complexion to have with-held me from
'her, namely, for that I was young and handſome.

'MATTERS ſucceeded ſo far according to my wiſh,
'and the ſequel anſwered thoſe hopes which this be-
'ginning had raiſed. I ſoon perceived my ſervice
'was very acceptable to her. I often met her eyes,
'nor did ſhe withdraw them without a confuſion which
'is ſcarce conſiſtent with entire purity of heart. In-
'deed, ſhe gave me every day freſh encouragement,
'but the unhappy diſtance which circumſtances had
'placed between us, deterred me long from making
'any direct attack; and ſhe was too ſtrict an obſerver
'of decorum, to violate the ſevere rules of modeſty
'by advancing firſt: but paſſion, at laſt, got the bet-
'ter of my reſpect, and I reſolved to make one bold
'attempt, whatever was the conſequence. Accord-
'ingly, laying hold of the firſt kind opportunity,
'when ſhe was alone, and my maſter abroad, I ſtout-
'ly aſſailed the citadel, and carried it by ſtorm.

'Well

'Well may I ſay by ſtorm; for the reſiſtance I met 'was extremely reſolute, and indeed, as much as the 'moſt perfect decency would require. She ſwore 'often ſhe would cry out for help; but I anſwered, 'it was in vain, ſeeing there was no perſon near to 'aſſiſt her; and probably ſhe believed me, for ſhe 'did not once actually cry out; which if ſhe had, I 'might very likely have been prevented.

'When ſhe found her virtue thus ſubdued againſt 'her will, ſhe patiently ſubmitted to her fate, and 'quietly ſuffered me a long time to enjoy the moſt 'delicious fruits of my victory; but envious fortune 'reſolved to make me pay a dear price for my plea-'ſure. One day, in the midſt of our happineſs, 'we were ſuddenly ſurprized by the unexpected re-'turn of her huſband, who coming directly into 'his wife's apartment, juſt allowed me time to creep 'under the bed. The diſorder in which he found 'his wife, might have ſurprized a jealous temper; 'but his was ſo far otherwiſe, that poſſibly no miſ-'chief might have happened, had he not by a croſs 'accident diſcovered my legs, which were not well 'hid. He immediately drew me out by them, and 'then turning to his wife with a ſtern countenance, 'began to handle a weapon he wore by his ſide, 'with which I am perſuaded he would have inſtant-'ly diſpatched her, had I not very gallantly, and 'with many imprecations, aſſerted her innocence 'and my own guilt; which, however, I proteſted 'had hitherto gone no farther than deſign. She ſo 'well ſeconded my plea (for ſhe was a woman of 'wonderful art), that he was at length impoſed upon; 'and now all his rage was directed againſt me, 'threatening all manner of tortures, which the poor 'lady was in too great a fright and confuſion to 'diſſuade him from executing; and perhaps, if her 'concern for me had made her attempt it, it would have 'raiſed a jealouſy in him not afterwards to be removed.

'After ſome heſitation, Rodoric cried out, he had 'luckily hit on the moſt proper puniſhment for me 'in the world, by a method which would at once 'do ſevere juſtice on me for my criminal intention,

'and at the ſame time, prevent me from any danger 'of executing my wicked purpoſe hereafter. This 'cruel reſolution was immediately executed, and I 'was no longer worthy the name of a man.

'HAVING thus disqualified me from doing him any 'future injury, he ſtill retained me in his family: 'but the lady, very probably repenting of what ſhe 'had done, and looking on me as the author of her 'guilt, would never, for the future, give me either 'a kind word or look: and ſhortly after, a great 'exchange being made between the Romans and the 'Goths of dogs for men, my lady exchanged me 'with a Roman widow for a ſmall lap-dog, giving a 'conſiderable ſum of money to boot.

'IN this widow's ſervice I remained ſeven years, 'during all which time I was very barbarouſly treat-'ed. I was worked without the leaſt mercy, and 'often ſeverely beat by a ſwinging maid-ſervant, 'who never called me by any other names than thoſe 'of the Thing, and the Animal. Though I uſed 'my utmoſt induſtry to pleaſe, it never was in my 'power. Neither the lady nor her woman would 'eat any thing I touched, ſaying, they did not be-'lieve me wholeſome. It is unneceſſary to repeat 'particulars; in a word, you can imagine no kind of 'ill uſage which I did not ſuffer in this family.

'AT laſt, an heathen prieſt, an acquaintance of 'my lady's, obtained me of her for a preſent. The 'ſcene was now totally changed, and I had as much 'reaſon to be ſatisfied with my preſent ſituation, as 'I had to lament my former. I was ſo abſolutely 'my maſter's favourite, that the reſt of the ſlaves 'paid me almoſt as much regard as they ſhewed to 'him, well knowing, that it was entirely in my 'power to command, and treat them as I pleaſed. 'I was intruſted with all my maſter's ſecrets, and 'uſed to aſſiſt him in privately conveying away by 'night the ſacrifices from the altars, which the peo-'ple believed the deities themſelves devoured. Upon 'theſe we feaſted very elegantly, nor could invention 'ſuggeſt a rarity which we did not pamper ourſelves 'with. Perhaps you may admire at the cloſe union

'between

'between this prieſt and his ſlave: but we lived in 'an intimacy which the Chriſtians thought criminal: 'but my maſter, who knew the will of the gods, with 'whom he told me he often converſed, aſſured me 'it was perfectly innocent.

'THIS happy life continued about four years, when 'my maſter's death, occaſioned by a ſurfeit got by 'over-feeding on ſeveral exquiſite dainties, put an 'end to it.

'I NOW fell into the hands of one of a very diffe-'rent diſpoſition, and this was no other than the 'celebrated St. Chryſoſtome, who dieted me with 'ſermons inſtead of ſacrifices, and filled my ears with 'good things, but not my belly. Inſtead of high 'food to fatten and pamper my fleſh, I had receipts 'to mortify and reduce it. With theſe I edified ſo 'well, that within a few months I became a ſkeleton. 'However, as he had converted me to his faith, I was 'well enough ſatisfied with this new manner of liv-'ing, by which he taught me, I might inſure my-'ſelf an eternal reward in a future ſtate. The ſaint 'was a good-natured man, and never gave me an 'ill word but once, which was occaſioned by my 'neglecting to place Ariſtophanes, which was his 'conſtant bed-fellow, on his pillow. He was, in-'deed, extremely fond of that Greek poet, and fre-'quently made me read his comedies to him: when 'I came to any of the looſe paſſages, he would ſmile 'and ſay, *It was pity his matter was not as pure as his 'ſtyle*; of which latter, he was ſo immoderately fond, 'that notwithſtanding the deteſtation he expreſſed for 'obſcenity, he hath made me repeat thoſe paſſages 'ten times over. The character of this good man 'hath been very unjuſtly attacked by his heathen con-'temporaries, particularly with regard to women; 'but his ſevere invectives againſt that ſex, are his 'ſufficient juſtification.

'FROM the ſervice of this ſaint, from whom I re-'ceived manumiſſion, I entered into the family of 'Timaſius, a leader of great eminence in the im-'perial army, into whoſe favour I ſo far inſinuated 'myſelf, that he preferred me to a good command,

'and ſoon made me partaker of both his company 'and his ſecrets. I ſoon grew intoxicated with this 'preferment, and the more he loaded me with be-'nefits, the more he raiſed my opinion of my own 'merit; which ſtill outſtripping the rewards he con-'ferred on me, inſpired me rather with diſſatisfaction 'than gratitude. And thus by preferring me be-'yond my merit or firſt expectation, he made me an 'envious aſpiring enemy, whom perhaps, a more 'moderate bounty would have preſerved a dutiful 'ſervant.

'I FELL now acquainted with one Lucilius, a 'creature of the prime-miniſter Eutropius, who had 'by his favour been raiſed to the poſt of a tribune; 'a man of low morals, and eminent only in that 'meaneſt of qualities, cunning. This gentleman 'imagining me a fit tool for the miniſter's purpoſe, 'having often ſounded my principles of honour and 'honeſty; both which he declared to me were words 'without meaning; and finding my ready concur-'rence in his ſentiments, recommended me to Eu-'tropius, as very proper to execute ſome wicked 'purpoſes he had contrived againſt my friend Ti-'manius. The miniſter embraced this recommen-'dation, and I was accordingly acquainted by Lu-'cilius (after ſome previous accounts of the great 'eſteem Eutropius entertained of me, from the teſti-'mony he had borne of my parts), that he would in-'troduce me to him; adding, that he was a great 'encourager of merit, and that I might depend upon 'his favour.

'I WAS with little difficulty prevailed on to accept 'of this invitation. A late hour therefore the next 'evening being appointed, I attended my friend Lu-'cilius to the miniſter's houſe. He received me 'with the utmoſt civility and chearfulneſs, and af-'fected ſo much regard to me, that I, who knew 'nothing of theſe high ſcenes of life, concluded I 'had in him the moſt diſintereſted friend, owing to 'the favourable report which Lucilius had made of 'me. I was however ſoon cured of this opinion: 'for immediately after ſupper, our diſcourſe turned

'on

'on the juſtice which the generality of the world 'were guilty of in their conduct to great men, ex- 'pecting that they ſhould reward their private merit, 'without ever endeavouring to apply it to their uſe. '*What avail* (ſaid *Eutropius*) *the learning, wit, cou- 'rage, or any virtue which a man may be poſſeſt of to 'me, unleſs I receive ſome benefit from them? Hath 'he not more merit to me, who doth my buſineſs, and 'obeys my commands, without any of theſe qualities?* I 'gave ſuch entire ſatisfaction in my anſwers on this 'head, that both the miniſter and his creature grew 'bolder, and after ſome preface, began to accuſe 'Timaſius. At laſt, finding I did not attempt to 'defend him, Lucilius ſwore a great oath, that he 'was not fit to live, and that he would deſtroy him. 'Eutropius anſwered, that it would be too dange- 'rous a taſk: *Indeed*, ſays he, *his crimes are of ſo black 'a dye, and ſo well known to the emperor, that his 'death muſt be a very acceptable ſervice, and could not 'fail meeting a proper reward; but I queſtion whether 'you are capable of executing it. If he is not*, cried I, *'I am; and ſurely, no man can have greater motives to 'deſtroy him than myſelf; for, beſides his diſloyalty 'to my prince, for whom I have ſo perfect a duty, I 'have private diſobligations to him. I have had fel- 'lows put over my head, to the great ſcandal of the 'ſervice in general, and to my own prejudice and diſ- 'appointment in particular.*—I will not repeat you 'my whole ſpeech: but, to be as conciſe as poſſible, 'when we parted that evening, the miniſter ſqueezed 'me heartily by the hand, and with great commen- 'dation of my honeſty, and aſſurances of his favour, 'he appointed me the next evening to come to him 'alone; when finding me, after a little more ſcru- 'tiny, ready for his purpoſe, he propoſed to me, to 'accuſe Timaſius of high-treaſon: promiſing me the 'higheſt rewards, if I would undertake it. The 'conſequence to him, I ſuppoſe you know, was 'ruin: but what was it to me? Why truly, when 'I waited on Eutropius, for the fulfilling his pro- 'miſes, he received me with great diſtance and 'coldneſs; and on my dropping ſome hints of my

'expectations from him, he affected not to underſtand 'me; ſaying, he thought impunity was the utmoſt 'I could hope for, on diſcovering my accomplice, 'whoſe offence was only greater than mine, as he 'was in a higher ſtation; and telling me, he had 'great difficulty to obtain a pardon for me from the 'emperor, which, he ſaid, he had ſtruggled very 'hardly for, as he had worked the diſcovery out of 'me. He turned away, and addreſſed himſelf to 'another perſon.

'I WAS ſo incenſed at this treatment, that I re-'ſolved revenge, and ſhould certainly have purſued 'it, had he not cautiouſly prevented me, by taking 'effectual means to diſpatch me ſoon after out of the 'world.

'You will, I believe, now think I had a ſecond 'good chance for the bottomleſs pit: and indeed Mi-'nos ſeemed inclined to tumble me in, till he was in-'formed of the revenge taken on me by Rodoric, 'and my ſeven years ſubſequent ſervitude to the wi-'dow; which he thought ſufficient to make atone-'ment for all the crimes a ſingle life could admit of, 'and ſo ſent me back to try my fortune a third 'time.'

CHAP. XI.

In which Julian *relates his adventures in the character of an avaricious* Jew.

'THE next character in which I was deſtined 'to appear in the fleſh, was that of an avari-'cious Jew. I was born in Alexandria in Egypt. 'My name was Balthazar. Nothing very remarkable 'happened to me, till the year of the memorable 'tumult, in which the Jews of that city are reported 'in hiſtory to have maſſacred more Chriſtians than at 'that time dwelt in it. Indeed, the truth is, they 'did maul the dogs pretty handſomely; but I myſelf 'was not preſent, for as all our people were ordered 'to be armed, I took that opportunity of ſelling two 'ſwords, which probably I might otherwiſe never 'have diſpoſed of, they being extremely old and

'ruſty;

'rusty: so that having no weapon left, I did not care 'to venture abroad. Besides, though I really thought 'it an act meriting salvation to murder the Naza-'renes, as the fact was to be committed at midnight, 'at which time, to avoid suspicion, we were all to 'sally from our own houses; I could not persuade 'myself to consume so much oil in sitting up till that 'hour: for these reasons, therefore, I remained at 'home that evening.

'I was at this time greatly enamoured with one 'Hypatia, the daughter of a philosopher; a young 'lady of the greatest beauty and merit: indeed, she 'had every imaginable ornament both of mind and 'body. She seemed not to dislike my person; but 'there were two obstructions to our marriage, *viz.* 'my religion and her poverty; both which might 'probably have been got over, had not those dogs 'the Christians murdered her; and, what is worse, 'afterwards burnt her body: worse, I say, because 'I lost by that means a jewel of some value, which I 'had presented to her, designing, if our nuptials 'did not take place, to demand it of her back 'again.

'Being thus disappointed in my love, I soon after 'left Alexandria, and went to the imperial city, 'where I apprehended I should find a good market 'for jewels on the approaching marriage of the em-'peror with Athenais. I disguised myself as a beg-'gar on this journey, for these reasons: first, as I 'imagined I should thus carry my jewels with greater 'safety; and secondly, to lessen my expences: which 'latter expedient succeeded so well, that I begged 'two oboli on my way more than my travelling cost 'me, my diet being chiefly roots, and my drink 'water.

'But, perhaps, it had been better for me if I had 'been more lavish, and more expeditious: for the 'ceremony was over before I reached Constantinople; 'so that I lost that glorious opportunity of disposing 'of my jewels, with which many of our people were 'greatly enriched.

'THE life of a miſer is very little worth relating 'as it is one conſtant ſcheme of getting or ſaving 'money. I ſhall therefore repeat to you ſome few 'only of my adventures, without regard to any or-'der.

'A ROMAN Jew, who was a great lover of Faler-'nian wine, and who indulged himſelf very freely 'with it, came to dine at my houſe; when know-'ing he ſhould meet with little wine, and that of the 'cheaper ſort, ſent me in half a dozen jars of Faler-'nian. Can you believe I would not give this man 'his own wine? Sir, I adulterated it ſo, that I made 'ſix jars of them; three, which he and his friend 'drank: the other three I afterwards ſold to the very 'perſon who originally ſent them me, knowing he 'would give a better price than any other.

'A NOBLE Roman came one day to my houſe in 'the country, which I had purchaſed, for half the va-'lue, of a diſtreſſed perſon. My neighbours paid 'him the compliment of ſome muſic, on which ac-'count when he departed he left a piece of gold with 'me, to be diſtributed among them. I pocketed 'this money, and ordered them a ſmall veſſel of ſour 'wine, which I could not have ſold for above two 'drachmas, and afterwards made them pay in work 'three times the value of it.

'As I was not entirely void of religion, tho' I pre-'tended to infinitely more than I had, ſo I endea-'voured to reconcile my tranſactions to my conſcience 'as well as poſſible. Thus I never invited any one 'to eat with me, but thoſe on whoſe pockets I had 'ſome deſign. After our collation, it was conſtantly 'my method to ſet down in a book I kept for that 'purpoſe, what I thought they owed me for their 'meal. Indeed this was generally a hundred times 'as much as they could have dined elſewhere for: 'but however, it was *quid pro quo*, if not *ad valorem*. 'Now, whenever the opportunity offered of impoſing 'on them, I conſidered it only as paying myſelf what 'they owed me: indeed I did not always confine my-'ſelf ſtrictly to what I had ſet down, however extra-

'vagant

vagrant that was; but I reconciled taking the overplus to myself as usance.

'But I was not only too cunning for others, I sometimes over-reached myself. I have contracted distempers for want of food and warmth, which hath put me to the expence of a physician: nay, I once very narrowly escaped death by taking bad drugs, only to save one seven eighths *per cent.* in the price.

'By these and such like means, in the midst of poverty, and every kind of distress, I saw myself master of an immense fortune: the casting up and ruminating on which was my daily and only pleasure. This was, however, obstructed and imbittered by two considerations, which, against my will, often invaded my thoughts. One would have been intolerable (but that indeed seldom troubled me) was, that I must one day leave my darling treasure. The other haunted me continually, *viz.* that my riches were no greater. However, I comforted myself against this reflection, by an assurance that they would increase daily: on which head, my hopes were so extensive, that I may say with Virgil,

His ego nec metus rerum nec tempora pono.

'Indeed I am convinced, that had I possessed the whole globe of earth, save one single drachma, which I had been certain never to be master of, I am convinced, I say, that single drachma would have given me more uneasiness than all the rest could afford me pleasure.

'To say the truth, between my solicitude in contriving schemes to procure money, and my extreme anxiety in preserving it, I never had one moment of ease while awake, nor of quiet when in my sleep. In all the characters through which I have passed, I have never undergone half the misery I suffered in this; and indeed Minos seemed to be of the same opinion: for while I stood trembling and shaking in expectation of my sentence, he bid me go back about my business: for that no body was to be d—n'd in more worlds than one.

'And indeed, I have ſince learnt, that the devil will 'not receive a miſer.'

CHAP. XII.

What happened to Julian *in the characters of a general, an heir, a carpenter, and a beau.*

'THE next ſtep I took into the world, was at 'Apollonia in Thrace; where I was born of 'a beautiful Greek ſlave, who was the miſtreſs of 'Eutyches, a great favourite of the emperor Zeno. 'That prince, at his reſtoration, gave me the com-'mand of a cohort, I being then but fifteen years of 'age; and a little afterwards, before I had ever ſeen 'an army, preferred me, over the heads of all the 'old officers, to be a tribune.

'As I found an eaſy acceſs to the emperor, by 'means of my father's intimacy with him, he being 'a very good courtier, or, in other words, a moſt 'proſtitute flatterer; ſo I ſoon ingratiated myſelf with 'Zeno, and ſo well imitated my father in flattering 'him, that he would never part with me from about 'his perſon. So that the firſt armed force I ever be-'held, was that with which Martian ſurrounded the 'palace, where I was then ſhut up with the reſt of 'the court.

'I WAS afterwards put at the head of a legion, 'and ordered to march into Syria, with Theodoric 'the Goth; that is, I mean my legion was ſo or-'dered; for as to myſelf, I remained at court, with 'the name and pay of a general, without the labour 'or the danger.

'As nothing could be more gay, *i. e. debauched*, 'than Zeno's court, ſo the ladies of gay diſpoſition 'had great ſway in it; particularly one, whoſe name 'was *Fauſta*, who, tho' not extremely handſome, was 'by her wit and ſpiritelineſs very agreeable to the 'emperor. With her I lived in good correſpondence, 'and we together diſpoſed of all kinds of commiſſions 'in the army, not to thoſe who had moſt merit, but 'who would purchaſe at the higheſt rate. My le-'vee was now prodigiouſly thronged by officers, who 'returned from the campaigns; who, though they

'might

'might have been convinced by daily example, how 'ineffectual a recommendation their ſervices were, 'ſtill continued indefatigable in attendance, and be-'haved to me with as much obſervance and reſpect, 'as I ſhould have been entitled to, for making their 'fortunes, while I ſuffered them and their families to 'ſtarve.

'SEVERAL poets, likewiſe, addreſſed verſes to me, 'inwhich they celebrated my military atchievements; 'and what, perhaps, may ſeem ſtrange to us at pre-'ſent, I received all this incenſe with moſt greedy va-'nity, without once reflecting, that as I did not de-'ſerve theſe compliments, they ſhould rather put me 'in mind of my defects.

'MY father was now dead, and I became ſo abſo-'lute in the emperor's grace, that one unacquainted 'with courts would ſcarce believe the ſervility with 'which all kinds of perſons, who entered the walls of 'the palace, behaved towards me. A bow, a ſmile, 'a nod from me, as I paſſed through cringing crouds, 'were eſteemed as ſignal favours, but a gracious 'word made any one happy; and, indeed, had this 'real benefit attended it, that it drew on the perſon, 'on whom it was beſtowed, a very great degree of 'reſpect from all others; for theſe are of current va-'lue in courts, and, like notes in trading communi-'ties, are aſſignable from one to the other. The 'ſmile of a court favourite immediately raiſes the per-'ſon who receives it, and gives a value to his ſmile 'when conferred on an inferior: thus the ſmile is 'transferred from one to the other, and the great man 'at laſt is the perſon to diſcount it. For inſtance, a 'very low fellow hath a deſire for a place. To whom 'is he to apply? Not to the great man; for to him 'he hath no acceſs. He therefore applies to A, who 'is the creature of B, who is the tool of C, who is 'the flatterer of D, who is the catamite of E, whe 'is the pimp of F, who is the bully of G, who is the 'buffoon of I, who is the huſband of K, who is the 'whore of L, who is the baſtard of M, who is the 'inſtrument of the great man. Thus the ſmile de-'ſcending regularly from the great man to A, is diſ-

'counted

'counted back again, and at laſt paid by the great 'man.

'IT is manifeſt, that a court would ſubſiſt as diffi-'cultly without this kind of coin, as a trading city 'without paper credit. Indeed, they differ in this, 'that their value is not quite ſo certain, and a fa-'vourite may proteſt his ſmile without the danger of 'bankruptcy.

'IN the midſt of all this glory, the emperor died, 'and Anaſtaſius was perferred to the crown. As it 'was yet uncertain whether I ſhould not continue in 'favour, I was received as uſual at my entrance into 'the palace, to pay my reſpects to the new emperor; 'but I was no ſooner rumped by him, than I received 'the ſame compliment from all the reſt; the whole 'room, like a regiment of ſoldiers, turning their 'backs to me all at once, my ſmile now was become 'of equal value with the note of a broken banker, 'and every one was as cautious not to receive it.

'I MADE as much haſte as poſſible from the court, 'and ſhortly after from the city, retreating to the 'place of my nativity, where I ſpent the remainder 'of my days in a retired life, in huſbandry, the only 'amuſement for which I was qualified, having nei-'ther learning nor virtue.

'WHEN I came to the gate, Minos again ſeemed 'at firſt doubtful, but at length diſmiſſed me; ſaying, 'though I had been guilty of many heinous crimes, 'in as much as I had, though a general, never been 'concerned in ſpilling human blood, I might return 'again to earth.

'I WAS now again born in Alexandria, and, by 'great accident, entering into the womb of my daugh-'ter-in-law, came forth my own grandſon, inherit-'ing that fortune which I had before amaſſed.

'EXTRAVAGANCE was now as notoriouſly my 'vice, as avarice had been formely; and I ſpent, 'in a very ſhort life, what had coſt me the labour of 'a very long one to rake together. Perhaps, you 'will think my preſent condition was more to be en-'vied than my former: but upon my word it was 'very little ſo; for, my poſſeſſing every thing almoſt

'before

'before I desired it, I could hardly ever say, I enjoyed my wish: I scarce ever knew the delight of satisfying a craving appetite. Besides, as I never once thought, my mind was useless to me, and I was an absolute stranger to all the pleasures arising from it. Now, indeed, did my education qualify me for any delicacy in other enjoyments; so that in the midst of plenty I loathed every thing. Taste for elegance, I had none, and the greatest of corporeal blisses I felt no more from, than the lowest animal. In a word, as while a miser I had plenty without daring to use it, so now I had it without appetite.

'But if I was not very happy in the height of my enjoyment, so I afterwards became perfectly miserable; being soon overtaken by disease, and reduced to distress, till at length, with a broken constitution, and broken heart, I ended my wretched days in a gaol: nor can I think the sentence of Minos too mild, who condemned me, after having taken a large dose of avarice, to wander three years on the banks of Cocytus, with the knowledge of having spent the fortune in the person of the grandson, which I had raised in that of the grandfather.

'The place of my birth, on my return to the world, was Constantinople, where my father was a carpenter. The first thing I remember was, the triumph of Belisarius; which was, indeed, a most noble shew: but nothing pleased me so much as the figure of Gelimer, king of the African Vandals, who being led captive on this occasion, reflecting with disdain on the mutation of his own fortune, and on the ridiculous empty pomp of the conqueror, cried out, VANITY, VANITY, ALL IS MERE VANITY!

'I was bred up to my father's trade, and you may easily believe so low a sphere could produce no adventures worth your notice. However, I married a woman I liked, and who proved a very tolerable wife. My days were past in hard labour, but this procured me health, and I enjoyed a homely

'supper

'ſupper at night with my wife, with more pleaſure 'than I apprehend greater perſons find at their luxu-'rious meals. My life had ſcarce any variety in it, 'and at my death, I advanced to Minos with great 'confidence of entering the gate: but I was unhap-'pily obliged to diſcover ſome frauds I had been 'guilty of in the meaſure of my work, when I work-'ed by the foot, as well as my lazineſs when I was 'employed by the day. On which account when I 'attempted to paſs, the angry judge laid hold on me 'by the ſhoulders, and turned me back ſo violently, 'that had I had a neck of fleſh and bone, I believe he 'would have broke it.'

CHAP. XIII.

Julian *paſſes into a fop.*

'MY ſcene of action was Rome. I was born 'into a noble family, and heir to a conſider-'able fortune. On which my parents, thinking I 'ſhould not want any talents, reſolved very kindly 'and wiſely to throw none away upon me. The on-'ly inſtructors of my youth were therefore one Sal-'tator, who taught me ſeveral motions for my legs; 'and one Ficus, whoſe buſineſs was to ſhew me the 'cleaneſt way (as he called it) of cutting off a man's 'head. When I was well accompliſhed in theſe ſci-'ences, I thought nothing more wanting, but what 'was to be furniſhed by the ſeveral mechanics in 'Rome, who dealt in dreſſing and adorning the pope. 'Being therefore well equipped with all which their 'art could produce, I became, at the age of twenty, 'a complete finiſhed beau. And now during forty-'five years I dreſt, I ſang and danced, and danced 'and ſang, I bowed and ogled, and ogled and bowed, 'till in the 66th year of my age, I got cold by over-'heating myſelf with dancing, and died.

'MINOS told me as I was unworthy of Elyſium, 'ſo I was too inſignificant to be damned, and there-'fore bade me walk back again.'

CHAP.

CHAP. XIV.

Adventures in the perſon of a monk.

'FORTUNE now placed me in the character of a younger brother of a good houſe, and I was in my youth ſent to ſchool; but learning was now at ſo low an ebb, that my maſter himſelf could hardly conſtrue a ſentence in Latin; and as for Greek, he could not read it. With very little knowledge therefore, and with altogether as little virtue, I was ſet apart for the church, and at the proper age commenced monk. I lived many years retired in a cell, a life very agreeable to the gloominefs of my temper, which was much inclined to deſpiſe the world; that is, in other words, to envy all men of ſuperior fortune and qualifications, and, in general, to hate and deteſt the human ſpecies. Notwithſtanding which, I could, on proper occaſions, ſubmit to flatter the vileſt fellow in nature, which I did on Stephen an eunuch, a favourite of the emperor Juſtinian II. one of the wickedeſt wretches whom perhaps the world ever ſaw. I not only wrote a panegyric on this man, but I commended him as a patron to all others in my ſermons; by which means I ſo greatly ingratiated myſelf with him, that he introduced me to the emperor's preſence, where I prevailed ſo far by the ſame methods, that I was ſhortly taken from my cell, and preferred to a place at court. I was no ſooner eſtabliſhed in the favour of Juſtinian, than I prompted him to all kind of cruelty. As I was of a ſour meroſe temper, and hated nothing more than the ſymptoms of happineſs appearing in any countenance, I repreſented all kind of diverſion and amuſement as the moſt horrid ſins. I inveighed againſt chearfulneſs as levity, and encouraged nothing but gravity, or, to confeſs the truth to you, hypocriſy. The unhappy emperor followed my advice, and incenſed the people by ſuch repeated barbarities, that he was at laſt depoſed by them and baniſhed.

'I NOW

'I NOW retired again to my cell, (for hiſtorians 'miſtake in ſaying I was put to death) where I re-'mained ſafe from the danger of the irritated mob, 'whom I curſed in my own heart, as much as they 'could curſe me.

'JUSTINIAN, after three years of his baniſhment, 'returned to Conſtantinople in diſguiſe, and paid me 'a viſit. I at firſt affected not to know him, and 'without the leaſt compunction of gratitude for his 'former favours, intended not to receive him,-till a 'thought immediately ſuggeſted itſelf to me, how I 'might convert him to my advantage. I pretended to 'recollect him; and blaming the ſhortneſs of my 'memory and badneſs of my eyes, I ſprung forward 'and embraced him with great affection.

'MY deſign was to betray him to Apſimar, who, 'I doubted not, would generouſly reward ſuch a ſer-'vice. I therefore very earneſtly requeſted him to 'ſpend the whole evening with me; to which he 'conſented. I formed an excuſe for leaving him a 'few minutes, and ran away to the palace to acquaint 'Apſimar with the gueſt whom I had then in my 'cell. He preſently ordered a guard to go with me 'and ſeize him: but whether the length of my ſtay 'gave him any ſuſpicion, or whether he changed his 'purpoſe after my departure, I know not: for at my 'return, we found he had given us the ſlip; nor could 'we with the moſt diligent ſearch diſcover him.

'APSIMAR being diſappointed of his prey, now 'raged at me; at firſt denouncing the moſt dreadful 'vengeance, if I did not produce the depoſed mo-'narch. However, by ſoothing his paſſion when at 'the higheſt, and afterwards by canting and flattery, 'I made a ſhift to eſcape his fury.

'WHEN Juſtinian was reſtored, I very confidently 'went to wiſh him joy of his reſtoration: but it ſeems, 'he had unfortunately heard of my treachery, ſo that 'he at firſt received me coldly, and afterwards up-'braided me openly with what I had done. I per-'ſevered ſtoutly in denying it, as I knew no evidence 'could be produced againſt me; till finding him ir-'reconcileable, I betook myſelf to reviling him in

'my ſermon, and on every other occaſion, as an ene-
'my to the church and good men, and as an infidel
'and heretic, an atheiſt, a heathen, and an Arian.
'This I did immediately on his return, and before
'he gave thoſe flagrant proofs of his inhumanity,
'which afterwards ſufficiently verified all I had ſaid.
'LUCKILY, I died on the ſame day, when a great
'number of thoſe forces which Juſtinian had ſent a-
'gainſt the Thracian Boſphorus, and who had exe-
'cuted ſuch unheard-of cruelties there, periſhed. As
'every one of theſe was caſt into the bottomleſs pit,
'Minos was ſo tired with condemnation, that he pro-
'claimed that all preſent, who had not been con-
'cerned in that bloody expedition, might, if they
'pleaſed, return to the other world. I took him at
'his word, and preſently turning about began my
'journey.'

CHAP. XV.

Julian *paſſes into the character of a fiddler.*

'ROME was now the ſeat of my nativity. My
'mother was an African, a woman of no great
'beauty, but a favourite, I ſuppoſe from her piety
'to pope Gregory II. Who was my father I know
'not; but I believe no very conſiderable man; for
'after the death of that pope, who was, out of his
'religion, a very good friend of my mother, we fell
'into great diſtreſs, and were at length reduced to
'walk the ſtreets of Rome; nor had either of us any
'other ſupport but a fiddle, on which I played with
'pretty tolerable ſkill: for as my genius turned na-
'turally to muſic, ſo I had been in my youth very
'early inſtructed at the expence of the good pope.
'This afforded us but a very poor livelihood: for
'tho' I had often a numerous croud of hearers, few
'ever thought themſelves obliged to contribute the
'ſmalleſt pittance to the poor ſtarving wretch who
'had given them pleaſure. Nay, ſome of the graver
'ſort, after an hour's attention to my muſic, have
'gone away ſhaking their heads, and crying, it was
'a ſhame ſuch vagabonds were ſuffered to ſtay in the
'city.

'TO

'To ſay the truth, I am confident the fiddle 'would not have kept us alive, had we entirely de- 'pended on the generoſity of my hearers. My mo- 'ther therefore was forced to uſe her own induſtry; 'and while I was ſoothing the ears of the croud, ſhe 'applied to their pockets, and that generally with 'ſuch good ſucceſs, that we now began to enjoy a very 'comfortable ſubſiſtence; and indeed, had we had 'the leaſt prudence or forecaſt, might have ſoon ac- 'quired enough to enable us to quit this dangerous 'and diſhonourable way of life: but I know not 'what is the reaſon, that money got with labour and 'ſafety is conſtantly preſerved, while the produce of 'danger and eaſe is commonly ſpent as eaſily, and 'often as wickedly as acquired. Thus we propor- 'tioned our expences rather by what we had, than 'what we wanted, or even deſired; and on obtaining 'a conſiderable booty, we have even forced nature 'into the moſt profligate extravagance; and have been 'wicked without inclination.

'We carried on this method of thievery for a long 'time without detection: but as fortune generally 'leaves perſons of extraordinary ingenuity in the 'lurch at laſt; ſo did ſhe us: for my poor mother 'was taken in the fact, and together with my- 'ſelf, as her accomplice, hurried before a magi- 'ſtrate.

'Luckily for us, the perſon who was to be our 'judge, was the greateſt lover of muſic in the whole 'city, and had often ſent for me to play to him, for 'which, as he had given me very ſmall rewards, per- 'haps his gratitude now moved him: but, whatever 'was his motive he browbeat the informers againſt 'us, and treated their evidence with ſo little favour, 'that their mouths were ſoon ſtopped, and we diſ- 'miſſed with honour; acquitted, I ſhould rather have 'ſaid; for we were not ſuffered to depart, till I had 'given the judge ſeveral tunes on the fiddle.

'We eſcaped the better on this occaſion, becauſe 'the perſon robbed happened to be a poet; which 'gave the judge, who was a facetious perſon, many 'opportunities of jeſting. He ſaid, poets and muſi-

'cians

'cians ſhould agree together, ſeeing they had married ſiſters, which he afterwards explained to be the 'ſiſter arts. And when the piece of gold was produced, he burſt into a loud laugh, and ſaid it muſt 'be the golden age when poets had gold in their 'pockets, and in that age there could be no robbers. 'He made many more jeſts of the ſame kind, but a 'ſmall taſte will ſuffice.

'IT is a common ſaying, that men ſhould take 'warning by any ſignal delivery; but I cannot ap'prove the juſtice of it: for to me it ſeems, that the 'acquittal of a guilty perſon ſhould rather inſpire 'him with confidence, and it had this effect on us: 'for we now laughed at the law and deſpiſed its pu'niſhments, which we found were to be eſcaped even 'againſt poſitive evidence. We imagined the late 'example was rather a warning to the accuſer than 'the criminal, and accordingly proceeded in the moſt 'impudent and flagitious manner.

'AMONG other robberies, one night being admitted 'by the ſervants into the houſe of an opulent prieſt, 'my mother took an opportunity whilſt the ſervants 'were dancing to my tunes, to convey away a ſilver 'veſſel; this ſhe did without the leaſt ſacrilegious in'tention: but it ſeems the cup, which was a pretty 'large one, was dedicated to holy uſes, and only bor'rowed by the prieſt on an entertainment which he 'made for ſome of his brethren. We were immedi'ately purſued upon this robbery, (the cup being taken 'in our poſſeſſion,) and carried before the ſame magi'ſtrate, who had before behaved to us with ſo much 'gentleneſs: but his countenance was now changed; 'for the moment the prieſt appeared againſt us, his 'ſeverity was as remarkable as his candour had been 'before, and we were both ordered to be ſtript and 'whipt through the ſtreets.

'THIS ſentence was executed with great ſeverity, 'the prieſt himſelf attending and encouraging the 'executioner, which he ſaid he did for the good of 'our ſouls: but though our backs were both flay'd, 'neither my mother's torments nor my own afflicted 'me ſo much, as the indignity offered to my poor

'fiddle, which was carried in triumph before me, and 'treated with a contempt by the multitude, intimating a great ſcorn for the ſcience I had the honour to 'profeſs; which, as it is one of the nobleſt inventions of men, and as I had been always in the high'eſt degree proud of my excellence in it, I ſuffered ſo 'much from the ill-treatment my fiddle received, that 'I would have given all my remainder of ſkin to 'have preſerved it from this affront.

'My mother ſurvived the whipping a very ſhort 'time, and I was now reduced to great diſtreſs and 'miſery; till a young Roman of conſiderable rank 'took a fancy to me, received me into his family, 'and converſed with me in the utmoſt familiarity. 'He had a violent attachment to muſic, and would 'learn to play on the fiddle: but through want of 'genius for the ſcience, he never made any conſider'able progreſs. However, I flattered his perform'ance, and he grew extravagantly fond of me for ſo 'doing. Had I continued this behaviour, I might 'poſſibly have reaped the greateſt advantages from 'his kindneſs: but I had raiſed his own opinion of 'his muſical abilities ſo high, that he now began to 'prefer his ſkill to mine, a preſumption I could not 'bear. One day as we were playing in concert he 'was horribly out; nor was it poſſible, as he de'ſtroyed the harmony, to avoid telling him of it. In'ſtead of receiving my correction, he anſwered, it 'was my blunder, and not his, and that I had miſ'taken the key. Such an affront from my own ſcho'lar was beyond human patience; I flew into a vio'lent paſſion, I flung down my inſtrument in a rage, 'and ſwore, I was not to be taught muſic at my age. 'He anſwered with as much warmth, nor was he to 'be inſtructed by a ſtrolling fiddler. The diſpute 'ended with a challange to play a prize before judges. 'This wager was determined in my favour: but the 'purchaſe was a dear one; for I loſt my friend by it, 'who now twitting me with all his kindneſs, with 'my former ignominious puniſhment, and the deſti'tute condition from which I had been by his bounty 'relieved, diſcarded me for ever.

'WHILE I lived with this gentleman, I became known among others to Sabina a lady of diſtinction, and who valued herſelf much on her taſte for muſic. She no ſooner heard of my being diſcarded, than ſhe took me into her houſe, where I was extremely well cloathed and fed. Notwithſtanding which, my ſituation was far from agreeable; for I was obliged to ſubmit to her conſtant reprehenſions before company; which gave me the greater uneaſineſs, becauſe they were always wrong; nor am I certain that ſhe did not by theſe provocations contribute to my death: for as experience had taught me to give up my reſentment to my bread, ſo my paſſions for want of outward vent, preyed inwardly on my vitals, and perhaps occaſioned the diſtemper of which I ſickened.

'THE lady who, amidſt all the faults ſhe found, was very fond of me; nay, probably was the fonder of me the more faults ſhe found; immediately called in the aid of three celebrated phyſicians. The doctors, being well feed, made me ſeven viſits in three days; and two of them were at the door to viſit me the eighth time, when being acquainted that I was juſt dead, they ſhook their heads and departed.

'WHEN I came to Minos, he aſked me with a ſmile whether I had brought my fiddle with me; and received an anſwer in the negative, he bid me get about my buſineſs, ſaying, it was well for me that the devil was no lover of muſic.'

CHAP. XVI.

The hiſtory of the wiſe man.

'I NOW returned to Rome, but in a very different character. Fortune had now allotted me a ſerious part to act. I had even in my infancy a grave diſpoſition, nor was I ever ſeen to ſmile; which infuſed an opinion into all about me, that I was a child of great ſolidity: ſome foreſeeing that I ſhould be a judge, and others a biſhop. At two years old my father preſented me with a rattle,

'which

'which I broke to pieces with great indignation. This 'the good parent, being extremely wiſe, regarded as 'an eminent ſymptom of my wiſdom, and cried out 'in a kind of extaſy, Well ſaid, boy, I warrant thou 'makeſt a great man.

'AT ſchool, I could never be perſuaded to play with 'my mates; not that I ſpent my hours in learning, to 'which I was not in the leaſt addicted, nor indeed 'had I any talents for it. However, the ſolemnity 'of my carriage won ſo much on my maſter, who 'was a moſt ſagacious perſon, that I was his chief 'favourite, and my example on all occaſions was re-'commended to the other boys, which filled them 'with envy, and me with pleaſure: but tho' they en-'vied me, they all paid me that involuntary reſpect, 'which it is the curſe attending this paſſion to bear 'towards its object.

'I HAD now obtained univerſally the character of a 'very wiſe young man, which I did not altogether 'purchaſe without pains; for the reſtraint I laid on 'myſelf in abſtaining from the ſeveral diverſions 'adapted to my years, coſt me many a yearning: 'but the pride which I inwardly enjoyed in the fan-'cied dignity of my character, made me ſome a-'mends.

'THUS I paſt on, without any thing very memo-'rable happening to me, till I arrived at the age of 'twenty-three; when unfortunately I fell acquainted 'with a young Neapolitan lady, whoſe name was A-'riadne. Her beauty was ſo exquiſite, that her firſt 'ſight made a violent impreſſion on me; this was 'again improved by her behaviour, which was moſt 'genteel, eaſy, and affable; laſtly, her converſation 'completed the conqueſt. In this ſhe diſcovered a 'ſtrong and lively underſtanding, with the ſweeteſt 'and moſt benign temper. This lovely creature was 'about eighteen when I firſt unhappily beheld her at 'Rome, in a viſit to a relation, with whom I had 'great intimacy. As our interviews at firſt were ex-'tremely frequent, my paſſions were captivated be-'fore I apprehended the leaſt danger; and the ſooner 'probably, as the young lady herſelf, to whom I con-

'ſulted

'ſulted every method of recommendation, was not 'diſpleaſed with my being her admirer.

'ARIADNE having ſpent three months at Rome, 'now returned to Naples, bearing my heart with 'her: on the other hand, I had all the aſſurances 'conſiſtent with the conſtraint under which the moſt 'perfect modeſty lays a young woman, that her own 'heart was not entirely unaffected. I ſoon found her 'abſence gave me an uneaſineſs not eaſy to be borne, 'or to remove. I now firſt applied to diverſions (of 'the graver ſort, paticularly to muſic) but in vain; 'they rather raiſed my deſires, and heightened my 'anguiſh. My paſſion at length grew ſo violent, that 'I began to think of ſatisfying it. As the firſt ſtep 'to this, I cautiouſly enquired into the circumſtances 'of Ariadne's parents, with which I was hitherto 'unacquainted; though, indeed, I did not apprehend 'they were extremely great, notwithſtanding the 'handſome appearance of their daughter at Rome. 'Upon examination, her fortune exceeded my expec-'tation; but was not ſufficient to juſtify my marri-'age with her in the opinion of the wiſe and pru-'dent. I had now a violent ſtruggle between wiſ-'dom and happineſs, in which, after ſeveral grievous 'pangs, wiſdom got the better; I could by no means 'prevail with myſelf to ſacrifice that character of pro-'found wiſdom, which I had with ſuch uniform con-'duct obtained, and with ſuch caution hitherto pre-'ſerved. I therefore reſolved to conquer my affection, 'whatever it coſt me, and indeed it did not coſt me a 'little.

'WHILE I was engaged in this conflict (for it 'laſted a long time), Ariadne returned to Rome: her 'preſence was a terrible enemy to my wiſdom, which, 'even in her abſence, had with great difficulty ſtood 'its ground. It ſeems (as ſhe hath ſince told me in 'Elyſium with much merriment) I had made the 'ſame impreſſions on her which ſhe had made on me. 'Indeed, I believe my wiſdom would have been to-'tally ſubdued by this ſurprize, had it not cunningly 'ſuggeſted to me a method of ſatisfying my paſſion 'without doing any injury to my reputation. This

'was my engaging her privately as a miſtreſs, which 'was at that time reputable enough at Rome, pro- 'vided the affair was managed with an air of ſlyneſs 'and gravity, though the ſecret was known to the 'whole city.

'I IMMEDIATELY ſet about this project, and em- 'ployed every art and engine to effect it. I had par- 'ticularly bribed her prieſt, and an old female ac- 'quaintance and diſtant relation of her's, into my in- 'tereſt: but all was in vain; her virtue oppoſed the 'paſſion in her breaſt as ſtrongly as wiſdom had op- 'poſed it in mine. She received my propoſals with 'the utmoſt diſdain, and preſently refuſed to ſee or 'hear me any more.

'SHE returned again to Naples, and left me in a 'worſe condition than before. My days I now paſ- 'ſed with the moſt irkſome uneaſineſs, and my 'nights were reſtleſs and ſleepleſs. The ſtory of our 'amour was now pretty public, and the ladies talked 'of our match as certain: but my acquaintance de- 'nied their aſſent, ſaying, No, no, he is too wiſe to 'marry ſo imprudently. This their opinion gave me, I 'own, very great pleaſure; but, to ſay the truth, 'ſcarce compenſated the pangs I ſuffered to preſerve 'it.

'ONE day, while I was balancing with myſelf, 'and had almoſt reſolved to enjoy my happineſs at 'the price of my character, a friend brought me word 'that Ariadne was married. This news ſtruck me 'to the ſoul, and though I had reſolution enough to 'maintain my gravity before him (for which I ſuf- 'fered not a little the more), the moment I was alone, 'I threw myſelf into the moſt violent fit of deſpair, 'and would willingly have parted with wiſdom, for- 'tune, and every thing elſe, to have retrieved her: 'but that was impoſſible, and I had now nothing but 'time to hope a cure from. This was very tedious 'in performing it, and the longer as Ariadne had 'married a Roman cavalier, was now become my 'near neighbour, and I had the mortification of ſee- 'ing her make the beſt of wives, and of having the

'happi-

'happineſs, which I had loſt, every day before my 'eyes.

'If I ſuffered ſo much on account of my wiſdom, 'in having refuſed Ariadne, I was not much more 'obliged to it for procuring me a rich widow, who 'was recommended to me by an old friend, as a very 'prudent match; and, indeed, ſo it was, her for-'tune being ſuperior to mine, in the ſame proportion 'as that of Ariadne had been inferior. I therefore 'embraced this propoſal, and my character of wiſ-'dom ſoon pleaded ſo effectually for me with the wi-'dow, who was herſelf a woman of great gravity 'and diſcretion, that I ſoon ſucceeded; and as ſoon 'as decency would permit (of which this lady was 'the ſtricteſt obſerver), we were married, being the 'ſecond day of the ſecond week, of the ſecond year, 'after her huſband's death: for ſhe ſaid ſhe thought 'ſome period of time above the year had a great air 'of decorum.

'But, prudent as this lady was, ſhe made me mi-'ſerable. Her perſon was far from being lovely; 'but her temper was intolerable. During fifteen years 'habitation, I never paſſed a ſingle day without hear-'tily curſing her, and the hour in which we came to-'gether. The only comfort I received in the midſt 'of the higheſt torments, was from continually hear-'ing the prudence of my match commended by all 'my acquaintance.

'Thus you ſee, in the affairs of love, I bought 'the reputation of wiſdom pretty dear. In other 'matters, I had it ſomewhat cheaper; not that hy-'pocriſy, which was the price I gave for it, gives 'one no pain: I have refuſed myſelf a thouſand lit-'tle amuſements with a feigned contempt, while I 'have really had an inclination to them. I have of-'ten almoſt choaked myſelf to reſtrain from laughing 'at a jeſt, and (which was perhaps to myſelf the 'leaſt hurtful of all my hypocriſy) have heartily en-'joyed a book in my cloſet, which I have ſpoke with 'deteſtation of in public. To ſum up my hiſtory in 'ſhort, as I had few adventures worth remembering, 'my whole life was one conſtant lie; and happy

'would it have been for me, if I could as thoroughly 'have impoſed on myſelf, as I did on others: for re- 'flection, at every turn, would often remind me I 'was not ſo wiſe as people thought me; and this con- 'ſiderably embittered the pleaſure I received from the 'public commendation of my wiſdom. This ſelf-ad- 'monition, like a *memento mori* or *mortalis es*, muſt 'be, in my opinion, a very dangerous enemy to flat- 'tery: indeed, a weight ſufficient to counterbalance 'all the falſe praiſe of the world. But whether it be, 'that the generality of wiſe men do not reflect at all, 'or whether they have, from a conſtant impoſition on 'others, contracted ſuch a habit of deceit, as to de- 'ceive themſelves, I will not determine; it is, I be- 'lieve, moſt certain, that very few wiſe men know 'themſelves what fools they are, more than the world 'doth. Good gods! could but one ſee what paſſes 'in the cloſet of wiſdom! how ridiculous a ſight muſt 'it be to behold the wiſe man, who deſpiſes gratify- 'ing his palate, devouring cuſtard; the ſober wiſe 'man, with his dram bottle; or, the anticarnaliſt (if 'I may be allowed the expreſſion) chuckling over a 'b—y book or picture, and perhaps careſſing his 'houſe-maid!

'But to conclude a character, in which I appre- 'hend I made as abſurd a figure, as in any in which 'I trod the ſtage of earth, my wiſdom at laſt put an 'end to itſelf; that is, occaſioned my diſſolution.

'A RELATION of mine, in the eaſtern part of the 'empire, diſinherited his ſon, and left me his heir.

'This happened in the depth of winter, when I 'was in my grand clamacteric, and had juſt recovered 'of a dangerous diſeaſe. As I had all the reaſon ima- 'ginable to apprehend the family of the deceaſed would 'conſpire againſt me, and embezzle as much as they 'could, I adviſed with a grave and wiſe friend, what 'was proper to be done; whether I ſhould go myſelf, 'or employ a notary on this occaſion, and defer my 'journey to the ſpring. To ſay the truth, I was moſt 'inclined to the latter; the rather as my circumſtances 'were extremely flouriſhing, as I was advanced in 'years, and had not one perſon in the world, to

'whom

'whom I ſhould with pleaſure bequeath any fortune
'at my death.

'My friend told me, he thought my queſtion ad-
'mitted no manner of doubt or debate; that com-
'mon prudence abſolutely required my immediate de-
'parture; adding, that if the ſame good luck had
'happened to him, he would have been already on
'his journey: for, continued he, a man who knows
'the world ſo well as you, would be inexcuſable to
'give perſons ſuch an opportunity of cheating you,
'who, you muſt be aſſured, will be too well inclined;
'and as for employing a notary, remember that ex-
'cellent maxim, *Ne facias per alium, quod fieri poteſt*
'*per te.* I own the badneſs of the ſeaſon, and your
'very late recovery are unlucky circumſtances; but a
'wiſe man muſt get over difficulties, when neceſſity ob-
'liges him to encounter them.

'I was immediately determined by this opinion.
'The duty of a wiſe man made an irreſiſtible impreſ-
'ſion, and I took the neceſſity for granted, without
'examination. I accordingly ſet forward the next
'morning; very tempeſtuous weather ſoon overtook
'me; I had not travelled three days before I relapſed
'into my fever, and died.

'I was now as cruelly diſapointed by Minos, as I
'had formerly been happily ſo. I advanced with the
'utmoſt confidence to the gate, and really imagined I
'ſhould have been admitted by the wiſdom of my coun-
'tenance, even without any queſtions aſked: but this
'was not my caſe; and, to my great ſurprize, Minos,
'with a menacing voice, called out to me——You
'Mr. there, with the grave countenance, whither ſo
'faſt, pray? Will you pleaſe, before you move any
'farther forwards, to give me a ſhort account of your
'tranſactions below. I then began, and recounted
'to him my whole hiſtory, ſtill expecting, at the end
'of every period, that the gate would be ordered to
'fly open: but I was obliged to go quite through
'with it, and then Minos, after ſome little conſide-
'ration ſpoke to me as follows:

'You, Mr. Wiſeman; ſtand forth, if you pleaſe.
'Believe me, Sir a trip back again to earth, will be

'one of the wiſeſt ſteps you ever took, and really 'more to the honour of your wiſdom, than any you 'have hitherto taken. On the other ſide, nothing 'could be ſimpler, than to endeavour at Elyſium; 'for who, but a fool, would carry a commodity, 'which is of ſuch infinite value in one place, into ano-'ther where it is of none. But without attempting 'to offend your gravity with a jeſt, you muſt return 'to the place from whence you came; for Elyſium 'was never deſigned for thoſe who are too wiſe to be 'happy.'

'This ſentence confounded me greatly, eſpecially 'as it ſeemed to threaten me with carrying my wiſ-'dom back again to earth. I told the judge, though 'he would not admit me at the gate, I hoped I had 'committed no crime, while alive, which merited 'my being wiſe any longer. He anſwered me, I muſt 'take my chance as to that matter, and immediately 'we turned our backs to each other.'

CHAP. XVII.

Julian *enters into the perſon of a king.*

'I WAS now born at Oviedo in Spain. My father's 'name was Veremond, and I was adopted by my 'uncle, king Alphonſo the Chaſte. I don't recollect in 'all the pilgrimages I have made on earth, that I 'ever paſt a more miſerable infancy than now; being 'under the utmoſt confinement and reſtraint, and ſur-'rounded with phyſicians, who were ever doſing me; 'and tutors, who were continually plaguing me with 'their inſtructions; even thoſe hours of leiſure, which 'my inclination would have ſpent in play, were al-'lotted to tedious pomp and ceremony, which, at an 'age wherein I had no ambition to enjoy the ſervility 'of courtiers, enſlaved me more than it could the 'meaneſt of them. However, as I advanced towards 'manhood, my condition made me ſome amends: 'for the moſt beautiful women of their own accord 'threw out lures for me, and I had the happineſs, 'which no man in an inferior degree can arrive at, 'of enjoying the moſt delicious creatures, without the

pre-

previous and tireſome ceremonies of courtſhip, unleſs with the moſt ſimple, young, and unexperienced. As for the court ladies, they regarded me rather as men do the moſt lovely of the other ſex; and tho' they outwardly retained ſome appearance of modeſty, they in reality rather conſidered themſelves as receiving than conferring favours.

'ANOTHER happineſs I enjoyed, was in conferring favours of another ſort; for as I was extremely good-natured and generous, ſo I had daily opportunities of ſatisfying thoſe paſſions. Beſides my own princely allowance, which was very bountiful, and with which I did many liberal and good actions, I recommended numberleſs perſons of merit in diſtreſs to the king's notice, moſt of whom were provided for.

'INDEED, had I ſufficiently known my bleſt ſituation at this time, I ſhould have grieved at nothing more than the death of Alphonſo, by which the burden of government devolved upon me: but ſo blindly fond is ambition, and ſuch charms doth it fancy in the power, and pomp, and ſplendor of a crown, that though I vehemently loved that king, and had the greateſt obligations to him, the thoughts of ſucceeding him obliterated my regret at his loſs, and the wiſh for my approaching coronation, dried my eyes at his funeral.

'BUT my fondneſs for the name of king, did not make me forgetful of thoſe, over whom I was to reign. I conſidered them in the light in which a tender father regards his children, as perſons whoſe well-being God had intruſted to my care; and again, in that in which a prudent lord reſpects his tenants, as thoſe on whoſe wealth and grandeur he is to build his own. Both theſe conſiderations inſpired me with the greateſt care for their welfare, and their good was my firſt and ultimate concern.

'THE uſurper Mauregas had impiouſly obliged himſelf, and his ſucceſſors, to pay to the Moors every year an infamous tribute of an hundred young virgins: from this cruel and ſcandalous impoſition I reſolved to relieve my country. Accordingly, when

'when their emperor Abderames the second had the 'audaciousneſs to make this demand of me, inſtead 'of complying with it, I ordered his ambaſſadors to 'be driven away with all imaginable ignominy, and 'would have condemned them to death, could I have 'done it without a manifeſt violation of the law of 'nations.

'I NOW raiſed an immenſe army. At the levying 'of which, I made a ſpeech from my throne, acquaint-'ing my ſubjects with the neceſſity, and the reaſons 'of the war in which I was going to engage: which 'I convinced them I had undertaken for their eaſe 'and ſafety, and not for ſatisfying any wanton ambi-'tion, or revenging any private pique, of my own. 'They all declared unanimouſly, that they would 'venture their lives, and every thing dear to them, in 'my defence, and in the ſupport of the honour of 'my crown. Accordingly, my levies were inſtantly 'complete, ſufficient numbers being only left to till 'the land; churchmen, even biſhops themſelves, en-'liſting themſelves under my banners.

'THE armies met at Alvelda, where we were diſ-'comfited with immenſe loſs, and nothing but the 'lucky intervention of the night could have ſaved our 'whole army.

'I RETREATED to the ſummit of a hill, where I 'abandoned myſelf to the higheſt agonies of grief, 'not ſo much for the danger in which I then ſaw my 'crown, as for the loſs of thoſe miſerable wretches, 'who had expoſed their lives at my command. I 'could not then avoid this reflection; That if the 'deaths of theſe people in a war, undertaken abſo-'lutely for their protection, could give me ſuch con-'cern; what horror muſt I have felt, if, like princes 'greedy of dominion, I had ſacrificed ſuch numbers 'to my own pride, vanity, and ridiculous luſt of 'power!

'AFTER having vented my ſorrows for ſome time 'in this manner, I began to conſider by what means 'I might poſſibly endeavour to retrieve this misfor-'tune; when reflecting on the great number of 'prieſts I had in my army, and on the prodigious

'force

'force of ſuperſtition, a thought luckily ſuggeſted it-
'ſelf to me, to counterfeit that St. James had ap-
'peared to me in a viſion, and had promiſed me the
'victory. While I was ruminating on this, the bi-
'ſhop of Najara came opportunely to me. As I did
'not intend to communicate the ſecret to him, I took
'another method, and inſtead of anſwering any thing
'the biſhop ſaid to me, I pretended to talk to St.
'James, as if he had been really preſent; till at
'length, after having ſpoke thoſe things, which I
'thought ſufficient, and thanked the ſaint aloud for
'his promiſe of the victory, I turned about to the
'biſhop, and embracing him with a pleaſed counte-
'nance, proteſted I did not know he was preſent; and
'then informing him of this ſuppoſed viſion, I aſked
'him, if he had not himſelf ſeen the ſaint? He an-
'ſwered me, he had; and afterwards proceeded to
'aſſure me, that this appearance of St. James was
'entirely owing to his prayers; for that he was his
'tutelar ſaint. He added, he had a viſion of him a
'few hours before, when he promiſed him a victory
'over the infidels, and acquainted him at the ſame
'time of the vacancy of the ſee of Toledo. Now
'this news being really true, tho' it had happened ſo
'lately, that I had not heard of it, (nor, indeed,
'was it well poſſible I ſhould, conſidering the great
'diſtance of the way) when I was afterwards acquaint-
'ed with it, a little ſtaggered me, though far from be-
'ing ſuperſtitious; till being informed, that the bi-
'ſhop had loſt three horſes on a late expedition, I was
'ſatisfied

'THE next morning, the biſhop, at my deſire,
'mounted the roſtrum, and trumpeted forth this vi-
'ſion ſo effectually, which he ſaid he had that even-
'ing twice ſeen with his own eyes, that a ſpirit be-
'gan to be infuſed though the whole army, which
'rendered them ſuperior to almoſt any force: the bi-
'ſhop inſiſted, that the leaſt doubt of ſucceſs was giv-
'ing the lie to the ſaint, and a damnable ſin, and
'he took upon him in his name to promiſe them vic-
'tory.

'THE army being drawn out, I ſoon experienced 'the effect of enthuſiaſm, for having contrived ano- 'ther* ſtratagem to ſtrengthen what the biſhop had 'ſaid, the ſoldiers fought more like furies than men. 'My ſtratagem was this: I had about me a dexterous 'fellow, who had been formerly a pimp in my amours. 'Him I dreſſed up in a ſtrange antic dreſs, with a pair 'of white colours in his right hand, a red croſs in his 'left, and having diguiſed him ſo that no one could 'know him, I placed him on a white horſe, and or- 'dered him to ride to the head of the army, and cry 'out, Follow St. James! Theſe words were reiterated 'by all the troops, who attacked the enemy with ſuch 'intrepidity, that notwithſtanding our inferiority of 'numbers, we ſoon obtained a complete victory.

'THE biſhop was come up by the time that the 'enemy was routed, and acquainting us, that he had 'met St. James by the way, and that he had inform- 'ed him of what had paſt, he added, that he had ex- 'preſs orders from the ſaint, to receive a conſiderable 'ſum for his uſe, and that a certain tax on corn and 'wine ſhould be ſetled on his church for ever; and 'laſtly, that a horſeman's pay ſhould be allowed for 'the future to the ſaint himſelf, of which he and his 'ſucceſſors were appointed receivers. The army re- 'ceived theſe demands with ſuch acclamations, that 'I was obliged to comply with them, as I could by 'no means diſcover the impoſition, nor do I believe 'I ſhould have gained any credit if I had.

'I HAD now done with the ſaint, but the biſhop 'had not; for about a week afterwards, lights were 'ſeen in a wood near where the battle was fought; 'and in a ſhort time afterwards, they diſcovered his 'tomb at the ſame place. Upon this, the biſhop 'made me a viſit, and forced me to go thither to 'build a church to him, and largely endow it. In a 'word, the good man ſo plagued me with miracle 'after miracle, that I was forced to make intereſt

* This ſilly ſtory is told as a ſolemn truth, i. e. that St. James really appeared in the manner this fellow is deſcribed, by Mariana, l. 7. § 78.

'with

'with the pope to convey him to Toledo, to get rid 'of him.

'But to proceed to other matters.—There was an 'inferior officer, who had behaved very bravely in 'the battle againſt the Moors, and had received ſeve- 'ral wounds, who ſolicited me for preferment; 'which I was about to confer on him, when one of my 'miniſters came to me in a fright, and told me, that 'he had promiſed the poſt I deſigned for this man 'to the ſon of count Alderedo; and that the count, 'who was a powerful perſon, would be greatly diſ- 'obliged at the refuſal, as he had ſent for his ſon 'from ſchool to take poſſeſſion of it. I was obliged 'to agree with my miniſter's reaſons, and at the ſame 'time recommended the wounded ſoldier to be pre- 'ferred by him, which he faithfully promiſed he 'would: but I met the poor wretch ſince in Elyſium, 'who informed me he was afterwards ſtarved to 'death.

'None, who hath not been himſelf a prince, nor 'any prince, till his death, can conceive the impo- 'ſitions daily put on them by their favourites and 'miniſters; ſo that princes are often blamed for the 'faults of others. The count of Saldagne, had been 'long confined in priſon, when his ſon D. Barnard del 'Carpio, who had performed the greateſt actions 'againſt the Moors, entreated me as a reward for his 'ſervice to grant him his father's liberty. The old 'man's puniſhment had been ſo tedious, and the ſer- 'vices of the young one ſo ſingularly eminent, that 'I was very inclinable to grant the requeſt: but my 'miniſters ſtrongly oppoſed it. They told me, *My* 'glory demanded revenge for the diſhonour offered to my 'family; *that ſo poſitive a demand carried with it rather* 'the air of menace than entreaty. That the vain detail 'of his ſervices, and the recompence due to them, was an 'injurious reproach. That to grant what had been ſo 'haughtily demanded, would argue in the monarch both 'weakneſs and timidity; in a word, that to remit the 'puniſhment inflicted by my predeceſſors, would be to con- 'demn their judgment. Laſtly, one told me in a whiſper, 'his whole family are enemies to your houſe. By theſe means

means the miniſters prevailed. The young lord took the refuſal ſo ill, that he retired from court, and abandoned himſelf to deſpair, whilſt the old one languiſhed in priſon. By which means, as I have ſince diſcovered, I loſt the uſe of two of my beſt ſubjects.

'To confeſs the truth, I had, by means of my miniſters, conceived a very unjuſt opinion of my whole people, whom I fancied to be daily conſpiring againſt me, and to entertain the moſt diſloyal thoughts; when in reality (as I have known ſince my death) they held me in univerſal reſpect and eſteem. This is a trick, I believe, too often played with ſovereigns, who, by ſuch means, are prevented from that open intercourſe with their ſubjects, which as it would greatly endear the perſon of the prince to the people, ſo might it often prove dangerous to a miniſter, who was conſulting his own intereſt only at the expence of both. I believe I have now recounted to you the moſt material paſſages of my life; for, I aſſure you, there are ſome incidents in the lives of kings not extremely worth relating. Every thing which paſſes in their minds and families, is not attended with the ſplendor which ſurrounds their throne: indeed, there are ſome hours wherein the naked king and the naked cobler can ſcarce be diſtinguiſhed from each other.

'HAD it not been, however, for my ingratitude to Bernard del Carpio, I believe this would have been my laſt pilgrimage on earth: for, as to the ſtory of St. James, I thought Minos would have burſt his ſides at it: but he was ſo diſpleaſed with me on the other account, that, with a frown, he cried out, Get thee back again, king. Nor would he ſuffer me to ſay another word.'

CHAP.

CHAP. XVIII.

Julian *paſſes into a fool.*

'THE next viſit I made to the world, was performed in France, where I was born in the court of Lewis III. and had afterwards the honour to be preferred to be fool to the prince, who was ſurnamed Charles the Simple. But in reality, I know not whether I might ſo properly be ſaid to have acted the fool in his court, as to have made fools of all others in it. Certain it is, I was very far from being what is generally underſtood by that word, being a moſt cunning, deſigning, arch knave. I knew very well the folly of my maſter, and of many others, and how to make my advantage of this knowledge. I was as dear to Charles the Simple, as the player Paris was to Domitian, and, like him, beſtowed all manner of offices and honours on whom I pleaſed. This drew me a great number of followers among the courtiers, who really miſtook me for a fool, and yet flattered my underſtanding. There was particularly in the court a fellow, who had neither honour, honeſty, ſenſe, wit, courage, beauty, nor indeed any one good quality either of mind or body, to recommend him: but was at the ſame time, perhaps, as cunning a monſter as ever lived. This gentleman took it into his head to liſt under my banner, and purſued me ſo very aſſiduouſly with flattery, conſtantly reminding me of my good ſenſe, that I grew immoderately fond of him: for though flattery is not moſt judiciouſly applied to qualities which the perſons flattered poſſeſs, yet as, notwithſtanding by being well aſſured of my own parts, I paſt in the whole court for a fool, this flattery was a very ſweet morſel to me. I therefore got this fellow preferred to a biſhopric, but I loſt my flatterer by it, for he never afterwards ſaid a civil thing to me.

'I NEVER baulked my imagination for the groſſneſs of the reflection on the character of the greateſt noble, nay even the king himſelf; of which I will

'will give you a very bold inſtance. One day, his 'ſimple majeſty told me, he believed I had ſo much 'power, that his people looked on me as the king, 'and himſelf as my fool. At this I pretended to be 'angry as with an affront. Why, how now, ſays 'the king; Are you aſhamed of being a king? No, 'Sir, ſays I, but I am deviliſhly aſhamed of my fool.'

'HEBERT, earl of Vermandois, had by my means 'been reſtored to the favour of the Simple, (for ſo I 'uſed always to call Charles.) He afterwards pre-'vailed with the king to take the city of Arras from 'earl Baldwin, by which means Hebert, in exchange 'for this city, had Peronne reſtored to him by count 'Altmar. Baldwin came to court, in order to pro-'cure the reſtoration of this city; but, either through 'pride or ignorance, neglected to apply to me. As 'I met him at court during his ſolicitation, I told 'him he did not apply the right way; he anſwered 'roughly, he ſhould not aſk a fool's advice: I replied, 'I did not wonder at his prejudice, ſince he had 'miſcarried already by following a fool's advice: but 'I told him, there were fools who had more intereſt 'than that he had brought with him to court. He 'anſwered me ſurlily, he had no fool with him, for 'he travelled alone.—Ay, my lord, ſays I, I often 'travel alone, and yet they will have it I always 'carry a fool with me. This raiſed a laugh among 'the byſtanders, on which he gave me a blow. I im-'mediately complained of this uſage to The Simple, 'who diſmiſſed the earl from court with very hard 'words, inſtead of granting him the favour he ſoli-'cited.

'I GIVE you theſe rather as a ſpecimen of my in-'tereſt and impudence than of my wit; indeed my 'jeſts were commonly more admired than they ought 'to be: for, perhaps, I was not in reality much more 'a wit than a fool. But with the latitude of un-'bounded ſcurrility, it is eaſy enough to attain the 'character of wit, eſpecially in a court, where, as all 'perſons hate and envy one another heartily, and are 'at the ſame time obliged by the conſtrained beha-'viour of civility to profeſs the greateſt liking, to it

is, and must be wonderfully pleasant to them to see the follies of their acquaintance exposed by a third person. Besides, the opinion of the court is as uniform as the fashion, and is always guided by the will of the prince or of the favourite. I doubt not that Caligula's horse was universally held in his court to be a good and able consul: in the same manner was I universally acknowledged to be the wittiest fool in the world. Every word I said raised laughter, and was held to be a jest, especially by the ladies; who sometimes laughed before I had discovered my sentiment, and often repeated that as a jest which I did not even intend as one.

'I was as severe on the ladies as on the men, and with the same impunity; but this at last cost me dear: for once having joked the beauty of a lady, whose name was Adelaide, a favourite of The Simple's, she pretended to smile and be pleased at my wit with the rest of the company; but in reality, she highly resented it, and endeavoured to undermine me with the king. In which she so greatly succeeded (for what can't a favourite woman do with one who deserves the surname of Simple?) that the king grew every day more reserved to me, and when I attempted any freedom, gave me such marks of his displeasure, that the courtiers (who have all hawk's eyes at a flight from the sovereign) soon discerned it: and indeed, had I been blind enough not to have discovered that I had lost ground in the Simple's favour, by his own change in his carriage towards me, I must have found it, nay even felt it, in the behaviour of the courtiers; for, as my company was two days before solicited with the utmost eagerness, it was now rejected with as much scorn. I was now the jest of the ushers and pages; and an officer of guards, on whom I was a little jocose, gave me a box on the ear, bidding me make free with my equals. This very fellow had been my butt for many years, without daring to lift his hand against me.

'But tho' I visibly perceived the alteration in the Simple, I was utterly unable to make any guess at the

'the occaſion. I had not the leaſt ſuſpicion of Ade-
'laide; for, beſides her being a very good humoured
'woman, I had often made ſevere jeſts on her repu-
'tation, which I had all the reaſon imaginable to
'believe had given her no offence. But I ſoon per-
'ceived, that a woman will bear the moſt bitter cen-
'ſures on her morals, eaſier than the ſmalleſt reflec-
'tion on her beauty: for ſhe now declared publicly,
'that I ought to be diſmiſſed from court, as the ſtu-
'pideſt of fools, and one in whom there was no di-
'verſion; and that ſhe wondered how any perſon
'could have ſo little taſte, as to imagine I had any
'wit. This ſpeech was echoed through the drawing-
'room, and agreed to by all preſent. Every one now
'put on an unuſual gravity on their countenance
'whenever I ſpoke; and it was as much out of my
'power to raiſe a laugh, as formerly it had been for
'me to open my mouth without one.

'WHILE my affairs were in this poſture, I went
'one day into the circle, without my fool's dreſs.
'The Simple, who would ſtill ſpeak to me, cried
'out, So fool, what's the matter now? Sir, anſwer-
'ed I, fools are like to be ſo common a commodity
'at court, that I am weary of my coat. How doſt
'thou mean, anſwered the Simple; what can make
'them commoner now than uſual?—O, Sir, ſaid I,
'there are ladies here make your majeſty a fool every
'day of their lives. The Simple took no notice of
'my jeſt, and ſeveral preſent ſaid my bones ought to
'be broke for my impudence; but it pleaſed the
'queen, who knowing Adelaide, whom ſhe hated,
'to be the cauſe of my diſgrace, obtained me of the
'king, and took me into her ſervice; ſo that I was
'henceforth called the queen's fool, and in her court
'received the ſame honour, and had as much wit as
'I had formerly had in the king's. But as the queen
'had really no power unleſs over her own domeſtics,
'I was not treated in general with that complacence,
'nor did I receive thoſe bribes and preſents, which
'had once fallen to my ſhare.

'NOR did this confined reſpect continue long: for
'the queen, who had in fact no taſte for humour,

'ſoon

'soon grew sick of my foolery, and forgetting the 'cause for which she had taken me, neglected me so 'much, that her court grew intolerable to my tem- 'per, and I broke my heart and died.

'MINOS laughed heartily at several things in my 'story, and then telling me, No one played the fool 'in Elysium, bid me go back again.'

CHAP. XIX.

Julian *appears in the character of a beggar.*

'I NOW returned to Rome, and was born into a 'very poor and numerous family, which, to be 'honest with you, procured its livelihood by begging. 'This, if you was never yourself of the calling, you 'do not know, I suppose, to be as regular a trade as 'any other; to have its several rules and secrets, or 'mysteries, which to learn require perhaps as tedi- 'ous an apprenticeship as those of any craft what- 'ever.

'THE first thing we are taught is the countenance 'miserable. This indeed nature makes much easier 'to some than others: but there are none who can- 'not accomplish it, if they begin early enough in 'youth, and before the muscles are grown too stub- 'born.

'THE second thing is, the voice lamentable. In 'this qualification too, nature must have her share in 'producing the most consummate excellence; how- 'ever, art will here, as in every other instance, go a 'great way with industry and application, even with- 'out the assistance of genius; especially if the student 'begins young.

'THERE are many other instructions: but these 'are most considerable. The women are taught one 'practice more than the men; for they are instructed 'in the art of crying, that is, to have their tears ready 'on all occasions: but this is attained very easily by 'most. Some indeed arrive at the utmost perfection 'in this art with incredible facility.

'No profession requires a deeper insight into hu- 'man nature, than the beggars. Their knowledge

'of

'of the paſſions of men is ſo extenſive, that I have 'often thought, it would be of no little ſervice to a 'politician to have his education among them. Nay, 'there is a much greater analogy between theſe two 'characters than is imagined: for both concur in 'their firſt and grand principle, it being equally their 'buſineſs to delude and impoſe on mankind. It muſt 'be confeſſed, that they differ widely in the degree of 'advantage, which they make by their deceit; for, 'whereas the beggar is contented with a little, the 'politician leaves but a little behind.

'A VERY great Engliſh philoſopher hath remarked 'our policy, in taking care never to addreſs any one 'with a title inferior to what he really claims. My 'father was of the ſame opinion: for I remember 'when I was a boy, the pope happening to paſs by, 'I attended him with pray Sir; for God's ſake, Sir, 'for the Lord's ſake, Sir;—To which he anſwered 'gravely, ſirrah, ſirrah, you ought to be whipt, for 'taking the Lord's name in vain; and in vain it was 'indeed, for he gave me nothing. My father over-'hearing this, took his advice and whipt me very ſe-'verely. While I was under correction, I promiſed 'often never to take the Lord's name in vain any 'more. My father then ſaid, child, I do not whip 'you for taking his name in vain: I whip you for 'not calling the pope his Holineſs.

'IF all men were ſo wiſe and good to follow the 'clergy's example, the nuiſance of beggars would 'ſoon be removed. I do not remember to have been 'above twice relieved by them during my whole ſtate 'of beggary. Once was by a very well-looking man, 'who gave me a ſmall piece of ſilver, and declared, 'he had given me more than he had left himſelf; 'the other was by a ſpruce young fellow, who had 'that very day firſt put on his robes, whom I at-'tended with, pray, reverend Sir, good reverend Sir, 'conſider your cloth. He anſwered, I do child, con-'ſider my office, and I hope all of our cloth do the 'ſame. He then threw down ſome money, and ſtrut-'ted off with great dignity.

'WITH

'WITH the women, I had one general formulary: 'Sweet pretty lady, God bleſs your ladyſhip, God 'bleſs your handſome face. This generally ſucceed-'ed; but I obſerved, the uglier the woman was, the 'ſurer I was of ſucceſs.

'IT was a conſtant maxim among us, that the 'greater retinue any one travelled with, the leſs ex-'pectation we might promiſe ourſelves from them; 'but whenever we ſaw a vehicle with a ſingle, or no 'ſervant, we imagined our booty ſure, and were ſel-'dom deceived.

'WE obſerved great difference introduced by time 'and circumſtance in the ſame perſon: for inſtance, 'a loſing gameſter is ſometimes generous; but from 'a winner, you will as eaſily obtain his ſoul, as a ſin-'gle groat. A lawyer travelling from his country-'ſeat to his clients at Rome, and a phyſician going to 'viſit a patient, were always worth aſking: but the 'ſame on their return were (according to our cant 'phraſe) untouchable.

'THE moſt general, and indeed, the trueſt maxim 'amongſt us, was, that thoſe who poſſeſſed the leaſt 'were always the readieſt to give. The chief art of 'a beggarman is therefore to diſcern the rich from 'the poor, which, tho' it be only diſtinguiſhing ſub-'ſtance from ſhadow, is by no means attainable with-'out a pretty good capacity, and a vaſt degree of 'attention: for theſe two are eternally induſtrious in 'endeavouring to counterfeit each other. In this de-'ceit, the poor man is more heartily in earneſt to de-'ceive you, than the rich; who amidſt all the em-'blems of poverty which he puts on, ſtill permits 'ſome mark of his wealth to ſtrike the eye. Thus, 'while his apparel is not worth a groat, his finger 'wears a ring of value, or his pocket a gold watch. 'In a word, he ſeems rather to affect poverty to in-'ſult than impoſe on you. Now the poor man, on 'the contrary, is very ſincere in his deſire of paſſing 'for rich; but the eagerneſs of this deſire hurries him 'to over-act his part, and he betrays himſelf as one 'who is drunk by his over-acted ſobriety. Thus, 'inſtead of being attended by one ſervant well-

'mounted,

'mounted, he will have two; and not being able to 'purchaſe or maintain a ſecond horſe of value, one of 'his ſervants at leaſt is mounted on a hired raſcallion. 'He is not contented to go plain and neat in his 'clothes; he therefore claps on ſome taudry orna- 'ment, and what he adds to the fineneſs of his veſt- 'ment, he detracts from the fineneſs of his linen. 'Without deſcending into more minute particulars, 'I believe I may aſſert it as an axiom of indubitable 'truth, that whoever ſhews you he is either in him- 'ſelf, or his equipage, as gaudy as he can, convinces 'you he is more ſo than he can afford. Now when- 'ever a man's expence exceeds his income, he is in- 'different in the degree; we had therefore nothing 'more to do with ſuch, than to flatter them with their 'wealth and ſplendor, and were always certain of 'ſucceſs.

'THERE is, indeed, one kind of rich man, who is 'commonly more liberal, namely, where riches ſur- 'prize him as it were, in the midſt of poverty and 'diſtreſs; the conſequence of which is, I own, ſome- 'times exceſſive avarice, but oftener extreme prodi- 'gality. I remember one of theſe, who having re- 'ceived a pretty large ſum of money, gave me, when 'I begged an obolus, a whole talent; on which his 'friend having reproved him, he anſwered with an 'oath, why not? Have I not fifty left?

'THE life of a beggar, if men eſtimated things by 'their real eſſence, and not by their outward falſe 'appearance, would be, perhaps, a more deſirable 'ſituation than any of thoſe, which ambition per- 'ſuades us with ſuch difficulty, danger, and often vil- 'lainy, to aſpire to. The wants of a beggar are 'commonly as chimerical as the abundance of a no- 'bleman; for beſides vanity, which a judicious beg- 'gar will always apply to with wonderful efficacy, 'there are in reality very few natures ſo hardened, 'as not to compaſſionate poverty and diſtreſs, when 'the predominancy of ſome other paſſion doth not 'prevent them.

'THERE is one happineſs which attends money got 'with eaſe, namely, that it is never hoarded; otherwiſe

as we have frequent opportunities of growing rich, that canker care might prey upon our quiet, as it doth on others: but our money ſtock we ſpend as faſt as we acquire it; uſually at leaſt, for I ſpeak not without exception; thus it gives us mirth only, and no trouble. Indeed, the luxury of our lives might introduce diſeaſes, did not our daily exerciſe prevent them. This gives us an appetite and reliſh for our dainties, and at the ſame time an antidote againſt the evil effects which ſloth, united with luxury, induces on the habit of a human body. Our women we enjoy with extaſies, at leaſt equal to what the greateſt men feel in their embraces. I can, I am aſſured, ſay of myſelf, that no mortal could reap more perfect happineſs from the tender paſſion, than my fortune had decreed me. I married a charming young woman for love, ſhe was the daughter of a neighbouring beggar, who with an improvidence too often ſeen, ſpent a very large income which he procured by his profeſſion, ſo that he was able to give her no fortune down; however, at his death, he left her a very well-accuſtomed begging-hut, ſituated on the ſide of a ſteep hill, where travellers could not immediately eſcape from us, and a garden adjoining, being the twenty-eighth part of an acre, well planted. She made me the beſt of wives, bore me nineteen children, and never failed, unleſs on her lying-inn, which generally laſted three days, to get my ſupper ready, againſt my return home in an evening; this being my favourite meal, and at which I, as well as my whole family, greatly enjoyed ourſelves; the principal ſubject of our diſcourſe, being generally the boons we had that day obtained, on which occaſions laughing at the folly of the donors, made no inconſiderable part of the entertainment: for whatever might be their motive for giving, we conſtantly imputed our ſucceſs to our having flattered their vanity, or over-reached their underſtanding.

'But, perhaps, I have dwelt too long on this character; I ſhall conclude therefore with telling you, that after a life of 102 years continuance, during

'ring all which I had never known any ſickneſs or in-
'firmity, but that which old age neceſſarily induced,
'I at laſt, without the leaſt pain, went out like the
'ſnuff of a candle.

'MINOS having heard my hiſtory, bid me com-
'pute, if I could, how many lies I had told in my
'life. As we are here, by a certain fated neceſſity,
'obliged to confine ourſelves to truth, I anſwered, I
'believed about 50,000,000. He then replied with
'a frown, can ſuch a wretch conceive any hopes of
'entering Elyſium? I immediately turned about, and
'upon the whole, was rejoiced at his not calling me
'back.'

CHAP. XX.

Julian *performs the part of a ſtateſman.*

'IT was now my fortune to be born of a German
'princeſs; but a man-midwife pulling my head
'off, in delivering my mother, put a ſpeedy end to
'my princely life.

'SPIRITS, who end their lives before they are at
'the age of five years, are immediately ordered into
'other bodies; and it was now my fortune to perform
'ſeveral infancies, before I could again entitle myſelf
'to an examination of Minos.

'AT length I was deſtined once more to play a con-
'ſiderable part on the ſtage. I was born in England,
'in the reign of Etheldred II. My father's name was
'Ulnoth. He was earl or thane of Suſſex: I was
'afterwards known by the name of earl Goodwin,
'and began to make a conſiderable figure in the
'world in the time of Harold Harefoot, whom I
'procured to be made king of Weſſex, or the Weſt-
'Saxons, in prejudice of Hardicanute, whoſe mother
'Emma endeavoured afterwards to ſet another of her
'ſons on the throne: but I circumvented her, and
'communicating her deſign to the king, at the ſame
'time acquainted him with a project, which I had
'formed for the murder of theſe two young princes.
'Emma had ſent for theſe her ſons from Normandy,
'with the king's leave, whom ſhe had deceived by

'her religious behaviour, and pretended neglect of 'all worldly affairs; but I prevailed with Harold to 'invite theſe princes to his court, and put them to 'death. The prudent mother ſent only Alfred, re-'taining Edward to herſelf, as ſhe ſuſpected my ill 'deſigns, and thought I ſhould not venture to execute 'them on one of her ſons, while ſhe ſecured the 'other: but ſhe was deceived, for I had no ſooner 'Alfred in my poſſeſſion, than I cauſed him to be 'conducted to Ely, where I ordered his eyes to be 'put out, and afterwards to be confined in a monaſ-'tery.

'THIS was one of thoſe cruel expedients, which 'great men ſatisfy themſelves well in executing, by 'concluding them to be neceſſary to the ſervice of 'their prince, who is the ſupport of their ambition.

'EDWARD, the other ſon of Emma, eſcaped again 'to Normandy; whence, after the death of Harold 'and Hardicanute, he made no ſcruple of applying 'to my protection and favour, though he had before 'proſecuted me with all the vengeance he was able, 'for the murder of his brother: but in all great af-'fairs, private relation muſt yield to public intereſt. 'Having therefore concluded very advantageous 'terms for myſelf with him, I made no ſcruple of pa-'tronizing his cauſe, and ſoon placed him on the 'throne. Nor did I conceive the leaſt apprehenſion 'from his reſentment, as I knew my power was too 'great for him to encounter.

'AMONG other ſtipulated conditions, one was to 'marry my daughter Editha. This Edward con-'ſented to with great reluctance, and I had after-'wards no reaſon to be pleaſed with it: for it raiſed 'her, who had been my favourite child, to ſuch an 'opinion of greatneſs, that inſtead of paying me the 'uſual reſpect, ſhe frequently threw in my teeth (as 'often at leaſt as I gave her any admonition), that ſhe 'was now a queen, and that the character and title of 'father merged in that of ſubject. This behaviour, 'however, did not cure me of my affection towards 'her, nor leſſen the uneaſineſs, which I afterwards 'bore on Edward's diſmiſſing her from his bed.

'ONE

'ONE thing, which principally induced me to labour the promotion of Edward, was the ſimplicity 'or weakneſs of that prince, under whom I promiſed 'myſelf abſolute dominion, under another name. 'Nor did this opinion deceive me; for during his 'whole reign, my adminiſtration was in the higheſt 'degree deſpotic. I had every thing of royalty, but 'the outward enſigns; no man ever applying for a 'place, or any kind of preferment, but to me only. 'A circumſtance, which as it greatly enriched my 'coffers, ſo it no leſs pampered my ambition, and 'ſatisfied my vanity with a numerous attendance; 'and I had the pleaſure of ſeeing thoſe, who only 'bowed to the king, proſtrating themſelves before 'me.

'EDWARD the Confeſſor, or St. Edward, as ſome 'have called him in deriſion, I ſuppoſe, being a very 'ſilly fellow, had all the faults incident, and almoſt 'inſeparable to fools. He married my daughter 'Editha, from his fear of diſobliging me; and afterwards, out of hatred to me, refuſed even to conſummate his marriage, though ſhe was one of the moſt 'beautiful women of her age. He was likewiſe guilty 'of the baſeſt ingratitude to his mother (a vice to 'which fools are chiefly, if not only liable) and in return for her endeavours to procure him a throne in 'his youth, confined her in a loathſome priſon, in 'her old age. This, it is true, he did by my advice: 'but as to her walking over nine plowſhares red-hot, 'and giving nine manors, when ſhe had not one in 'her poſſeſſion, there is not a ſyllable of veracity 'in it.

'THE firſt great perplexity I fell into, was on the 'account of my ſon Swane, who had deflowered the 'abbeſs of Leon, ſince called Leominſter in Here'fordſhire. After this fact, he retired into Denmark, 'whence he ſent to me, to obtain his pardon. The 'king at firſt refuſed it; being moved thereto, as I 'afterwards found, by ſome churchmen, particularly 'by one of his chaplains, whom I had prevented 'from obtaining a biſhoprick. Upon this, my ſon 'Swane invaded the coaſts with ſeveral ſhips, and

'com-

'mitted many outrageous cruelties; which, indeed, 'did his buſineſs, as they ſerved me to apply to the 'fear of this king, which I had long ſince diſcovered 'to be his predominant paſſion. And at laſt, he who 'had refuſed pardon to his firſt offence, ſubmitted to 'give it him, after he had committed many other 'more monſtrous crimes; by which his pardon loſt all 'grace to the offended, and received double cenſure 'from all others.

'THE king was greatly inclined to the Normans, 'had created a Norman archbiſhop of Canterbury, 'and had heaped extraordinary favours on him. I 'had no other objection to this man, than that he 'roſe without my aſſiſtance; a cauſe of diſlike, which 'in the reign of great and powerful favourites, hath 'often proved fatal to the perſons who hath given it, 'as the perſons thus raiſed, inſpire us conſtantly 'with jealouſies and apprehenſions. For when we 'promote any one ourſelves, we take effectual care 'to preſerve ſuch an aſcendant over him, that we 'can at any time reduce him to his former degree, 'ſhould he dare to act in oppoſition to our wills: 'for which reaſon we never ſuffer any to come near 'the prince, but ſuch as we are aſſured it is impoſſi- 'ble ſhould be capable of engaging or improving his 'affection; no prime-miniſter, as I apprehend, eſteem- 'ing himſelf to be ſafe, while any other ſhares the 'ear of his prince, of whom we are as jealous as the 'fondeſt huſband can be of his wife. Whoever, 'therefore, can approach him by any other channel 'than that of ourſelves, is in our opinion a declared 'enemy, and one whom the firſt principles of policy 'oblige us to demoliſh with the utmoſt expedition. 'For the affection of kings is as precarious as that of 'women, and the only way to ſecure either to our- 'ſelves, is to keep all others from them.

'BUT the archbiſhop did not let matters reſt on ſuſ- 'picion. He ſoon gave open proofs of his intereſt 'with the Confeſſor, in procuring an office of ſome 'importance for one Rollo, a Norman of mean ex- 'traction, and very deſpicable parts. When I repre- 'ſented to the king the indecency of conferring ſuch

'an honour on ſuch a fellow, he anſwered me, that 'he was the archbiſhop's relation. Then, Sir, re-'plied I, he is related to your enemy. Nothing more 'paſt at that time: but I ſoon perceived by the arch-'biſhop's behaviour, that the king had acquainted 'him with our private diſcourſe, a ſufficient aſſurance 'of his confidence in him, and neglect of me.

'THE favour of princes, when once loſt, is reco-'verable only by the gaining a ſituation which may 'make you terrible to them. As I had no doubt of 'having loſt all credit with this king, which indeed 'had been originally founded and conſtantly ſupport-'ed by his fear, ſo I took the method of terror to 'regain it.

'THE earl of Boulogne coming over to viſit the 'king, gave me an opportunity of breaking out into 'open oppoſition: for as the earl was on his return 'to France, one of his ſervants, who was ſent before 'to procure lodgings at Dover, and inſiſted on hav-'ing them in the houſe of a private man in ſpite of 'the owner's teeth, was, in a fray, which enſued, 'killed on the ſpot; and the earl himſelf arriving 'there ſoon after, very narrowly eſcaped with his life. 'The earl, enraged at this affront, returned to the 'king at Glouceſter, with loud complaints and de-'mands of ſatisfaction. Edward conſented to his 'demands, and ordered me to chaſtiſe the rioters, who 'were under my government as earl of Kent: but, in-'ſtead of obeying theſe orders, I anſwered with ſome 'warmth, that the Engliſh were not uſed to puniſh 'people unheard; nor ought their rights and privi-'leges to be violated: that the accuſed ſhould be firſt 'ſummoned; if guilty, ſhould make ſatifaction both 'with body and eſtate; but if innocent, ſhould be 'diſcharged. Adding, with great ferocity, that, as 'earl of Kent, it was my duty to protect thoſe under 'my government againſt the inſults of foreigners.

'THIS accident was extremely lucky, as it gave 'my quarrel with the king a popular colour; and ſo 'ingratiated me with the people, that when I ſet up 'my ſtandard, which I ſoon after did, they readily 'and chearfully liſted under my banners, and em-

'braced my cauſe, which I perſuaded them was their 'own: for that it was to protect them againſt foreign-'ers that I had drawn my ſword. The word Foreign-'ers with an Engliſhman hath a kind of magical ef-'fect, they having the utmoſt hatred and averſion to 'them, ariſing from the cruelties they ſuffered from 'the Danes, and ſome other foreign nations. No 'wonder therefore they eſpouſed my cauſe, in a quar-'rel which had ſuch a beginning.

'But what may be ſomewhat more remarkable is, 'that when I afterwards returned to England from 'baniſhment, and was at the head of an army of the 'Flemiſh, who were preparing to plunder the city of 'London, I ſtill perſiſted that I was come to defend 'the Engliſh from the danger of foreigners, and gained 'their credit. Indeed, there is no lye ſo groſs but it 'may be impoſed on the people by thoſe whom they 'eſteem their patrons and defenders.

'The king ſaved his city by being reconciled to 'me, and taking again my daughter, whom he had 'put away from him; and thus having frightened 'the king into what conceſſions I thought proper, I 'diſmiſſed my army and fleet, with which I intended, 'could I not have ſucceeded otherwiſe, to have 'ſacked the city of London, and ravaged the whole 'country.

'I was no ſooner re-eſtabliſhed in the king's fa-'vour, or, what was as well for me, the appearance 'of it, than I fell violently on the archbiſhop. He 'had of himſelf retired to his monaſtery in Norman-'dy; but that did not content me, I had him for-'mally baniſhed, the ſee declared vacant, and then 'filled up by another.

'I enjoyed my grandeur a very ſhort time, after 'my reſtoration to it: for the king hating and fearing 'me to a very great degree, and finding no means of 'openly deſtroying me, at laſt effected his purpoſe 'by poiſon, and then ſpread abroad a ridiculous ſtory 'of my wiſhing the next morſel might choak me, 'if I had had any hand in the death of Alfred; and, 'accordingly, that the next morſel, by a divine

'judgment, ſtuck in my throat, and performed that 'office.

'THIS of a ſtateſman was one of my worſt ſtages 'in the other world. It is a poſt ſubjected daily to 'the greateſt danger and inquietude, and attended 'with little pleaſure, and leſs eaſe. In a word, it is 'a pill, which, was it not gilded over by ambition, 'would appear nauſeous and deteſtable in the eye of 'every one; and perhaps that is one reaſon why Mi-'nos ſo greatly compaſſionates the caſe of thoſe who 'ſwallow it: for that juſt judge told me, he always 'acquitted a prime-miniſter, who could produce one 'ſingle good action in his whole life, let him have 'committed ever ſo many crimes. Indeed, I under-'ſtood him a little too largely, and was ſtepping to-'wards the gate: but he pulled me by the ſleeve, and 'telling me, no prime-miniſter ever entered there, bid 'me go back again; ſaying, he thought I had ſuffi-'cient reaſon to rejoice in eſcaping the bottomleſs 'pit, which half my crimes committed in any other 'capacity would have entitled me to.

CHAP. XXI.

Julian's *adventures in the poſt of a ſoldier.*

'I WAS born at Caen in Normandy. My mo-'ther's name was Matilda; as for my father, I 'am not ſo certain; for the good woman on her 'death-bed aſſured me, ſhe herſelf could bring her 'gueſs to no greater certainty, than to five of duke 'William's captains. When I was no more than thir-'teen (being indeed a ſurpriſing ſtout boy of my age) 'I enliſted into the army of duke William, after-'wards known by the name of William the Con-'queror; landed with him at Pevenſey, or Pemſey 'in Suſſex, and was preſent at the famous battle of 'Haſtings.

'AT the firſt onſet, it was impoſſible to deſcribe 'my conſternation, which was heightened by the fall 'of two ſoldiers who ſtood by me; but this ſoon 'abated, and by degrees, as my blood grew warm, I 'thought no more of my own ſafety, but fell on

'the

'the enemy with great fury, and did a good deal of 'execution; till unhappily I received a wound in my 'thigh, which rendered me unable to ſtand any lon-'ger, ſo that I now lay among the dead, and was 'conſtantly expoſed to the danger of being trampled 'to death; as well by my fellow-ſoldiers as by the 'enemy. However, I had the fortune to eſcape it, 'and continued the remaining part of the day, and 'the night following, on the ground.

'THE next morning, the duke ſending out par-'ties to bring off the wounded, I was found almoſt 'expiring with loſs of blood; notwithſtanding which, 'as immediate care was taken to dreſs my wounds, 'youth, and a robuſt conſtitution ſtood my friends, 'and I recovered, after a long and tedious indiſpoſi-'tion, and was again able to uſe my limbs and do 'my duty.

'As ſoon as Dover was taken, I was conveyed 'thither with all the reſt of the ſick and wounded. 'Here I recovered of my wound; but fell afterwards 'into a violent flux, which, when it departed, left 'me ſo weak, that it was long before I could regain 'my ſtrength. And what moſt afflicted me was, that, 'during my whole illneſs, when I languiſhed under 'want as well as ſickneſs, I had daily the mortifica-'tion to ſee and hear the riots and exceſs of my fel-'low-ſoldiers who had happily eſcaped ſafe from the 'battle.

'I WAS no ſooner well, than I was ordered into 'garriſon at Dover caſtle. The officers here fared 'very indifferently; but the private men much worſe. 'We had great ſcarcity of proviſions, and what was 'yet more intolerable, were ſo cloſely confined for 'want of room (four of us being obliged to lie on 'the ſame bundle of ſtraw) that many died, and moſt 'ſickened.

'HERE I had remained about four months, when 'one night we were alarmed with the arrival of the 'earl of Boulogne, who had come over privily from 'France, and endeavoured to ſurprize the caſtle. 'The deſign proved ineffectual: for the garriſon 'making a briſk ſally, moſt of his men were turn-'bled

'bled down the precipice, and he returned with a 'very few back to France. In this action however, I 'had the misfortune to come off with a broken arm; 'it was so shattered, that besides a great deal of pain 'and misery, which I endured in my cure, I was dis-'abled for upwards of three months.

'Soon after my recovery, I had contracted an 'amour with a young woman, whose parents lived 'near the garrison, and were in much better circum-'stances than I had reason to expect should give their 'consent to the match. However, as she was ex-'tremely fond of me, (as I was indeed distractedly 'enamoured of her) they were prevailed on to com-'ply with her desires, and the day was fixed for our 'marriage.

'On the evening preceding, while I was exulting 'with the eager expectation of the happiness I was 'the next day to enjoy, I received orders to march 'early in the morning towards Windsor, where a 'large army was to be formed, at the head of which 'the king intended to march into the West. Any 'person who had ever been in love, may easily ima-'gine what I felt in my mind, on receiving those or-'ders; and what still heightened my torments was, 'that the commanding officer would not permit any 'one to go out of the garrison that evening; so that 'I had not even an opportunity of taking leave of 'my beloved.

'The morning came which was to have put me in 'the possession of my wishes; but alas! the scene 'was now changed, and all the hopes which I had 'raised, were now so many ghosts to haunt, and fu-'ries to torment me.

'It was now the midst of winter, and very severe 'weather for the season; when we were obliged to 'make very long and fatiguing marches, in which we 'suffered all the inconveniencies of cold and hunger. 'The night in which I expected to riot in the arms 'of my beloved mistress, I was obliged to take up 'with a lodginig on the ground, exposed to the in-'clemencies of a rigid frost; nor could I obtain the 'least comfort of sleep, which shunned me as its ene-

'my.

'my. In ſhort, the horrors of that night are not to 'be deſcribed, or perhaps imagined. They made 'ſuch an impreſſion on my ſoul, that I was forced to 'be dipped three times in the river Lethe, to prevent 'my remembering it in the characters which I after-'wards performed in the fleſh.'

HERE I interrupted Julian, for the firſt time, and told him, no ſuch dipping had happened to me in my voyage from one world to the other: but he ſatisfied me by ſaying, 'That this only happened to thoſe 'ſpirits which returned into the fleſh, in order to pre-'vent that reminiſcence which Plato mentions, and 'which would otherwiſe cauſe great confuſion in the 'other world.'

HE then proceeded as follows: 'We continued a 'very laborious march to Exeter, which we were or-'dered to beſiege. The town ſoon ſurrendered, and 'his majeſty built a caſtle there, which he garriſoned 'with his Normans, and unhappily I had the misfor-'tune to be one of the number.

'HERE we were confined cloſer than I had been 'at Dover; for as the citizens were extremely diſaf-'fected, we were never ſuffered to go without the 'walls of the caſtle: nor indeed could we, unleſs in 'large bodies, without the utmoſt danger. We were 'likewiſe kept to continual duty, nor could any ſoli-'citations prevail with the commanding officer to give 'me a month's abſence to viſit my love, from whom 'I had no opportunity of hearing in all my long ab-'ſence.

'HOWEVER, in the ſpring, the people being more 'quiet, and another officer of a gentler temper, ſuc-'ceeding to the principal command, I obtained leave 'to go to Dover: but alas! what comfort did my 'long journey bring me? I found the parents of my 'darling in the utmoſt miſery at her loſs: for ſhe had 'died about a week before my arrival of a conſump-'tion, which they imputed to her pining at my ſud-'den departure.

'I NOW fell into the moſt violent and almoſt rav-'ing fit of deſpair. I curſed myſelf, the king, and 'the whole world, which no longer ſeemed to have any

'delight for me. I threw myſelf on the grave of my 'deceaſed love, and lay there without any kind of 'ſuſtenance for two whole days. At laſt hunger, 'together with the perſuaſions of ſome people who 'took pity on me, prevailed with me to quit that ſi-'tuation, and refreſh myſelf with food. They then 'perſuaded me to return to my poſt, and abandon a 'place where almoſt every object I ſaw, recalled ideas 'to my mind, which, as they ſaid, I ſhould endeavour 'with my utmoſt force to expel from it. This ad-'vice at length ſucceeded; the rather, as the father 'and mother of my beloved refuſed to ſee me, look-'ing on me as the innocent but certain cauſe of the 'death of their only child.

'THE loſs of one we tenderly love, as it is one of 'the moſt bitter and biting evils which attends hu-'man life, ſo it wants the lenitive which palliates and 'ſoftens every other calamity; I mean that great re-'liever, hope. No man can be ſo totally undone, 'but that he may ſtill cheriſh expectation: but this 'deprives us of all ſuch comfort, nor can any thing 'but time alone leſſen it. This however, in moſt 'minds, is ſure to work a ſlow but effectual remedy; 'ſo did it in mine: for within a twelvemonth, I was 'entirely reconciled to my fortune, and ſoon after 'abſolutely forgot the object of a paſſion from which 'I had promiſed myſelf ſuch extreme happineſs, and 'in the diſappointment of which I had experienced 'ſuch inconceivable miſery.

'AT the expiration of the month, I returned to 'my garriſon at Exeter; where I was no ſooner ar-'rived, than I was ordered to march into the north, 'to oppoſe a force there levied by the earls of Cheſter 'and Northumberland. We came to York, where 'his majeſty pardoned the heads of the rebels, and 'very ſeverely puniſhed ſome who were leſs guilty. 'It was particularly my lot to be ordered to ſeize a 'poor man, who had never been out of his houſe, 'and convey him to priſon. I deteſted this barbarity, 'yet was obliged to execute it; nay, though no re-'ward would have bribed me in a private capacity to 'have acted ſuch a part, yet ſo much ſanctity is there

'in

'in the commands of a monarch, or general, to a ſoldier, that I performed it without reluctance, nor 'had the tears of his wife and family any prevalence 'with me.

'But this, which was a very ſmall piece of miſ-'chief in compariſon with many of my barbarities 'afterwards, was however the only one which ever 'gave me any uneaſineſs: for when the king led us 'afterward into Northumberland, to revenge thoſe 'people's having joined with Oſborne the Dane in 'his invaſion, and orders were given us to commit 'what ravages we could, I was forward in fulfilling 'them, and among ſome leſſer cruelties (I remember 'it yet with ſorrow) I raviſhed a woman, murdered a 'little infant playing in her lap, and then burnt her 'houſe. In ſhort, for I have no pleaſure in this part 'of my relation, I had my ſhare in all the cruelties 'exerciſed on thoſe poor wretches; which were ſo 'grievous, that for ſixty miles together, between 'York and Durham, not a ſingle houſe, church, or 'any other public or private edifice was left ſtanding.

'We had pretty well devoured the country, when 'we were ordered to march to the Iſle of Ely, to op-'poſe Hereward, a bold and ſtout ſoldier, who had 'under him a very large body of rebels, who had 'the impudence to riſe againſt their king and con-'queror (I talk now in the ſame ſtyle I did then) in 'defence of their liberties, as they called them. 'Theſe were ſoon ſubdued: but as I happened (more 'to my glory than my comfort) to be poſted in that 'part through which Hereward cut his way, I re-'ceived a dreadful cut on the forehead, a ſecond on 'the ſhoulder, and was run through the body with a 'pike.

'I languished a long time with theſe wounds, 'which made me incapable of attending the king in-'to Scotland. However, I was able to go over with 'him afterwards into Normandy, in his expedition 'againſt Philip, who had taken the opportunity of 'the troubles in England, to invade that province. 'Thoſe few Normans who had ſurvived their wounds, 'and had remained in the Iſle of Ely, were all of our

'nation who went, the reſt of his army being all 'compoſed of Engliſh. In a ſkirmiſh near the town 'of Mans, my leg was broke, and ſo ſhattered, that 'it was forced to be cut off.

'I was now diſabled from ſerving longer in the 'army, and accordingly being diſcharged from the 'ſervice, I retired to the place of my nativity, where 'in extreme poverty, and frequent bad health from 'the many wounds I had received, I dragged on a 'miſerable life to the age of ſixty-three; my only 'pleaſure being to recount the feats of my youth, in 'which narratives I generally exceeded the truth.

'It would be tedious and unpleaſant to recount 'to you the ſeveral miſeries I ſuffered after my re-'turn to Caen; let it ſuffice, they were ſo terrible, 'that they induced Minos to compaſſionate me, and, 'notwithſtanding the barbarities I had been guilty of 'in Nothumberland, to ſuffer me to go once more 'back to earth.'

CHAP. XXII.

What happened to Julian *in the perſon of a taylor.*

'FORTUNE now ſtationed me in a character, 'which the ingratitude of mankind hath put 'them on ridiculing, though they owe it not only a 'relief from the inclemencies of cold, to which they 'would otherwiſe be expoſed, but likewiſe a conſi-'derable ſatisfaction of their vanity. The character 'I mean, was that of a taylor; which, if we conſi-'der it with due attention, muſt be confeſſed to have 'in it great dignity and importance. For in reality, 'who conſtitutes the different degrees between men, 'but the taylor? The prince indeed gives the title, 'but it is the taylor who makes the man. To his 'labours are owing the reſpect of crouds, and the awe 'which great men inſpire into their beholders, though 'theſe are too often unjuſtly attributed to other mo-'tives. Laſtly, the admiration of the fair is moſt 'commonly to be placed to his account.

'I was juſt ſet up in my trade, when I made three 'ſuits of fine clothes for king Stephen's coronation.

'I quef-

'I queſtion whether the perſon who wears the rich 'coat, hath ſo much pleaſure and vanity in being 'admired in it, as we taylors have from that admira- 'tion; and perhaps a philoſopher would ſay, he is 'not ſo well intitled to it. I buſtled on the day of 'the ceremony through the croud, and it was with 'incredible delight, I heard ſeveral ſay, as my clothes 'walked by, bleſs me, was ever any thing ſo fine as 'the earl of Devonſhire! Sure he and Sir Hugh Bi- 'got are the two beſt-dreſt men I ever ſaw. Now 'both theſe ſuits were of my making.

'THERE would indeed be infinite pleaſure in work- 'ing for the courtiers, as they are generally genteel 'men, and ſhew one's clothes to the beſt advantage, 'was it not for one ſmall diſcouragement; this is, 'that they never pay. I ſolemnly proteſt, tho' I loſt 'almoſt as much by the court in my life as I got by 'the city, I never carried a ſuit into the latter with 'half the ſatisfaction which I have done to the for- 'mer; though from that I was certain of ready mo- 'ney, and from this almoſt as certain of no money 'at all.

'COURTIERS may, however, be divided into two 'ſorts very eſſentially different from each other; 'into thoſe who never intend to pay for their clothes; 'and thoſe who do intend to pay for them, but ne- 'ver happen to be able. Of the latter ſort, are many 'of thoſe young gentlemen whom we equip out for 'the army, and who are, unhappily for us, cut off 'before they arrive at preferment. This is the rea- 'ſon that taylors in time of war are miſtaken for po- 'liticians, by their inquiſitiveneſs into the event of 'battles; one compaign very often proving the ruin 'of half a dozen of us. I am ſure I had frequent 'reaſon to curſe that fatal battle of Cardigan, where 'the Welſh defeated ſome of king Stephen's beſt 'troops, and where many a good ſuit of mine, un- 'paid for, fell to the ground.

'THE gentlemen of this honourable calling have 'fared much better in later ages than when I was of 'it, for now it ſeems the faſhion is, when they ap- 'prehend their cuſtomer is not in the beſt circum-

'ſtances, if they are not paid as ſoon as they carry 'home the ſuit, they charge him in their book as 'much again as it is worth, and then ſend a gentle-'man with a ſmall ſcrip of parchment to demand the 'money. If this be not immediaetly paid, the gen-'tleman takes the beau with him to his houſe, where 'he locks him up till the taylor is contented: but in 'my time, theſe ſcrips of parchment were not in uſe; 'and if the beau diſliked paying for his clothes, as 'very often happened, we had no method of com-'pelling him.

'In ſeveral of the characters which I have related 'to you, I apprehend, I have ſometimes forgot my-'ſelf, and conſidered myſelf as really intereſted, as I 'was when I perſonated them on earth. I have juſt 'now caught myſelf in the fact: for I have com-'plained to you as bitterly of my cuſtomers as I for-'merly uſed to do, when I was the taylor: but in rea-'lity, tho' there were ſome few perſons of very great 'quality, and ſome others, who never paid their 'debts; yet thoſe were but a few, and I had a me-'thod of repairing this loſs. My cuſtomers I divided 'under three heads: thoſe who paid ready money, 'thoſe who paid ſlow, and thoſe who never paid at 'all. The firſt of theſe, I conſidered apart by them-'ſelves, as perſons by whom I got a certain but ſmall 'profit. The two laſt I lumped together, making 'thoſe who paid ſlow, contribute to repair my loſſes 'by thoſe who did not pay at all. Thus upon the 'whole I was a very inconſiderable loſer, and might 'have left a fortune to my family, had I not launch-'ed forth into expences which ſwallowed up all my 'gains. I had a wife and two children. Theſe in-'deed I kept frugally enough; for I half-ſtarved 'them: but I kept a miſtreſs in a finer way, for 'whom I had a country-houſe, pleaſantly ſituated on 'the Thames, elegantly fitted up, and neatly fur-'niſhed. This woman might very properly be called 'my miſtreſs: for ſhe was moſt abſolutely ſo, and 'though her tenure was no higher than by my will, 'ſhe domineered as tyrannically as if my chains had 'been rivetted in the ſtrongeſt manner. To all this I

'ſub-

'ſubmitted, not through any adoration of her beauty, 'which was indeed but indifferent; her charms con-'ſiſted in little wantonneſſes, which ſhe knew admir-'ably well to uſe in hours of dalliance, and which, 'I believe, are of all things the moſt delightful to a 'lover.

'She was ſo profuſely extravagant, that it ſeemed 'as if ſhe had an actual intent to ruin me. This I 'am ſure of, if ſuch had been her real intention, ſhe 'could have taken no properer way to accompliſh it; 'nay, I myſelf might appear to have had the ſame 'view: for beſides this extravagant miſtreſs, and my 'country-houſe, I kept likewiſe a brace of hunters, 'rather for that it was faſhionable ſo to do, than for 'any great delight I took in the ſport, which I very 'little attended; not for want of leiſure, for few no-'blemen had ſo much; all the work I ever did was 'taking meaſure, and that only of my greateſt and 'beſt cuſtomers. I ſcarce ever cut a piece of cloth 'in my life, nor was indeed much more able to faſhi-'on a coat than any gentleman in the kingdom. 'This made a ſkilful ſervant too neceſſary to me. 'He knew I muſt ſubmit to any terms with, or any 'treatment from him. He knew it was eaſier for 'him to find another ſuch a taylor as me, than 'for me to procure ſuch another workman as 'him: for this reaſon, he exerted the moſt notorious 'and cruel tyranny, ſeldom giving me a civil word; 'nor could the utmoſt condeſcenſion on my ſide, tho' 'attended with continual preſents and rewards, and 'raiſing his wages, content or pleaſe him. In a 'word, he was as abſolutely my maſter, as was ever 'an ambitious, induſtrious prime-miniſter over an 'indolent and voluptuous king. All my other jour-'neymen paid more reſpect to him than to me; for 'they conſidered my favour as a neceſſary conſequence 'of obtaining his.

'These were the moſt remarkable occurrences 'while I acted this part. Minos heſitated a few mo-'ments, and then bid me get back again, without 'aſſigning any reaſon.'

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIII.

The life of alderman Julian.

'I NOW revisited England, and was born at London. My father was one of the magistrates 'of that city. He had eleven children, of whom I 'was the eldest. He had great success in trade, and 'grew extremely rich, but the largness of his family 'rendered it impossible for him to leave me a fortune 'sufficient to live well on, independent of business. 'I was accordingly brought up to be a fishmonger; 'in which capacity, I myself afterwards acquired very 'considerable wealth.

'THE same disposition of mind, which in princes 'is called ambition, is in subjects named faction. To 'this temper I was greatly addicted from my youth. 'I was, while a boy, a great partizan of prince John 'against his brother Richard, during the latter's ab-'sence in the holy war, and in his captivity. I was 'no more than one and twenty when I first began to 'make political speeches in publick, and to endea-'vour to foment disquietude and discontent in the 'city. As I was pretty well qualified for this office, 'by a great fluency of words, an harmonious accent, 'a graceful delivery, and above all, an invincible as-'surance, I had soon acquired some reputation among 'the younger citizens, and some of the weaker and 'more inconsiderate of a riper age. This co-operating 'with my own natural vanity, made me extravagantly 'proud and supercilious. I soon began to esteem 'myself a man of some consequence, and to over-'look persons every way my superiors.

'THE famous Robin Hood, and his companion 'Little John, at this time made a considerable figure 'in Yorkshire. I took upon me to write a letter to 'the former in the name of the city, inviting him 'to come to London, where I assured him of very 'good reception, signifying to him my own great 'weight and consequence, and how much I had dis-'posed the citizens in his favour. Whether he re-

'ceived

'ceived this letter or no, I am not certain: but he 'never gave me any anſwer to it.

'A LITTLE afterwards, one William Fitz-Oſborn, 'or as he was nicknamed, William Long-Beard, 'began to make a figure in the city. He was a bold 'and an impudent fellow, and had raiſed himſelf to 'great popularity with the rabble, by pretending to 'eſpouſe their cauſe againſt the rich. I took this 'man's part, and made a public oration in his favour, 'ſetting him forth as a patriot, and one who had 'embarked in the cauſe of liberty: for which ſervice 'he did not receive me with the acknowledgments I 'expected. However, as I thought I ſhould eaſily 'gain the aſcendant over this fellow, I continued 'ſtill firm on his ſide, till the archbiſhop of Canter-'bury, with an armed force, put an end to his pro-'greſs; for he was ſeized in Bow-church, where he 'had taken refuge, and with nine of his accomplices 'hanged in chains.

'I ESCAPED narrowly myſelf: for I was ſeized in 'the ſame church with the reſt, and as I had been 'very conſiderably engaged in the enterprize, the 'archbiſhop was inclined to make me an example: 'but my father's merit, who had advanced a conſi-'derable ſum to queen Eleanor, towards the king's 'ranſom, preſerved me.

'THE conſternation my danger had occaſioned, 'kept me ſome time quiet, and I applied myſelf very 'aſſiduouſly to my trade. I invented all manner of 'methods to enhance the price of fiſh, and made uſe 'of my utmoſt endeavours to engroſs as much of the 'buſineſs as poſſible in my own hands. By theſe 'means I acquired a ſubſtance, which raiſed me to 'ſome little conſequence in the city; but far from 'elevating me to that degree, which I had formerly 'flattered myſelf with poſſeſſing, at a time when I 'was totally inſignificant: for in a trading ſociety, 'money muſt at leaſt lay the foundation of all power 'and intereſt.

'BUT as it hath been remarked, that the ſame am-'bition which ſent Alexander into Aſia, brings the 'wreſtler on the green; and as this ſame ambition is

'as

'as incapable as quickſilver of lying ſtill; ſo I, who 'was poſſeſſed, perhaps, of a ſhare equal to what 'hath fired the blood of any of the heroes of anti- 'quity, was no leſs reſtleſs, and diſcontented with 'eaſe and quiet. My firſt endeavours were to make myſelf head of my company, which Richard I. had 'juſt publiſhed, and ſoon afterwards I procured my- 'ſelf to be choſen alderman.

'OPPOSITION is the only ſtate, which can give a 'ſubject an opportunity of exerting the diſpoſition I 'was poſſeſſed of. Accordingly king John was no 'ſooner ſeated on his throne, than I began to oppoſe 'his meaſures, whether right or wrong. It is true, 'that monarch had faults enow. He was ſo aban- 'doned to luſt and luxury, that he addicted himſelf 'to the moſt extravagant exceſſes in both, while he 'indolently ſuffered the king of France to rob him 'of almoſt all his foreign dominions: my oppoſition 'therefore was juſtifiable enough, and if my motive 'from within had been as good as the occaſion from 'without, I ſhould have had little to excuſe: but in 'truth, I ſought nothing but my own preferment, 'by making myſelf formidable to the king, and then 'ſelling to him the intereſt of that party, by whoſe 'means I had become ſo. Indeed, had the public 'good been my care, however zealouſly I might have 'oppoſed the beginning of his reign, I ſhould have 'not ſcrupled to lend him my utmoſt aſſiſtance in the 'ſtruggle between him and pope Innocent the third, 'in which he was ſo manifeſtly in the right; nor have 'ſuffered the inſolence of that pope, and the power 'of the king of France, to have compelled him in 'the iſſue baſely to reſign his crown into the hands 'of the former, and receive it again as a vaſſal; by 'means of which acknowledgment, the pope afterwards 'claimed this kingdom as a tributary fief to be held 'of the papal chair. A claim which occaſioned great 'uneaſineſs to many ſubſequent princes, and brought 'numberleſs calamities on the nation.

'As the king had among other conceſſions ſtipu- 'lated to pay an immediate ſum of money to Pan- 'dulph, which he had great difficulty to raiſe, it was

'abſo-

'absolutely neceſſary for him to apply to the city, 'where my intereſt and popularity were ſo high, 'that he had no hopes without my aſſiſtance. As I 'knew this, I took care to ſell myſelf and country as 'high as poſſible. The terms I demanded, therefore, 'were a place, a penſion, and a knighthood. All 'thoſe were immediately conſented to. I was forth-'with knighted, and promiſed the other two.

'I NOW mounted the huſtings, and without any 'regard to decency or modeſty, made as empha-'tical a ſpeech in favour of the king, as before I 'had done againſt him. In this ſpeech I juſtified all 'thoſe meaſures which I had before condemned, and 'pleaded as earneſtly with my fellow-citizens, to open 'their purſes, as I had formerly done to prevail with 'them to keep them ſhut. But, alas! my rhetoric had 'not the effect I propoſed. The conſequence of my 'arguments was only contempt to myſelf. The peo-'ple at firſt ſtared on one another, and afterwards 'began unanimouſly to expreſs their diſlike. An 'impudent fellow among them reflecting on my trade, 'cried out, Stinking Fiſh! which was immediately 'reiterated through the whole croud. I was then 'forced to ſlink away home, but I was not able to 'accompliſh my retreat without being attended by 'the mob, who huzza'd me along the ſtreet with the 'repeated cries of Stinking Fiſh!

'I NOW proceeded to court, to inform his majeſty 'of my faithful ſervice, and how much I had ſuffered 'in his cauſe. I found by my firſt reception, he had 'already heard of my ſucceſs. Inſtead of thanking 'me for my ſpeech, he ſaid, the city ſhould repent 'of their obſtinacy; for that he would ſhew them 'who he was: and ſo ſaying, he immediately turned 'that part to me, to which the toe of man hath ſo 'wonderful an affection, that it is very difficult, 'whenever it preſents itſelf conveniently, to keep 'our toes from the moſt violent and ardent ſalutation 'of it.

'I WAS a little nettled at this behaviour, and with 'ſome earneſtneſs claimed the king's fulfilling his 'promiſe: but he retired without anſwering me.

'I then

'I then applied to ſome of the courtiers, who had 'lately profeſſed great friendſhip to me, had eat at 'my houſe, and invited me to theirs: but not one 'would return me any anſwer, all running away from 'me, as if I had been ſeized with ſome contagious 'diſtemper. I now found by experience, that as none 'can be ſo civil, ſo none can be ruder than a cour-'tier.

'A FEW moments after the king's retiring, I was 'left alone in the room, to conſider what I ſhould 'do, or whither I ſhould turn myſelf. My reception 'in the city promiſed itſelf to be equal at leaſt with 'what I found at court. However, there was my 'home, and thither it was neceſſary I ſhould retreat 'for the preſent.

'BUT, indeed, bad as I apprehended my treat-'ment in the city would be, it exceeded my expecta-'tion. I rode home on an ambling pad through 'crouds, who expreſſed every kind of diſregard and 'contempt; pelting me not only with the moſt abu-'ſive language, but with dirt. However, with much 'difficulty, I arrived at laſt at my own houſe, with my 'bones whole, but covered over with filth.

'WHEN I was got within my doors, and had ſhut 'them againſt the mob, who had pretty well vented 'their ſpleen, and ſeemed now contented to retire; 'my wife, whom I found crying over her children, 'and from whom I hoped ſome comfort in my afflic-'tions, fell upon me in a moſt outrageous manner. 'She aſked me, why I would venture on ſuch a ſtep, 'without conſulting her; ſhe ſaid, her advice might 'have been civilly aſked, if I was reſolved not to 'have been guided by it. That whatever opinion I 'might have conceived of her underſtanding, the reſt 'of the world thought better of it. That I had ne-'ver failed, when I had aſked her counſel, nor ever 'ſucceeded without it; with much more of the ſame 'kind, too tedious to mention; concluding, that it 'was a monſtrous behaviour to deſert my party, and 'come over to the court. An abuſe which I took 'worſe than all the reſt, as ſhe had been conſtantly 'for ſeveral years aſſiduous in railing at the oppoſi-

'tion.

'tion, in ſiding with the court-party, and begging 'me to come over to it. And eſpecially after my 'mentioning the offer of knighthood to her, ſince 'which time ſhe had continually interrupted my re-'poſe, with dinning in my ears the folly of refuſing 'honours, and of adhering to a party, and to prin-'ciples, by which I was certain of procuring no ad-'vantage to myſelf and my family.

'I HAD now entirely loſt my trade, ſo that I had 'not the leaſt temptation to ſtay longer in a city 'where I was certain of receiving daily affronts and 'rebukes. I therefore made up my affairs with the 'utmoſt expedition, and ſcraping together all I could, 'retired into the country; where I ſpent the remainder 'of my days, in univerſal contempt, being ſhunned 'by every body, perpetually abuſed by my wife, and 'not much reſpected by my children.

'MINOS told me, though I had been a very vile 'fellow, he thought my ſufferings made ſome atone-'ment, and ſo bid me take the other trial.'

CHAP. XXIV.

Julian *recounts what happened to him while he was a poet.*

'ROME was now the ſeat of my nativity, where 'I was born of a family more remarkable for 'honour than riches. I was intended for the church, 'and had a pretty good education; but my father 'dying while I was young, and leaving me nothing, 'for he had waſted his whole patrimony, I was forced 'to enter myſelf into the order of mendicants.

'WHEN I was at ſchool, I had a knack of rhim-'ing, which I unhappily miſtook for genius, and 'indulged to my coſt: for my verſes drew on me 'only ridicule, and I was in contempt called The 'Poet.

'THIS humour purſued me through my life. My 'firſt compoſition after I left ſchool, was a panegyric 'on pope Alexander IV. who then pretended a pro-'ject of dethroning the king of Sicily. On this ſub-'ject I compoſed a poem of about fifteen thouſand

'lines,

'lines, which with much difficulty I got to be pre-
'ſented to his holineſs, of whom I expected great
'preferment as my reward, but I was cruelly diſap-
'pointed; for when I had waited a year, without
'hearing any of the commendations I had flattered
'myſelf with receiving, and being now able to con-
'tain no longer, I applied to a jeſuit who was my
'relation, and had the pope's ear, to know what his
'holineſs's opinion was of my work; he coldly an-
'ſwered me, that he was at that time buſied in con-
'cerns of too much importance, to attend the reading
'of poems.

'HOWEVER diſſatisfied I might be, and really was,
'with this reception; and however angry I was with
'the pope, for whoſe underſtanding I entertained an
'immoderate contempt, I was not yet diſcouraged
'from a ſecond attempt. Accordingly, I ſoon after
'produced another work, entitled, The Trojan
'Horſe. This was an allegorical work, in which
'the church was introduced into the world, in the
'ſame manner as that machine had been into Troy.
'The prieſts were the ſoldiers in its belly, and the
'heathen ſuperſtition the city to be deſtroyed by them.
'This poem was written in Latin. I remember ſome
'of the lines:

'*Mundanos ſcandit fatalis machina muros,*
'*Farta ſacerdotum turmis: exinde per alvum*
'*Viſi exire omnes, magno cum murmure olentes.*
'*Non aliter quam cum humanis furibundus ab Antris*
'*It ſonus, & Nares ſimul aura invadit hiantes.*
'*Mille ſcatent & mille alii; trepidare timore*
'*Ethnica gens cœpit: falſi per inane volantes*
'*Effugere Dei—Deſertaque templa relinquunt.*
'*Jam magnum crepitavit equus, mox orbis & alti*
'*Ingemuere poli: tunc tu pater, ultimus omnium*
'*Maxime* Alexander, *ventrem maturus equinum*
'*Deſeris, heu proles meliori digne parente.*'

I believe Julian, had I not ſtopt him, would have gone through the whole poem (for, as I obſerved, in moſt of the characters he related, the affections he had enjoyed while he perſonated them on earth, ſtill made

ſome

ſome impreſſion on him); but I begged him to omit the ſequel of the poem, and proceed with his hiſtory. He then recollected himſelf, and ſmiling at the obſervation which by intuition he perceived I had made, continued his narration as follows:

'I CONFESS to you, ſays he, that the delight in 'repeating our own works is ſo predominant in a 'poet, that I find nothing can totally root it out of 'the ſoul. Happy would it be for thoſe perſons, if 'their hearers could be delighted in the ſame man-'ner: but alas! hence that *ingens ſolitudo* complained 'of by Horace: for the vanity of mankind is ſo much 'greater and more general than their avarice, that 'no beggar is ſo ill received by them as he who ſoli-'cits their praiſe.

'THIS I ſufficiently experienced in the character 'of a poet: for my company was ſhunned (I believe 'on this account chiefly) by my whole houſe; nay, 'there were few who would ſubmit to hearing me 'read my poetry, even at the price of ſharing in my 'proviſions. The only perſon who gave me audience 'was a brother poet; he indeed fed me with com-'mendation very liberally: but as I was forced to 'hear and commend in my turn, I perhaps bought 'his attention dear enough.

'WELL, Sir, if my expectations of the reward I 'hoped from my firſt poem had baulked me, I had 'now ſtill greater reaſon to complain; for inſtead of 'being preferred or commended for the ſecond, I was 'enjoined a very ſevere penance by my ſuperior, for 'ludicrouſly comparing the pope to a fart. My poetry 'was now the jeſt of every company, except ſome 'few, who ſpoke of it with deteſtation; and I found, 'that inſtead of recommending me to preferment, it 'had effectually barred me from all probability of 'attaining it.

'THESE diſcouragements had now induced me to 'lay down my pen, and write no more. But, as 'Juvenal ſays,

——— *Si diſcedas, Laqueo tenet ambitioſi*
Conſuetudo mali.

'I was an example of the truth of this aſſertion: for 'I ſoon betook myſelf again to my muſe. Indeed, a 'poet hath the ſame happineſs with a man who is 'dotingly fond of an ugly woman. The one enjoys 'his muſe, and the other his miſtreſs, with a pleaſure 'very little abated by the eſteem of the world, and 'only undervalues their taſte for not correſponding 'with his own.

'IT is unneceſſary to mention any more of my 'poems; they had all the ſame fate; and though in 'reality ſome of my latter pieces deſerved (I may 'now ſpeak it without the imputation of vanity) a 'better ſucceſs, as I had the character of a bad wri-'ter, I found it impoſſible ever to obtain the reputa-'tion of a good one. Had I poſſeſſed the merit of 'Homer, I could have hoped for no applauſe; ſince 'it muſt have been a profound ſecret: for no one 'would now read a ſyllable of my writings.

'THE poets of my age were, as I believe you 'know, not very famous. However, there was one 'in ſome credit at that time, though I have the con-'ſolation to know his works are all periſhed long ago. 'The malice, envy, and hatred I bore this man are 'inconceivable to any but an author, and an unſuc-'ceſsful one; I never could bear to hear him well 'ſpoken of, and writ anonymous ſatires againſt him, 'though I had received obligations from him; indeed, 'I believe it would have been an abſolute impoſſibi-'lity for him at any rate to have made me ſincerely 'his friend.

'I HAVE heard an obſervation which was made by 'ſome one of later days, that there are no worſe 'men than bad authors. A remark of the ſame kind 'hath been made on ugly women, and the truth of 'both ſtands on one and the ſame reaſon, viz. that 'they are both tainted with that curſed and deteſt-'able vice of envy; which, as it is the greateſt tor-'ment to the mind it inhabits, ſo is it capable of in-'troducing into it a total corruption, and of inſpir-'ing it to the commiſſion of the moſt horrid crimes 'imaginable.

'MR

'My life was but ſhort; for I ſoon pined myſelf 'to death with the vice I juſt now mentioned. Minos 'told me, I was infinitely too bad for Elyſium; and 'as for the other place, the devil had ſworn he 'would never entertain a poet for Orpheus's ſake: 'ſo I was forced to return again to the place from 'whence I came.'

CHAP. XXV.

Julian *performs the part of a knight and a dancing-maſter.*

'I NOW mounted the ſtage in Sicily, and became 'a knight templar: but as my adventures differ 'ſo little from thoſe I have recounted you in the cha-'racter of a common ſoldier, I ſhall not tire you 'with repetition. The ſoldier and the captain differ 'in reality ſo little from one another, that it requires 'an accurate judgment to diſtinguiſh them; the lat-'ter wears finer cloaths, and in times of ſucceſs lives 'ſomewhat more delicately; but as to every thing 'elſe, they very nearly reſemble one another.

'My next ſtep was into France, where fortune aſ-'ſigned me the part of a dancing-maſter. I was ſo 'expert in my profeſſion, that I was brought to court 'in my youth, and had the heels of Philip de Valois, 'who afterwards ſucceeded Charles the Fair, com-'mitted to my direction.

'I Do not remember, that in any of the characters 'in which I appeared on earth, I ever aſſumed to 'myſelf a greater dignity, or thought myſelf of more 'real importance than now. I looked on dancing as 'the greateſt excellence of human nature, and on my-'ſelf as the greateſt proficient in it. And indeed, 'this ſeemed to be the general opinion of the whole 'court: for I was the chief inſtructor of the youth of 'both ſexes, whoſe merit was almoſt entirely defined 'by the advances they made in that ſcience, which I 'had the honour to profeſs. As to myſelf, I was ſo 'fully perſuaded of this truth, that I not only ſlight-'ed and deſpiſed thoſe who were ignorant of dancing, 'but I thought the higheſt character I could give of 'any man, was, that he made a graceful bow: for

'want

'want of which accompliſhment, I had a ſovereign 'contempt for many perſons of learning; nay, for 'ſome officers in the army, and a few even of the 'courtiers themſelves.

'THOUGH ſo little of my youth had been thrown 'away in what they call literature, that I could hardly 'write and read, yet I compoſed a treatiſe on educa-'tion; the firſt rudiments of which, as I taught, 'were to inſtruct a child in the ſcience of coming 'handſomely into a room. In this I corrected many 'faults of my predeceſſors, particularly that of being 'too much in a hurry, and inſtituting a child in the 'ſublimer parts of dancing, before they are capable 'of making their honours.

'BUT as I have not now the ſame high opinion of 'my profeſſion, which I had then, I ſhall not enter-'tain you with a long hiſtory of a life which conſiſt-'ed of borées and coupées. Let it ſuffice, that I lived 'to a very old age, and followed my buſineſs as long 'as I could crawl. At length I reviſited my old 'friend Minos, who treated me with very little re-'ſpect, and bade me dance back again to earth.

'I DID ſo, and was now once more born an Eng-'liſhman, bred up to the church, and at length ar-'rived to the ſtation of a biſhop.

'NOTHING was ſo remarkable in this character, as 'my always voting—*.

* Here part of the manuſcript is loſt, and that a very conſider-able one, as appears by the number of the next book and chapter, which contains, I find, the hiſtory of Anna Boleyn: but as to the manner in which it was introduced, or to whom the narrative is told, we are totally left in the dark. I have only to remark, that this chapter is in the original writ in a woman's hand: and though the obſervations in it are, I think, as excellent as any in the whole volume, there ſeems to be a difference in ſtyle between this and the preceding chapters; and as it is the character of a woman which is related, I am inclined to fancy it was really written by one of that ſex.

BOOK XIX.

CHAP. VII.

Wherein Anna Boleyn *relates the hiſtory of her life.*

'I AM going now truly to recount a life, which 'from the time of its ceaſing, has been, in the 'other world, the continual ſubject of the cavils of 'contending parties; the one making me as black as 'hell, the other as pure and innocent as the inhabi-'tants of this bleſſed place; the miſt of prejudice 'blinding their eyes, and zeal for what they them-'ſelves profeſs, making every thing appear in that 'light, which they think moſt conduces to its ho-'nour.

'My infancy was ſpent in my father's houſe, in 'thoſe childiſh plays, which are moſt ſuitable to that 'ſtate, and I think this was one of the happieſt parts 'of my life; for my parents were not among the 'number of thoſe who look upon their children as ſo 'many objects of a tyrannic power, but I was re-'garded as the dear pledge of a virtuous love, and 'all my little pleaſures were thought from their in-'dulgence their greateſt delight. At ſeven years 'old, I was carried into France with the king's ſiſter, 'who was married to the French king, where I lived 'with a perſon of quality, who was an acquaintance 'of my father's. I ſpent my time in learning thoſe 'things neceſſary to give young perſons of faſhion a 'polite education, and did neither good nor evil, but 'day paſſed after day in the ſame eaſy way, till I was 'fourteen; then began my anxiety, my vanity grew 'ſtrong, and my heart fluttered with joy at every 'compliment paid to my beauty; and as the lady, 'with whom I lived, was of a gay, chearful diſpoſi-'tion, ſhe kept a great deal of company, and my

'youth and charms made me the continual object of 'their admiration. I passed some little time in those 'exulting raptures, which are felt by every woman, 'perfectly satisfied with herself, and with the beha-'viour of others towards her: I was, when very 'young, promoted to be maid of honour to her ma-'jesty. The court was frequented by a young no-'bleman, whose beauty was the chief subject of con-'versation in all assemblies of ladies. The delicacy 'of his person, added to a great softness in his man-'ner, gave every thing he said and did such an air of 'tenderness, that every woman he spoke to, flattered 'herself with being the object of his love. I was 'one of those who was vain enough of my own charms 'to hope to make a conquest of him, whom the 'whole court sighed for; I now thought every other 'object below my notice; yet the only pleasure I pro-'posed to myself in this design was, the triumphing 'over that heart, which I plainly saw all the ladies 'of the highest quality, and the greatest beauty, 'would have been proud of possessing. I was yet too 'young to be very artful, but nature, without any 'assistance, soon discovers to a man, who is used to 'gallantry, a woman's desire to be liked by him, 'whether that desire arises from any particular choice 'she makes of him, or only from vanity. He soon 'perceived my thoughts, and gratified my utmost 'wishes, by constantly preferring me before all other 'women, and exerting his utmost gallantry and ad-'dress to engage my affections. This sudden happi-'ness, which I then thought the greatest I could have 'had, appeared visible in all my actions; I grew so 'gay, and so full of vivacity, that it made my per-'son appear still to a better advantage, all my ac-'quaintance pretending to be fonder of me than 'ever; tho' young as I was, I plainly saw it was but 'pretence, for through all their endeavours to the 'contrary, envy would often break forth in sly insi-'nuations, and malicious sneers, which gave me fresh 'matter of triumph, and frequent opportunities of 'insulting them; which I never let slip, for now first

'my

'my female heart grew ſenſible of the ſpiteful plea-
'ſure of ſeeing another languiſh for what I enjoy'd.
'Whilſt I was in the height of my happineſs, her
'majeſty fell ill of a languiſhing diſtemper, which
'obliged her to go into the country for the change of
'air; my place made it neceſſary for me to attend
'her, and which way he brought it about, I can't
'imagine, but my young hero found means to be one
'of that ſmall train, that waited on my royal miſ-
'treſs, although ſhe went as private as poſſible. 'Hi-
'therto all the interviews I had ever had with him
'were in public, and I only looked on him as the
'fitter object to feed that pride which had no other
'view but to ſhew its power; but now the ſcene
'was quite changed. My rivals were all at a diſtance:
'the place we went to, was as charming as the moſt
'agreeable natural ſituation, aſſiſted by the greateſt
'art, could make it; the pleaſant ſolitary walks, the
'ſinging of birds, the thouſand pretty romantic
'ſcenes this delightful place afforded, gave a ſudden
'turn to my mind, my whole ſoul was melted into
'ſoftneſs, and all my vanity was fled. My ſpark
'was too much uſed to affairs of this nature, not to
'perceive this change; at firſt the profuſe tranſports
'of his joy made me believe him wholly mine, and
'this belief gave me ſuch happineſs, that no language
'affords words to expreſs it, and can be only known
'to thoſe who have felt it. But this was of a very
'ſhort duration, for I ſoon found I had to do with
'one of thoſe men, whoſe only end in the purſuit of
'a woman, is to make her fall a victim to an inſati-
'able deſire to be admired. His deſigns had ſuc-
'ceeded, and now he every day grew colder, and, as
'if by infatuation, my paſſion every day increaſed;
'and notwithſtanding all my reſolutions and endea-
'vours to the contrary, my rage at the diſappoint-
'ment at once both of my love and pride, and at the
'finding a paſſion fixed in my breaſt, I knew not how
'to conquer, broke out into that inconſiſtent beha-
'viour, which muſt always be the conſequence of vio-
'lent paſſions. One moment I reproached him, the

'next I grew to tenderneſs, and blamed myſelf, and
'thought I fancied, what was not true, he ſaw my
'ſtruggle, and triumphed in it: but as he had not
'witneſſes enough there of his victory, to give him
'the full enjoyment of it, he grew weary of the coun-
'try, and returned to Paris, and left me in a condi-
'tion it is utterly impoſſible to deſcribe. My mind
'was like a city up in arms, all confuſion: and every
'new thought was a freſh diſturber of my peace.
'Sleep quite forſook me, and the anxiety I ſuffered
'threw me into a fever, which had like to have coſt
'me my life. With great care I recovered; but the
'violence of the diſtemper left ſuch a weakneſs on
'my body, that the diſturbance of my mind was
'greatly aſſuaged; and now I began to comfort my-
'ſelf in the reflection, that this gentleman's being a
'finiſhed coquet, was very likely the only thing
'could have preſerved me: for he was the only man
'from whom I was ever in any danger. But that
'time I was got tolerably well, we returned to Pa-
'ris; and I confeſs, I both wiſhed and feared to ſee
'this cauſe of all my pain; however, I hoped by the
'help of my reſentment, to be able to meet him with
'indifference. This employed my thoughts till our
'arrival. The next day, there was a very full court
'to congratulate the queen on her recovery; and,
'amongſt the reſt, my love appeared dreſſed and
'adorned, as if he deſigned ſome new conqueſt.
'Inſtead of ſeeing a woman he deſpiſed and ſlighted,
'he approached me with that aſſured air which is
'common to ſucceſsful coxcombs. At the ſame time,
'I perceived I was ſurrounded by all thoſe ladies
'who were on his account my greateſt enemies; and
'in revenge, wiſhed for nothing more than to ſee
'me make a ridiculous figure. This ſituation ſo
'perplexed my thoughts, that when he came near
'enough to ſpeak to me, I fainted away in his arms.
'(Had I ſtudied which way I could gratify him moſt,
'it was impoſſible to have done any thing to have
'pleaſed him more.) Some that ſtood by, brought
'ſmelling-bottles, and uſed means for my recovery;

'and

'and I was welcomed to returning life, by all thoſe
'ill-natured repartees, which women enraged by en-
'vy are capable of venting. One cried, Well, I ne-
'ver thought my lord had any thing ſo frightful in
'his perſon, or ſo fierce in his manner, as to ſtrike
'a young lady dead at the ſight of him. No, no,
'ſays another, ſome ladies ſenſes are more apt to be
'hurried by agreeable, than diſagreeable objects:
'With many more ſuch ſort of ſpeeches, which ſhewed
'more malice than wit. This not being able to bear,
'trembling, and with but juſt ſtrength enough to
'move, I crawled to my coach, and hurried home.
'When I was alone, and thought on what had hap-
'pened to me in a public court, I was at firſt dri-
'ven to the utmoſt deſpair; but afterwards, when I
'came to reflect, I believe this accident contributed
'more to my being cured of my paſſion, than any
'other could have done. I began to think the only
'method to pique the man, who had uſed me ſo bar-
'barouſly, and to be revenged on my ſpiteful rivals,
'was to recover that beauty, which was then lan-
'guid, and had loſt its luſtre, to let them ſee I had
'ſtill charms enough to engage as many lovers as I
'could deſire, and that I could yet rival them, who
'had thus cruelly inſulted me. Theſe pleaſing hopes
'revived my ſinking ſpirits, and worked a more ef-
'fectual cure on me, than all the philoſophy and ad-
'vice of the wiſeſt men could have done. I now
'employed all my time and care in adorning my
'perſon, and ſtudying the ſureſt means of engaging
'the affections of others, while I myſelf continued
'quite indifferent; for I reſolved for the future, if
'every one ſoft thought made its way to my heart, to
'fly the object of it, and by new lovers to drive the
'image from my breaſt. I conſulted my glaſs every
'morning, and got ſuch a command of my counte-
'nance, that I could ſuit it to the different taſtes of
'variety of lovers; and though I was young, for I
'was not above ſeventeen, yet my public way of life
'gave me ſuch continual opportunities of converſing
'with men, and the ſtrong deſire I now had of pleaſ-

'ing them, led me to make ſuch conſtant obſervations 'on every thing they ſaid or did, that I ſoon found 'out the different methods of dealing with them. 'I obſerved that moſt men generally liked in women 'what was moſt oppoſite to their own characters; 'therefore, to the grave ſolid man of ſenſe, I endea-'voured to appear ſprightly, and full of ſpirit; to 'the witty and gay, ſoft and languiſhing; to the 'amorous (for they want no increaſe of their paſſions) 'cold and reſerved; to the fearful and backward, 'warm and full of fire, and ſo of all the reſt. As 'to beaus, and all thoſe ſort of men whoſe deſires 'are centered in the ſatisfaction of their vanity, I 'had learned by ſad experience, the only way to deal 'with them was to laugh at them, and let their own 'good opinion of themſelves be the only ſupport of 'their hopes. I knew while I could get other follow-'ers, I was ſure of them; for the only ſign of mo-'deſty they ever give, is that of not depending on 'their own judgments, but following the opinions of 'the greateſt number. Thus furniſhed with maxims, 'and grown wiſe by paſt errors, I in a manner be-'gan the world again: I appeared in all public places 'handſomer and more lively than ever, to the amaze-'ment of every one who ſaw me, and had heard of 'the affair between me and my lord. He himſelf was 'much ſurprized, and vexed at this ſudden change, 'nor could he account how it was poſſible for me 'ſo ſoon to ſhake off thoſe chains he thought he 'had fixed on me for life, nor was he willing to loſe 'his conqueſt in this manner. He endeavoured by 'all means poſſible to talk to me again of love, but I 'ſtood fixed to my reſolution, (in which I was greatly 'aſſiſted by the croud of admirers that daily ſurround-'ed me) never to let him explain himſelf: for, not-'withſtanding all my pride, I found the firſt impreſ-'ſion the heart receives of love is ſo ſtrong, that it 'requires the moſt vigilant care to prevent a relapſe. 'Now I lived three years in a conſtant round of di-'verſions, and was made the perfect idol of all the 'men that come to court of all ages, and all charac-

'ters.

'ters. I had ſeveral good matches offered me, but I 'thought none of them equal to my merit; and one 'of my greateſt pleaſures was to ſee thoſe women, 'who had pretended to rival me, often glad to marry 'thoſe whom I had refuſed. Yet, notwithſtanding 'this great ſucceſs of my ſchemes, I cannot ſay I was 'perfectly happy; for every woman that was taken the 'leaſt notice of, and every man that was inſenſible to 'my arts, gave me as much pain as all the reſt gave 'me pleaſure; and ſometimes little underhand plots, 'which were laid againſt my deſigns, would ſucceed 'in ſpite of my care: ſo that I really began to grow 'weary of this manner of life, when my father re'turning from his embaſſy in France, took me home 'with him, and carried me to a little pleaſant coun'try-houſe, where there was nothing grand or ſuper'fluous, but every thing neat and agreeable; there I 'led a life perfectly ſolitary. At firſt, the time hung 'very heavy on my hands, and I wanted all kind of 'employment, and I had very like to have fallen into 'the height of the vapours, from no other reaſon, 'but from want of knowing what to do with myſelf. 'But when I had lived here a little time, I found 'ſuch a calmneſs in my mind, and ſuch a difference 'between this, and the reſtleſs anxieties I had expe'rienced in a court, that I began to ſhare the tran'quillity that viſibly appeared in every thing round 'me. I ſet myſelf to do works of fancy, and to 'raiſe little flower-gardens, with many ſuch innocent 'rural amuſements; which, although they are not 'capable of affording any great pleaſure, yet they 'give that ſerene turn to the mind, which I think 'much preferable to any thing elſe human nature is 'made ſuſceptible of. I now reſolved to ſpend the 'reſt of my days here, and that nothing ſhould allure 'me from this ſweet retirement, to be again toſſed 'about with tempeſtuous paſſions of any kind. Whilſt 'I was in this ſituation, my lord Piercy, the earl of 'Northumberland's eldeſt ſon, by an accident of loſ'ing his way after a fox chaſe, was met by my fa'ther, about a mile from our houſe; he came home

'with him, only with a deſign of dining with us, 'but was ſo taken with me, that he ſtaid three days. 'I had too much experience in all affairs of this kind, 'not to ſee preſently the influence I had on him; but 'I was at that time ſo entirely free from all ambition, 'that even the proſpect of being a counteſs had no 'effect on me; and I then thought nothing in the 'world could have bribed me to have changed my 'way of life. This young lord, who was juſt in his 'bloom, found his paſſion ſo ſtrong, he could not en-'dure a long abſence, but returned again in a week, 'and endeavoured by all the means he could think 'of, to engage me to return his affection. He ad-'dreſſed me with that tenderneſs and reſpect, which 'women on earth think can flow from nothing but 'real love; and very often told me, that unleſs he 'could be ſo happy, as by his aſſiduity and care to 'make himſelf agreeable to me, although he knew 'my father would eagerly embrace any propoſal from 'him, yet he would ſuffer that laſt of miſeries, of 'never ſeeing me more, rather than owe his own 'happineſs to any thing that might be the leaſt con-'tradiction to my inclinations. This manner of pro-'ceeding had ſomething in it ſo noble and generous, 'that by degrees it raiſed a ſenſation in me, which I 'know not how to deſcribe, nor by what name to 'call it; it was nothing like my former paſſion; for 'there was no turbulence, no uneaſy waking nights 'attending it, but all I could with honour grant to 'oblige him, appeared to me to be juſtly due to his 'truth and love, and more the effect of gratitude, 'than of any deſire of my own. The character I 'had heard of him from my father, at my firſt re-'turning to England, in diſcourſing of the young no-'bility, convinced me, that if I was his wife, I 'ſhould have the perpetual ſatisfaction of knowing 'every action of his muſt be approved by all the 'ſenſible part of mankind; ſo that very ſoon I began 'to have no ſcruple left, but that of leaving my lit-'tle ſcene of quietneſs, and venturing again into the 'world. But this, by his continual application and

'ſub-

'ſubmiſſive behaviour, by degrees entirely vaniſhed,
'and I agreed he ſhould take his own time to break
'it to my father, whoſe conſent he was not long in
'obtaining; for ſuch a match was by no means to be
'refuſed. There remained nothing now to be done,
'but to prevail with the earl of Northumberland to
'comply with what his ſon ſo ardently deſired; for
'which purpoſe, he ſet out immediately for London,
'and begged it as the greateſt favour, that I would
'accompany my father, who was alſo to go thither
'the week following. I could not refuſe his requeſt,
'and as ſoon as we arrived in town, he flew to me
'with the greateſt raptures, to inform me his father
'was ſo good, that finding his happineſs depended
'on his anſwer, he had given him free leave to act
'in this affair as would beſt pleaſe himſelf, and that
'he had now no obſtacle to prevent his wiſhes. It
'was then the beginning of the winter, and the time
'for our marriage was fixed for the latter end of
'March; the conſent of all parties made his acceſs
'to me very eaſy, and we converſed together both
'with innocence and pleaſure. As his fondneſs was
'ſo great, that he contrived all the methods poſſible
'to keep me continually in his ſight, he told me one
'morning, he was commanded by his father to at-
'tend him to court that evening, and begg'd I would
'be ſo good as to meet him there. I was now ſo
'uſed to act as he would have me, that I made no
'difficulty of complying with his deſire. Two days
'after this, I was very much ſurpriſed at perceiving
'ſuch a melancholy in his countenance, and alter-
'tion in his behaviour, as I could no way account
'for; but by importunity, at laſt, I got from him,
'that cardinal Wolſey, for what reaſon he knew not,
'had peremptorily forbid him to think any more of
'me: and when he urged that his father was not diſ-
'pleaſed with it, the cardinal, in his imperious man-
'ner, anſwered him, he ſhould give his father ſuch
'convincing reaſons, why it would be attended with
'great inconveniencies, that he was ſure he could
'bring him to be of his opinion. On which he

'turned

'turned from him, and gave him no opportunity of 'replying. I could not imagine what deſign the car-'dinal could have in intermeddling in this match, 'and I was ſtill more perplexed to find that my fa-'ther treated my lord Piercy with much more cold-'neſs than uſual; he too ſaw it, and we both won-'dered what could poſſibly be the cauſe of all this. 'But it was not long before the myſtery was all made 'clear by my father, who ſending for me one day 'into his chamber, let me into a ſecret which was as 'little wiſhed for as expected; he began with the ſur-'priſing effects of youth and beauty, and the mad-'neſs of letting go thoſe advantages they might pro-'cure us, till it was too late, when we might wiſh in 'vain to bring them back again. I ſtood amazed at 'this beginning; he ſaw my confuſion, and bid me 'ſit down and attend to what he was going to tell 'me, which was of the greateſt conſequence; and he 'hoped I would be wiſe enough to follow his advice, 'and act as he ſhould think beſt for my future wel-'fare. He then aſked me, if I ſhould not be much 'pleaſed to be a queen? I anſwered with the greateſt 'earneſtneſs, that ſo far from it, I would not live in 'a court again to be the greateſt queen in the world; 'that I had a lover who was both deſirous and able 'to raiſe my ſtation even beyond my wiſhes. I found 'this diſcourſe was very diſpleaſing; my father 'frowned, and called me a romantic fool, and ſaid, 'if I would hearken to him he could make me a 'queen; for the cardinal had told him, that the 'king, from the time he ſaw me at court the other 'night, liked me; and intended to get a divorce 'from his wife, and to put me in her place; and 'ordered him to find ſome method to make me a 'maid of honour to her preſent majeſty, that in the 'mean time he might have an opportunity of ſeeing 'me. It is impoſſible to expreſs the aſtoniſhment 'theſe words threw me into; and notwithſtanding 'that the moment before, when it appeared at ſo 'great a diſtance, I was very ſincere in my declara-'tion, how much it was againſt my will to be raiſed

'ſo

'ſo high; yet now the proſpect came nearer, I con-
'feſs my heart fluttered, and my eyes were dazzled
'with a view of being ſeated on a throne. My ima-
'gination preſented before me all the pomp, power,
'and greatneſs, that attend a crown; and I was ſo
'perplexed, I knew not what to anſwer, but re-
'mained as ſilent as if I had loſt the uſe of my
'ſpeech. My father, who gueſſed what it was that
'made me in this condition, proceeded to bring all
'the arguments he thought moſt likely to bend me
'to his will; at laſt, I recovered from this dream of
'grandeur, and begged him by all the moſt endear-
'ing names I could think of, not to urge me diſ-
'honourably to forſake the man, who I was con-
'vinced would raiſe me to an empire, if in his power,
'and who had enough in his power to give me all I
'deſired. But he was deaf to all I could ſay, and
'inſiſted, that by next week, I ſhould prepare my-
'ſelf to go to court: he bid me conſider of it, and not
'prefer a ridiculous notion of honour to the real in-
'tereſt of my whole family, but, above all things,
'not to diſcloſe what he had truſted me with. On
'which, he left me to my own thoughts. When I
'was alone, I reflected how little real tenderneſs this
'behaviour ſhewed to me, whoſe happineſs he did
'not at all conſult; but only looked on me as a lad-
'der, on which he could climb to the height of his
'own ambitious deſires: and when I thought on his
'fondneſs for me in my infancy, I could impute it
'to nothing, but either the liking me as a play-thing,
'or the gratification of his vanity in my beauty.
'But I was too much divided between a crown and
'my engagements to lord Piercy, to ſpend much
'time in thinking of any thing elſe; and although
'my father had poſitively forbid me, yet, when he
'came next, I could not help acquainting him with
'all that had paſſed, with the reſerve only of the
'ſtruggle in my own mind on the firſt mention of
'being a queen. I expected he would have received
'the news with the greateſt agonies; but he ſhewed
'no vaſt emotion; however, he could not help turn-

'ing

'ing pale; and, taking me by the hand, looked at 'me with an air of tenderneſs, and ſaid, If being a 'queen will make you happy, and it is in your power 'to be ſo, I would not for the world prevent it, let 'me ſuffer what I will. This amazing greatneſs of 'mind had on me quite the contrary effect, from 'what it ought to have had: for inſtead of increaſ-'ing my love for him, it almoſt put an end to it; 'and I began to think, if he could part with me, 'the matter was not much. And I am convinced, 'when any man gives up the poſſeſſion of a woman, 'whoſe conſent he has once obtained, let his motive 'be ever ſo generous, he will diſoblige her. I could 'not help ſhewing my diſſatisfaction, and told him, 'I was very glad this affair ſat ſo eaſily on him. He 'had not power to anſwer, but was ſo ſuddenly ſtruck 'with this unexpected ill-natured turn I gave his be-'haviour, that he ſtood amazed for ſome time, and 'then bowed and left me. Now was I again left to 'my own reflections; but to make any thing intelli-'gible out of them, is quite impoſſible; I wiſhed to 'be a queen, and wiſhed I might not be one; I 'would have my lord Piercy happy without me; and 'yet I would not have the power of my charms be ſo 'weak, that he could bear the thought of life after 'being diſappointed in my love. But the reſult of 'all theſe confuſed thoughts was a reſolution to obey 'my father. I am afraid there was not much duty 'in the caſe, though at that time I was obliged to take 'hold of that ſmall ſhadow, to ſave me from look-'ing on my own actions in the true light. When 'my lover came again, I looked on him with that 'coldneſs that he could not bear, on purpoſe to rid 'myſelf of all importunity: for ſince I had reſolved 'to uſe him ill, I regarded him as the monument of 'my ſhame, and his very look appeared to me to 'upbraid me. My father ſoon carried me to court; 'there I had no very hard part to act; for with the 'experience I had of mankind, I could find no great 'difficulty in managing a man who liked me, and 'for whom I not only did not care, but had an utter

'aver-

'averſion to: but this averſion he believed to be virtue; for how credulous is a man who has an inclination to believe? And I took care ſometimes to drop words of cottages and love, and how happy the woman was who fixed her affections on a man in ſuch a ſtation of life, that ſhe might ſhow her love, without being ſuſpected of hypocriſy or mercenary views. All this was ſwallowed very eaſily by the amorous king, who puſhed on the divorce with the utmoſt impetuoſity, although the affair laſted a good while, and I remained moſt part of the time behind the curtain. Whenever the king mentioned it to me, I uſed ſuch arguments againſt it, as I thought the moſt likely to make him the more eager for it; begging, that unleſs his conſcience was really touched, he would not on my account give any grief to his virtuous queen; for in being her handmaid, I thought myſelf highly honoured; and that I would not only forego a crown, but even give up the pleaſure of ever ſeeing him more, rather than wrong my royal miſtreſs. This way of talking, joined to his eager deſire to poſſeſs my perſon, convinced the king ſo ſtrongly of my exalted merit, that he thought it a meritorious act to diſplace the woman (whom he could not have ſo good an opinion of, becauſe he was tired of her) and to put me in her place. After about a year's ſtay at court, as the king's love to me began to be talked of, it was thought proper to remove me, that there might be no umbrage given to the queen's party; I was forced to comply with this, though greatly againſt my will; for I was very jealous that abſence might change the king's mind. I retired again with my father to his country-ſeat, but it had no longer thoſe charms for me which I once enjoyed there; for my mind was now too much taken up with ambition to make room for any other thoughts. During my ſtay here, my royal lover often ſent gentlemen to me with meſſages and letters, which I always anſwered in the manner I thought would beſt bring about my deſigns, which were to come back

'again to court. In all the letters that paſſed be-
'tween us, there was ſomething ſo kingly and com-
'manding in his, and ſo deceitful and ſubmiſſive in
'mine, that I ſometimes could not help reflecting on
'the difference betwixt this correſpondence and that
'with lord Piercy; yet I was ſo preſſed forward by
'the deſire of a crown, I could not think of turn-
'ing back. In all I wrote, I continually praiſed
'his reſolution of letting me be at a diſtance from
'him, ſince at this time it conduced indeed to my
'honour; but what was of ten times more weight
'with me, I thought it was neceſſary for his; and
'I would ſooner ſuffer any thing in the world than
'be any means of hurt to him, either in his intereſt
'or reputation. I always gave him ſome hints of ill
'health, with ſome reflections how neceſſary the peace
'of the mind was to that of the body. By theſe
'means, I brought him to recal me again by the
'moſt abſolute command, which I for a little time
'artfully delayed, (for I knew the impatience of his
'temper would not bear any contradiction;) till he
'made my father in a manner force me to what I
'moſt wiſhed, with the utmoſt appearance of reluct-
'ance on my ſide. When I had gained this point, I
'began to think which way I could ſeparate the king
'from the queen, for hitherto they lived in the ſame
'houſe. The lady Mary the queen's daughter, be-
'ing then about ſixteen, I ſought for emiſſaries of
'her own age that I could confide in, to inſtil into
'her mind diſreſpectful thoughts of her father, and
'make a jeſt of the tenderneſs of his conſcience about
'the divorce. I knew ſhe had naturally ſtrong paſ-
'ſions, and that young people of that age are apt to
'think thoſe that pretend to be their friends are
'really ſo, and only ſpeak their minds freely; I af-
'terwards contrived to have every word ſhe ſpoke of
'him carried to the king; who took it all as I could
'wiſh, and fancied thoſe things did not come at firſt
'from the young lady but from her mother. He
'would often talk of it to me, and I agreed with him
'in his ſentiments; but then, as a great proof of my

'goodneſs, I always endeavoured to excuſe her, by 'ſaying, a lady ſo long time uſed to be a royal 'queen, might naturally be a little exaſperated with 'thoſe ſhe fancied would throw her from that ſta- 'tion ſhe ſo juſtly deſerved. By theſe ſort of plots, 'I found the way to make the king angry with the 'queen; for nothing is eaſier than to make a man 'angry with a woman he wants to be rid of, and 'who ſtands in the way between him and his plea- 'ſures: ſo that now the king, on the pretence of the 'queen's obſtinacy, in a point where his conſcience 'was ſo tenderly concerned, parted with her. Every 'thing was now plain before me; I had nothing far- 'ther to do but to let the king alone to his own de- 'ſires; and I had no reaſon to fear, ſince they had 'carried him ſo far, but that they would urge him 'on to do every thing I aimed it. I was created mar- 'chioneſs of Pembroke. This dignity ſat very eaſy on 'me; for the thoughts of a much higher title took 'from me all feeling of this; and I looked upon be- 'ing a marchioneſs as a trifle; not that I ſaw the 'bauble in its true light, but becauſe it fell ſhort of 'what I had figured to myſelf I ſhould ſoon obtain. 'The king's deſires grew very impatient, and it was 'not long before I was privately married to him. I 'was no ſooner his wife, than I found all the queen 'come upon me; I felt myſelf conſcious of royalty, 'and even the faces of my moſt intimate acquaintance 'ſeemed to me to be quite ſtrange. I hardly knew 'them, height had turned my head, and I was like 'a man placed on a monument, to whoſe ſight all 'creatures at a great diſtance below him, appear like 'ſo many little pigmies crawling about on the earth; 'and the proſpect ſo greatly delighted me, that I 'did not preſently conſider, that in both caſes de- 'ſcending a few ſteps erected by human hands would 'place us in the number of thoſe very pigmies who 'appeared ſo deſpicable. Our marriage was kept 'private for ſome time, for it was not thought pro- 'per to make it public (the affair of the divorce not 'being finiſhed) till the birth of my daughter Eliza-

'beth

'beth made it neceſſary. But all who ſaw me knew 'it; for my manner of ſpeaking and acting was ſo 'much changed with my ſtation, that all around me 'plainly perceived, I was ſure I was a queen. While 'it was a ſecret, I had yet ſomething to wiſh for; I 'could not be perfectly ſatisfied, till all the world was 'acquainted with my fortune: but when my corona-'tion was over, and I was raiſed to the height of my 'ambition, inſtead of finding myſelf happy, I was 'in reality more miſerable than ever; for beſides that 'the averſion I had naturally to the king was much 'more difficult to diſſemble after marriage than be-'fore, and grew into a perfect deteſtation, my imagi-'nation, which had thus warmly purſued a crown, 'grew cool when I was in the poſſeſſion of it, and 'gave me time to reflect what mighty matter I had 'gained by all this buſtle; and I often uſed to think 'myſelf in the caſe of the fox-hunter, who when he 'has toiled and ſweated all day in the chaſe, as if 'ſome unheard-of bleſſing was to crown his ſucceſs, 'finds at laſt, all he has got by his labour is a ſtink-'ing nauſeous-animal. But my condition was yet 'worſe than his; for he leaves the loathſome wretch 'to be torn by his hounds, whilſt I was obliged to 'fondle mine, and meanly pretend him to be the ob-'ject of my love. For the whole time I was in this 'envied, this exalted ſtate, I led a continual life of 'hypocriſy, which I now know nothing on earth can 'compenſate. I had no companion but the man I 'hated. I dared not diſcloſe my ſentiments to any 'perſon about me; nor did any one preſume to enter 'into any freedom of converſation with me; but all 'who ſpoke to me, talked to the queen, and not to 'me; for they would have ſaid juſt the ſame things 'to a dreſs'd-up puppet, if the king had taken a fan-'cy to call it his wife. And as I knew every woman 'in the court was my enemy, from thinking ſhe 'had much more right than I had to the place I fill-'ed, I thought myſelf as unhappy, as if I had been 'placed in a wild wood, where there was no human 'creature for me to ſpeak to, in a continual fear of

'leav-

'leaving any traces of my footſteps, leſt I ſhould be 'found by ſome dreadful monſter, or ſtung by ſnakes 'and adders: for ſuch are ſpiteful women to the ob-'jects of their envy. In the worſt of all ſituations, 'I was obliged to hide my melancholy, and appear 'chearful. This threw me into an error the other 'way, and I ſometimes fell into a levity in my be-'haviour, that was afterwards made uſe of to my 'diſadvantage. I had a ſon dead-born, which I per-'ceived abated ſomething of the king's ardor; for 'his temper could not brook the leaſt diſappoint-'ment. This gave me no uneaſineſs; for not con-'ſidering the conſequences, I could not help being 'beſt pleaſed when I had leaſt of his company. Af-'terwards I found he had caſt his eyes on one of my 'maids of honour; and whether it was owing to 'any art of her's, or only to the king's violent paſ-'ſions, I was in the end uſed even worſe than my 'former miſtreſs had been by my means. The decay 'of the king's affection was preſently ſeen by all 'thoſe court-ſycophants who continually watch the 'motions of royal eyes; and the moment they found 'they could be heard againſt me, they turned my 'moſt innocent actions and words, nay, even my very 'looks, into proofs of the blackeſt crimes. The 'king, who was impatient to enjoy his new love, lent 'a willing ear to all my accuſers, who found ways of 'making him jealous that I was falſe to his bed. He 'would not ſo eaſily have believed any thing againſt 'me before, but he was now glad to flatter himſelf 'that he had found a reaſon to do juſt what he had 'reſolved upon without a reaſon; and on ſome ſlight 'pretences, and hear-ſay evidence, I was ſent to the 'Tower, where the lady who was my greateſt ene-'my, was appointed to watch me, and lie in the 'ſame chamber with me. This was really as bad a 'puniſhment as my death; for ſhe inſulted me with 'thoſe keen reproaches, and ſpiteful witticiſms, which 'threw me into ſuch vapours and violent fits, that 'I knew not what I uttered in this condition. She 'pretended, I had confeſs'd talking ridiculous ſtuff

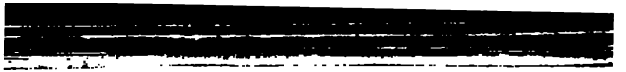
'with a ſet of low fellows, whom I had hardly ever 'taken notice of, as could have impoſed on none but 'ſuch as were reſolved to believe. I was brought 'to my trial, and to blacken me the more, accuſed 'of converſing criminally with my own brother, 'whom indeed I loved extremely well, but never 'looked on him in any other light than as my friend. 'However, I was condemned to be beheaded, or 'burnt, as the king pleaſed; and he was graciouſly 'pleaſed, from the great remains of his love, to chuſe 'the mildeſt ſentence. I was much leſs ſhocked at 'this manner of ending my life, than I ſhould have 'been in any other ſtation: but I had had ſo little en-'joyment from the time I had been a queen, that 'death was the leſs dreadful to me. The chief things 'that lay on my conſcience, were the arts I made uſe 'of to induce the king to part with the queen, my 'ill uſage of lady Mary, and my jilting lord Piercy. 'However, I endeavoured to calm my mind as well 'as I could, and hoped theſe crimes would be for-'given me: for in other reſpects I had led a very in-'nocent life, and always did all the good-natur'd ac-'tions I found an opportunity of doing. From the 'time I had it in my power, I gave a great deal of 'money amongſt the poor, I prayed very devoutly, 'and went to my execution very compoſedly. Thus 'I loſt my life at the age of twenty-nine, in which 'ſhort time I believe I went through more variety of 'ſcenes, than many people who live to be very old. 'I had lived in a court, where I ſpent my time in co-'quetry and gaiety: I had experienced what it was to 'have one of thoſe violent paſſions which makes the 'mind all turbulence and anxiety. I had had a lover 'whom I eſteemed and valued, and at the latter part 'of my life, I was raiſed to a ſtation as high as the 'vaineſt woman could wiſh. But in all theſe various 'changes, I never enjoyed any real ſatisfaction, un-'leſs in the little time I lived retired in the country 'free from all noiſe and hurry; and while I was con-'ſcious I was the object of the love and eſteem of a 'man of ſenſe and honour.'

'On

On the concluſion of this hiſtory, Minos pauſed for a ſmall time, and then ordered the gate to be thrown open for Anne Bullen's admittance; on the conſideration, that whoever had ſuffered being a queen for four years, and been ſenſible during all that time of the real miſery which attends that exalted ſtation, ought to be forgiven whatever ſhe had done to obtain it *.

* Here ends this curious manuſcript; the reſt being deſtroyed in rolling up pens, tobacco, &c. It is to be hoped, heedleſs people will henceforth be more cautious what they burn or uſe to other vile purpoſes; eſpecially when they conſider the fate which had like to have befallen the divine Milton; and that the works of Homer were probably diſcovered in ſome chandler's ſhop in Greece.

END of the FIFTH VOLUME.



THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBR.
REFERENCE DEPARTMENT

This book is under no circumstances taken from the Building

Form 410